SHURA'S WRATH

BOOK 07
THE UNDERWORLD
KING'S SON-IN-LAW

Mars Gravity

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Shura's Wrath

(网游之天谴修罗)

by

Mars Gravity

(火星引力)

Synopsis

To save his terminally ill little sister, Ling Chen enters the newly released virtual game world and joins a small gaming studio comprising entirely of women.

From now on walking upon his path towards the pinnacle.

An ancient, evil item almost forgotten by history, the “Lunar Scourge” helps forge his unsurpassable legend, and causes him to unknowingly step upon a path that is destined to be punished by the heavens, the way of the shura.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by WhatTranslate, Kaycee Liang, Sophia, Sylver135, Mr Voltaire @ Gravity Tales

Translation Edits by Allenwa,TheNo1Fan,Pebbles, xXmA5ta0f5hAd0WZzzXx, Niku @ Gravity Tales

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 601 – Ling Tian City!

Ling Chen brought Xuanyuan Dia Wu and Shadissika back towards the new city where Yun Meng Xin and the others were still waiting. Below, many of the players who had died had returned. They belonged to the Disillusion Alliance, Snow Moon Loulan, Battle Alliance, and Skyfall Dynasty. Evidently, they were worried that the Yan Huang Alliance and other attacking factions would attack them once again.

"What? Your... w-wife?"

Upon hearing Ling Chen's introduction of Xuanyuan Dia Wu, everyone, no matter if they were male or female, cried out in shock.

Xuanyuan Dia Wu also froze in shock, but after looking at Ling Chen's smiling face, she felt quite emotional, a look of intoxication in her beautiful eyes as every part of her body was filled with happiness. The awkwardness and worry from before completely disappeared in an instant... facing all of his friends, calmly smiling, and calling her his 'wife' was even more moving than the most beautiful words and promises. Ling Chen's feelings towards her were completely true, and she was able to feel them completely.

From that single word, everything she had done and all of the pain she had suffered were all worth it. Even though we've been apart for 13 years, I'll never give up on the promise we made back then. No matter when, no matter if it's in heaven or hell, no matter if we're at the end of the ocean or the edge of heaven, no matter what sort of snow and sea we have to traverse, as long as you're there, I'll be with you for the rest of my life.

"Wife... Wife... But... But... Big brother Ling Tian, you... how did you suddenly get a wife..." That word shocked the wits out of Xiao Qi, causing her to stutter as she felt some indescribable emotions from within her... and also, where did this ridiculously pretty girl

suddenly come from?

“Wife… big brother Ling Tian’s wife…” Su’Er had woken up, and she was also sent into shock as she dumbly looked at Xuanyuan Dia Wu, who was looking at Ling Chen with an expression of bliss on her face.

Yun Meng Xin was also completely stunned, unable to say anything.

Even Li Xiao Xue was given a big shock, but she immediately gave a meaningful smile. After looking at Xuanyuan Dia Wu’s face, the haze within her heart disappeared as she smiled and spoke, “So you two knew each other long before this. If I remember correctly, that year, you were both only 9 years old, right?”

Xuanyuan Dia Wu looked at her in shock, wondering how she knew this.

“That’s right.” Ling Chen smiled and nodded. “Although we weren’t able to legally get married, and there were no official records, formal ceremonies, anyone to bear witness, or give their blessings, from then onwards Dia Wu was my wife… and she will be, forever.”

“Tian Ya…” Xuanyuan Dia Wu mumbled, her eyes becoming misty.

“9 years old… are you sure you weren’t just playing house? Heheheh.” Winter of That Year laughed. He wasn’t very familiar with Ling Tian, and it was his first time meeting him. As such, he didn’t know much about his history, so he naturally didn’t understand just how shocking it was for him to suddenly have a ‘wife’. He looked around and found that the atmosphere was quite strange. Yun Feng and Xiao Qiu Feng were both staring wide-eyed; Xiao Qi and Su’Er were completely zoned out with complex expressions as well as a slight trace of sadness. Even Yun Meng Xin had a strange expression on her face.

“Of course we weren’t just playing house.” Ling Chen shook his head as he looked at Xuanyuan Dia Wu. “Back then, I contracted the Isrock Disease…”

“Ahh!!” Ling Chen’s words caused everyone to cry out in shock. ‘Isrock’ was almost a synonym for the devil, and it was the most terrifying disease in the world.

Ling Chen continued, “… Back then, everyone cast me aside and avoided me, and locked me in a dark, iron room. Only Dia Wu… she brought me out from that room and tightly hugged me. She bound a red string around our fingers, vowing to become my wife and to be with me… in life and death.”

Hearing this, everyone’s heart trembled, and the way they looked at Xuanyuan Dia Wu completely changed. Even the slight hostility within Xiao Qi and Su’Er’s eyes disappeared and was replaced by awe, respect, gratitude, and goodwill. How many girls in the world could do such a thing? A girl like this should be pitied by the heavens and receive all the blessings in the world.

“S-Sorry…” Winter of That Year said in shame. He had just casually made a joke, but he felt that his joke had offended Xuanyuan Dia Wu’s sincere feelings.

“Big sister, you’re so amazing…” Xiao Qi said emotionally. “Isrock… Isrock… I know, the doctor must have misdiagnosed big brother Ling Tian, right? But if this big sister is your wife, why weren’t you together all these years? These years, you were…”

“After the night we became husband and wife, we were split apart… and only reunited today. It has been 13 years,” Ling Chen said as he smiled. He had spoken briefly, but no one could imagine just what the 2 of them had been through in the past 13 years. Luckily, the paths of their fates had brought them together again.

“Qi Qi, there’s something that your big brother Ling Tian didn’t tell you,” Li Xiao Xue said as she smiled. “You’ve seen this pretty big sister before. In fact, we all have not too long ago.”

“We’ve seen her before? I don’t think so.” Xiao Qi thought back, but she couldn’t think of where she had seen her before. With such beauty, anyone would not be able to forget her. Moreover, it was not just Xiao Qi, but everyone else also had a look of confusion on their faces as they tried to remember this girl.

Ling Chen looked at Li Xiao Xue and helplessly said, “Actually… mm, she’s the Sword Emperor.”

“Sword Emperor?!”

Everyone’s eyeballs almost fell to the ground as their expressions became comical.

This girl was the Sword Emperor who had shaken all of China, was famous worldwide, was cold and emotionless, who never spoke and only knew how to kill – the Sword Emperor who could break through tens of thousands of players?!

What sort of joke was this?!

Could this joke be any more ridiculous?!

When Xuanyuan Dia Wu showed her name, ‘Feng Xie Yu’, everyone felt as if their mind had exploded.

The treatment beautiful women received was always different. This was even more so when someone had immense status and power, not to mention the identity ‘Ling Tian’s wife’. No matter what sort of circle she entered, she would always be passionately welcomed. Xuanyuan Dia Wu’s status as ‘Ling Tian’s wife’ made Xiao Qi and Su’Er feel both admiration and jealousy, but once they found out she was the Sword Emperor, stars of worship appeared within their eyes. The invincible Sword Emperor, who had been at the top of the Heaven Rankings for so long, had actually been a woman – a woman who was only a few years older than themselves. This caused them to feel a sense of glory.

However, Su’Er felt a bit complicated. She had used her Heaven’s Secrets Eyes to look at the Sword Emperor’s true appearance

before and saw a face destroyed by gashes and scars, which made her feel terrified. Now, seeing the incredibly beautiful Dia Wu, she couldn't help but think to herself, "Looks like the Heaven's Secrets Eyes isn't foolproof."

From the late action of the Yan Huang Alliance and the other attacking factions, it seemed that they had fallen into complete chaos and would not be able to attack again within a short period of time. Moreover, they had lost all dignity and reputation, and most of them were most likely scared out of their wits. Even if they had the ability to, they probably didn't have the guts to attack again.

Li Xiao Xue took down the platform and asked the Fairies to take down the wall of vines. The group of people came to the gates of the new city, feeling the aura from the new city. Looking at the city they had protected, everyone felt the same throbbing in their hearts. Even the Skyfall Dynasty, which had originally planned to take down the new city, felt the same way... after all, the new city had been protected at the cost of their entire army.

"Yun Feng, Alliance Master Xiao, and the 3 Heavenly Kings, thank you all for your help and support. After the new city is completed, if you wish, there will always be a place for you here. We also welcome our friends Winter and Hundred Miles to stay in the new city. I'm sure you won't be disappointed by what we have here." Ling Chen said sincerely and with great confidence. This city had been constructed by the Dwarves, and it was very close to the Fairy Forest, which was filled with pure Nature energy. He could already see the future growth and development of the new city.

Yun Feng nodded, "I'll move the entire Disillusion Alliance here. Since we've burned all of our bridges, the Disillusion Alliance will be leaving the Yan Huang Alliance. As for Long Tian Yun's revenge... heheh, considering how long our Yun family has existed for, even if they wanted to do anything to us it wouldn't be so

easy.”

Xiao Qiu Feng looked at Xiao Qi and expressionlessly nodded, “The Battle Alliance will also come. Today, the Battle Alliance has completely left the Yan Huang Alliance.”

“This... We’ll ask big sister what she thinks.” Skyfall calmly said. Even now, he still did not know why Gu Qing Han had asked them so resolutely to protect the new city. What he needed to do now was to help the Skyfall Dynasty recover from its losses... Moreover, they could be annihilated at any moment. Thinking to there, he heavily sighed inwardly. Against The Sky and Judging Sky were feeling the same way.

Moving to the new city would further the new city’s fame and reputation, and would help the new city... that’s what it seemed like now. Not too long in the future, they would know just what sort of an honour it would be to move to this new city!

The new city’s development would greatly exceed anyone’s expectations.

“That’s right, Meng Xin, what’s this new city called?” Ling Chen turned and asked... that day, Li Xiao Xue had told him that the new city’s name was ‘Ling Tian City’, not ‘Meng Xin City’ or ‘Heart’s Dream City’. This caused him to feel quite moved. However, he wanted confirmation from Yun Meng Xin’s own mouth.

In just a short while, Yun Meng Xin, Xiao Qi and Su’Er had become quite close with Xuanyuan Dia Wu. The 4 girls were stuck together, talking and laughing with each other. They seemed incredibly close, as if they were sisters who had known each other for many years, making Ling Chen feel dumbfounded... before, he had sensed some hostility between the girls for an obvious reason. However, he could only act dumb, but in just this short period of time, they had become quite close... women were creatures that men would never be able to understand.

“Ling Tian City.” Yun Meng Xin replied as she looked at him.

“Shouldn’t it be called ‘Heart’s Dream City?’” Back when Ling Chen had given Yun Meng Xin the City Creation Token, he had mentioned that name.

Yun Meng Xin smiled, “I think that Ling Tian City suits it more. I hope that this new city, which has so much hope placed in it, can reign under the heavens like you and become one of the greatest existences in all of the Mystic Moon World. It won’t just belong to Heart’s Dream, but to all players.

Ling Chen gave her a deep look as a look of sincere admiration appeared in Li Xiao Xue’s eyes.

Chapter 602 – 'Man-Made God'

The city gates were opened, and the Fairies and Dwarves charged out as they yelled with joy. At the front, Chief Dilo's face was so emotional that it was completely red, and Chief Greenwood and Granny Witherwood were grinning. Almost the entire city was filled with cheers.

This battle had lasted for more than 10 hours, and they had anxiously spent each minute and second in fear. After all, this new city contained their hope and future. Crisis after crisis had been averted, each more perilous than the previous. Miracles had happened time and time again, causing countless waves within their hearts during these 10 or so hours. Finally, Ling Chen's return had completely resolved the crisis, causing them to uncontrollably yell out with joy.

"Brother Ling Tian, it's great that you're back; you've once again saved us! I'm becoming more and more certain that you're someone sent by the heavens to save us," Chief Dilo said emotionally. All of the Dwarves' gazes towards Ling Chen became incredibly passionate. Ling Chen's position in their hearts had reached an unprecedented height.

"Splendidly done." Greenwood's gaze passed over each person, looking extremely impressed. He had watched the battle from the very beginning, and he knew just how much of a miracle it was for them, who had 1/5 of their enemies' numbers, to defend the new city. Finally, his gaze rested on Ling Chen as he said earnestly, "We haven't seen you for some time, and you've almost become a new person. Indeed, you're no ordinary person at all."

Beside him, Cai'Er happily flew towards Xiao Qi and Su'Er and the others. She hovered around them, her smile like a blooming flower. Ying Xue stood beside Granny Witherwood, a calm expression on her face; it seemed as if there was a layer of frost that could never be melted on her face.

The joyous celebrations didn't continue for too long. The Fairies and Dwarves returned to their hard work – after surviving the attack, their passion and motivation had been raised to the extreme and everyone worked with all their strength. Sweat covered their bodies, but relaxed and happy smiles covered their faces.

The 3 Heavenly Kings left in a hurry, and Yun Feng and Xiao Qiu Feng also left together – they needed to reorganise after that battle. The girls dragged Xuanyuan Dia Wu off to ask about Ling Chen's past, as Ling Chen had never told them much about his childhood before. As such, they decided to learn these things from Xuanyuan Dia Wu. Of course, they were also interested in her identity as the Sword Emperor. Shadissika and Cai'Er played together, but Shadissika continuously stole glances at Ling Chen, as if she was afraid that he would disappear if she let her sights off him.

"Elder Dita, here are 2 Spatial Stones. Can you please help me make another 500 Spatial Orbs? You can keep whatever's left to make spatial items and teleportation channels in future."

Ling Chen gave the 2 Spatial Stones he had obtained from the East Ocean Continent to Elder Dita. Anyone who used Spatial Orbs would form a dependency on them. Returning to the new city had used his last Spatial Orb, and now Ling Chen did not have a single one left.

"Heavens! You obtained another 2 of these legendary items. This is simply incredible!" Elder Dita took them as he exclaimed in shock and awe. What's more, these 2 Spatial Stones were much bigger than the 2 from before. He patted his chest as he said, "Leave this to me; the 500 Spatial Orbs will be ready by noon tomorrow at the latest."

"Right, there's also these things. Use them where appropriate. I'm sure they should all be things you're interested in." Ling Chen took out all of the weird and wonderful things he had obtained on his journey, which soon piled up into a small mountain.

With Xiao Hui's sensitivity to treasures, wherever Ling Chen went, he would always find the treasures in the area. During his 2 months in the East Ocean Continent, he had spent most of his time near the Celestial Cherry Valley, where the Moon God aura had attracted and given birth to many treasures. All of them were discovered by Xiao Hui and fell into Ling Chen's bag. Any treasure that Xiao Hui could be bothered detecting was a treasure of treasures, and some of them were extremely rare metals and materials.

"My god!!"

Elder Dita felt his head spin... he almost fainted from the shock and happiness he felt.

"What am I seeing... I can't believe my eyes." Elder Dita leapt onto the mountain of treasures, his body threatening to collapse under how much he was shaking. Good materials were like their lives to Dwarves, and seeing so many treasures heaped in front of him, he felt like he was in heaven. Smelling the unique smells from the metals and other materials, and looking at the high-grade materials that he had only read about in books, Elder Dita almost went mad. "Azure Cloud Stone, Jade-Blood Glass, Dark Secret Gold, Overlord Rock, Starwood... my god, my god... ah, this... this is Chilling Crystal Chalcedony! This is Chilling Crystal Chalcedony, which only exists in records – something that even our Progenitor has never seen before!"

Elder Dita continued to mutter to himself, sometimes crying out, wishing that he could bury himself in these treasures. Soon, he was unable to hear anything Ling Chen said. Ling Chen tapped his nose and could only walk away – leaving these treasures here with the Dwarves was undoubtedly the best thing to do. As for what they could be used for, that was what the Dwarves specialised in. Of course, Ling Chen hadn't given them everything – he had kept some of the Chilling Crystal Chalcedony because not only was it a top-grade material, but it could also instantly increase one's level.

“Xiao Xue, what’s going on with the Skyfall Dynasty?” Ling Chen pulled Li Xiao Xue aside and asked her the question that had been on his mind the entire time.

Li Xiao Xue did not directly answer. She swept back some loose strands of hair as she said, “Come meet someone with me tomorrow.”

“Who is it?”

“Gu Qing Han.” Li Xiao Xue smiled.

“Her? What does it have to do with her?” Ling Chen felt quite shocked. He had long since heard of Gu Qing Han, but had only seen her once. It was that time when he had gone to visit Li Xiao Xue, and the elegant aura that she gave off left a deep impression on him. However, he had only briefly seen her, and there was nothing between them.

“In this world, the only person who can order the 3 Heavenly Kings to take their Skyfall Dynasty on a suicide mission is Gu Qing Han. Not even their father would be able to do such a thing. As for her reason, you’ll know tomorrow when you meet her.” Li Xiao Xue folded her arms around her chest as she smiled lightly. This was something she often did.

Ling Chen frowned and thought before asking, “Does she know my real-life identity and where I’m staying?”

“Yes,” Li Xiao Xue replied. “However, don’t worry – she’s more intelligent than any other woman. Since she was willing to give up the entire Skyfall Dynasty to help you, she naturally wants to possess a good relationship with you. How could she expose you? From how I see it, she’s probably like me found some worth in you… I’ll come pick you up tomorrow afternoon… remember not to go out.”

After giving Ling Chen a coquettish gaze, Li Xiao Xue turned around as she faintly smiled and walked away. There was a look

within her eyes that made her seem like she could see through everything in the world... what would the situation be like tomorrow?

After Li Xiao Xue left, Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice, who had been waiting for a long time, finally found an opportunity to come over to Ling Chen's side.

"Ling Tian... do you have anything to say to us?" In front of Ling Chen, Winter of That Year was not as frivolous and flippant as he usually was. He had a complicated expression, and Hundred Miles of Ice also looked quite serious. Both of his sword-like eyes were piercing into Ling Chen.

"What year did the two of you enter 'Heaven'?" Ling Chen frowned as he coldly asked. This question caused Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice's pupils to contract.

"So you really were somewhere from there! I never thought that after that explosion, apart from us, there were other survivors!" Winter of That Year said while trying to suppress his emotions, though his heart rate still sped up. He and Hundred Miles of Ice were both humans, but they were different from other people. They were 'humans' who no longer belonged in the world. They only had each other in this vast world, and only they knew the feeling of loneliness, inferiority, and exclusion that they felt.

Now that they had suddenly found someone in the same boat as them, they felt delighted and felt a sense of closeness.

"Answer me first, what year? Ling Chen asked.

Winter of That Year looked at Hundred Miles of Ice and didn't hide anything as he replied, "It was 10 years ago, or more precisely 10 years and 4 months ago! What about you?"

"10 years ago?" Ling Chen muttered to himself. A look of astonishment flashed in his eyes – that was when he had left 'Heaven'. He had spent 3 years and 4 months in Heaven, 3 years

and 5 months in Hell, and after 'killing' Instructor Hell, 7 years had passed... in total, it had been 13 years and 6 months since he had been taken to Heaven.

These 2 people had entered Heaven 2 months after he had left.

"I was there earlier than you," Ling Chen replied. "I was taken there 13 years ago – 13 years and 6 months ago."

"13 years ago?" Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice were shocked. A look of confusion surfaced on their faces, after which their expressions suddenly changed.

"You're Adam!!" Winter of That Year's eyes widened as he yelled.

"You know about me?" Ling Chen was quite calm upon hearing the name 'Adam'. To anyone, the things that happened there would be incredibly shocking, and even more so to the victims. They couldn't reveal any of this to the public or countless problems would arise for them. However, to these 2 people who had gone through the same things as him, people he felt quite familiar with, he didn't hide anything.

"Heh... Adam, Eve, how could we not know about those names?" Winter of That Year laughed. Although he was laughing, the laugh was one full of grief. "No wonder why you're so strong; to the point that you're many times stronger than the boss and myself. No wonder why you could defeat the Sword Emperor so easily and single-handedly destroy millions of troops. So you're not a 'man-made god' like us, but the Mad Scientist's perfect creation!"

"Man-Made God?" Ling Chen frowned.

"That's right, man-made gods. The boss and I are both 'man-made gods'. Sounds cool and domineering, right? Do you know what man-made gods are and how they came about?" Winter of That Year's smile became more and more twisted. Behind him, Hundred Miles of Ice silently closed his eyes, giving off an aura of grief.

“Adam and Eve were ‘perfect creations’ that the Mad Scientist screamed about every day, and they were the greatest works of his life. He madly told us that when the time was ripe and he removed the restrictions on Adam and Eve’s brain capacities, they would become true demi-gods! 2 perfect demi-gods should have been enough, but that madman still wanted more demi-gods to become his powerful ‘slaves’. As such, he started to create us, the man-made gods… haha, man-made gods. Adam, do you know why you have a strange feeling when you come near us?”

Ling Chen: “……”

“The boss and I thought that we had met another man-made god, but we never expected that he had met the ‘lord of gods’. This is because we were made by being modified by your blood and genes. In other words, we’re only lowly life forms given our powers by your blood and genes.”

Ling Chen: “!!!!”

Chapter 603 – A Miracle That Came Silently

"Using my blood and genes? How's that possible?!" Ling Chen frowned.

"To normal people, that's indeed impossible, but that person is the Mad Scientist! He was able to clone your blood and genes, and given enough time, he could probably even clone you!" Winter of That Year said as he breathed raggedly while in a strangely stimulated state. Seeing that the person in front of him was the person whose blood and genes had been forcibly instilled inside him to make him a 'man-made god', his memories were awakened, making him feel incredibly complicated emotions.

Cloning blood and genes... Ling Chen knew that if it was the Mad Scientist, he would be able to do it. There was almost nothing that was impossible for him! Just like Instructor Hell, who had seemed to rise from the dead, he had been turned into a cyborg by the Mad Scientist! A monster that only appeared in movies, but was much more perfect than those in movies.

"Why did he use my blood and genes?"

"Because the 4 successful subjects at the end were all male and you were stronger than Eve overall, so of course the Mad Scientist would choose you," Winter of That Year replied as his entire body trembled slightly.

"The Mad Scientist instilled by blood and genes inside you mainly to alter your body's constitution, right? Were your minds, thoughts, and memories affected in any way?" Ling Chen asked as he looked at them.

"No..."

"That's good." Ling Chen nodded as he said in a serious tone, "Since they weren't affected, you're still you, not a derivative product. If a person's mind was altered, they would have lost

themselves; while if a person's mind is still theirs, even if their entire body has been altered, they will still be themselves. It's most likely that you were given those things because you lost too much blood, and that blood has long since fused with your bodies so it has nothing to do with me anymore. Genes are the same."

Ling Chen's words caused Winter of That Year to pause in surprise... this entire time he had felt humiliated that a stronger person's blood and genes had been instilled within him to make him stronger. He felt that he was no longer himself, and his superhuman abilities were also because of another person's blood and genes, making him a mere derivative product. He felt that he was both pitiful and laughable. However, hearing Ling Chen's words... why did he suddenly feel that it was no big deal?

He suddenly felt much better!

Ling Chen ignored the changes in their expressions and continued speaking, "Come to speak of it, how did you escape from there?"

Ling Chen had asked how they had 'escaped', not 'left'. Ling Chen wouldn't believe that the Mad Scientist had left them go out of compassion unless he had truly gone mad.

"6 years ago, we found a rare opportunity to blow up the island." Thinking back to that day, a look of delight appeared on Winter of That Year's face. "Since we couldn't just escape, we decided to take the Mad Scientist down with us! On that day, the entire island, including the Mad Scientist's equipment, samples, medicines, metals, and diseases... were all completely blown up. The heavens were kind and allowed the boss and I to live on, though I lost consciousness for 6 years and only woke up half a year ago."

"Blew up?" Ling Chen raised his eyebrows as he went deep into though. Back then, after 'killing' Instructor Hell, he and Eve had returned to 'Heaven' to assassinate the Mad Scientist. However, they found that 'Heaven' was gone. It turned out that it had been

blown up by these 2 people!

On the vast ocean, the evidence of the explosion was quickly swallowed by the boundless waves.

“However, these years, the boss and I always had a bad feeling.” Speaking to there, Winter of That Year’s body trembled. “A bad feeling that the Mad Scientist wasn’t dead! This was because every time the boss and I thought of the Mad Scientist, our bodies would grow cold… it wasn’t just out fear towards him, but maybe… maybe a warning from our winds! Adam, with your mental energy, I’m sure that you should know that ‘foresight’ and ‘warnings’ aren’t just fictional things!”

Ling Chen snapped out of his thoughts as he looked at them, “Your guess was correct – indeed, the Mad Scientist has not died. Not too long ago, I met another of the Mad Scientist’s creations. In front of that creation, I was almost unable to fight back, and I was almost killed by him.”

“W-What?!” Expressions of shock appeared on Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice’s faces.

“Not dead… he’s… not dead!” Winter of That Year’s body started to violently tremble as his face instantly became incredibly pale. Guessing that the Mad Scientist wasn’t dead and receiving confirmation were completely different things. Anyone who had been to ‘Heaven’ before would know just how terrifying the Mad Scientist was! His body was incredibly thin, and would huff and puff from just walking. However, he was more terrifying than even the most horrifying demon in the world! Although so many years had passed, no matter if it was Winter of That Year, Hundred Miles of Ice, or even Ling Chen, they would always shudder when thinking about the Mad Scientist.

“Not only is he not dead…” Ling Chen’s voice became heavier. “The year you destroyed that island, it was definitely arranged by the Mad Scientist!”

“What do you mean?” Winter of That Year felt quite shocked.

“The Mad Scientist is terrifyingly intelligent – I’m sure you know this already. Over the years, tens of thousands of people fell into his hands, but not a single one of them were able to escape from him. And yet, you were able to find and detonate a bomb! Moreover, that island contained equipment that was ahead of earth’s technology by hundreds of years, and all of the satellite signals around it were scrambled. All of the ships that came near the island would be redirected, and all of the planes that would fly over it would suddenly change course. In other words, if the Mad Scientist hadn’t allowed it, it would have been impossible to reach the island! On that undiscoverable island, why would he have a bomb that could destroy the entire island? What would he create it for? Apart from that island, what would he want to blow up?”

Upon hearing this, Winter of That Year’s body chilled. Indeed, he had found the bomb quite easily, and had felt incredibly lucky. He occasionally wondered whether this was part of the Mad Scientist’s plan. However, because so much of the Mad Scientist’s hard work was gathered on that island, he couldn’t see why the Mad Scientist would want to blow up that island. However, upon hearing Ling Chen say this, he felt more and more certain that this was the truth. His lips trembled as he asked, “T-That’s impossible, right? Why would the Mad Scientist…”

Ling Chen had already guessed the reason. He spoke succinctly, “The reason is quite simple. Back then, he must have used some method to discover that Eve and I defeated his only ‘comrade’, and found out that Eve and I escaped from his control. Haha… he once said that Eve and I were his only 2 creations that could make him feel fear. As such, he became scared upon learning that we had escaped his mental control.

“We knew the way to get onto the island, and had sufficient power to kill him. As such, he had to escape. However, he couldn’t bring away everything on the island, nor could he allow anyone to

discover the island. As such, he decided to blow up the island through you. This was because if you did it, it could create the illusion of him being killed. Moreover, the time you guys blew up the island matches up with the time we 'killed' his comrade. By the time Eve and I prepared to go back to kill him, the island was gone."

Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice's faces became ashen. After hearing that the Mad Scientist wasn't dead, they felt as if a gigantic rock weighing thousands of kilograms was weighing down on their hearts. Unless the Mad Scientist truly died, he would remain as a shadow in their hearts that they would never be able to erase. Winter of That Year deeply breathed in as he asked, "Did you find the Mad Scientist after that?"

"No," Ling Chen shook his head as he frowned. "As long as he doesn't show himself, I'm sure that no one in the world will know where he is. However, what I'm sure of is that right now, he's not carrying on 'man-made god' experiments."

The Mad Scientist's body was extremely weak. He was a monster who worshipped knowledge and intelligence, but he disregarded physical strength completely. All of Ling Chen's physical training had come from Instructor Hell. Instructor Hell had almost been killed by him and Eve, and he had fallen into the ocean. Although he hadn't died, he had barely survived and needs a few years to recover. During that time, there was no one to help the Mad Scientist find more experimental subjects.

However, it was certain that the Mad Scientist was not lazing around. Ling Chen and Eve had escaped from his control, but from his personality, he definitely wouldn't give up just like that. However, after all these years he still hadn't reappeared – the only possibility was that he was carrying out an even more important experiment or plan.

"Since we can't find him, we'll have to wait for him to come back. I'm sure we'll find him again someday," Ling Chen said as his

eyes flashed.

Winter of That Year looked at Hundred Miles of Ice as he bitterly smiled, “You might meet him again and kill him, but boss and I won’t have that opportunity.”

“Why’s that?” Ling Chen asked.

“I don’t know what sort of methods the Mad Scientist used, as well as how many strange and rare materials he used to change your body. The molecules in your blood are more volatile than fire, and aren’t something that normal humans can endure. If a normal person was injected with even a bit of your blood, within a few minutes, they would be dead. The Mad Scientist used many cruel methods to create 4 successful experiments, but the success came at a price. Each of those 4 successful experiments only had a maximum of 10 years of lifespan remaining – the boss and I still have 1 year.

“At the same time, our senses were damaged. I lost my sense of smell and taste – in my world, there are no fragrances and delicious foods! As for the boss, he lost much of his verbal abilities, and he can’t even say a complete sentence. Moreover, he lost his sense of touch… coldness, heat, pain, itchiness… even if you stabbed him with 100 knives, or threw him into fire, he wouldn’t feel any pain!”

They had never told anyone any of this apart from Ling Chen because there was nobody else to tell. Only they knew the pain of losing their senses.

“Ling Chen!” The snow-white Shadissika left Ling Chen’s embrace for too long, and couldn’t help but come over. She grabbed onto Ling Chen’s hand as she smiled sweetly, “Are you talking about something fun? The cute Cai’Er said that there’s a big forest over there that’s very pretty; can you take me there to play?”

“Mm, okay. That place is called the Fairy Forest; I’m sure you’ll like it.” Facing Shaddisika’s request, Ling Chen simply couldn’t

refuse. His gaze fell on Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice's faces as he smiled and said, "There's no such thing as absolutes in the world, and I'm sure there's a way. Out of the people I brought out from there, 2 of them specialise in medicine and have equipment that the Mad Scientist made. Maybe they'll be able to find a way to restore your bodies. As such, if you have time, come to Su Hang City and I'll ask them to try."

Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice's eyes lit up. If it was a normal doctor... even if it was the most reputable doctor in the world, they would refuse. However, when Ling Chen mentioned the equipment that the Mad Scientist had made, although the Mad Scientist was terrifying, everything that came from him was incomparable to the things on earth. This gave them a faint sense of hope.

"Really? Then... Then thank you so much! The boss and I will come to Su Hang as soon as possible." Winter of That Year emotionally said as he rubbed his hands together.

Ling Chen slightly nodded as he smiled, "I can't guarantee that we'll be successful, but even if we do succeed, you don't have to thank me – I heard from Xiao Xue and the others that because of a promise, you stood guard in front of the Azure Forest Village for a few months. If it wasn't for you, the new city might have been destroyed already. For you to keep that promise and be so loyal, I consider you to be true men who are worthy of respect. As such, I'll do my best to repay you... Sha Sha, let's go."

"Mm!" Sha Sha excitedly nodded and happily held Ling Chen's hand. After taking a few steps, she looked back at Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice.

"Adam, he's actually Adam." After Ling Chen left, Winter of That Year patted his chest and let out a breath. "I never thought that Adam would be Chinese... nor did I think we would ever meet him. Fate is such a strange thing... achoo! Achoo! Achoo! What's this smell? It's so sweet..."

“……”

“… Smell…?”

“Smell… Smell… I can smell again!!” Winter of That Year rushed towards Hundred Miles of Ice, his hands tightly grabbing onto him as tears surfaced in his eyes. “I can smell again; I can really smell again! It’s true!! It’s true!!!”

Facing Winter of That Year’s mad yelling, Hundred Miles of Ice’s expression froze. He stared at Winter of That Year’s face before looking down to where Winter of That Year was grabbing him…

In his excitement, Winter of That Year had used too much force when grabbing him, making him feel some pain.

Pain…

“It hurts…” He only said 2 words and couldn’t say anymore.

He basked in this pain, savouring it because he had not experienced it in so many years.

To them, today was a miraculous day. The heavens had filled their lives with cruelty, and yet it had suddenly become compassionate, returning what it had taken away from them. These things, which were things that normal people always had, were things that they didn’t even dare to dream about regaining.

Chapter 604 – The Worlds Align Silently

"Ling Chen, there are so many pretty big sisters by your side!"

"Mm... they're all very nice and will be very nice to Sha Sha as well."

"I feel that they all really like Ling Chen."

"... Why do you say that?"

"It's just a feeling, but I'm extremely confident in my feeling... just like how I knew Ling Chen would come to save me." Shadissika's lips curved upwards into a smile that could insta-kill Ling Chen every time.

"Looks like they all think decently of me, haha... ha." Ling Chen awkwardly laughed. He felt that the 'like' that Sha Sha was talking about wasn't just how little kids 'liked' each other.

Suddenly, Qi Yue's voice suddenly sounded out in Ling Chen's mind, "Little master, you still haven't given me an answer about this little girl. Where did you pick up this strange and pretty little girl? It looks like you reeeeally~ like her... aiya, don't tell me that little master's a lolicon."

"#$%... I wanted to ask you about her." Ling Chen automatically ignored the latter half of Qi Yue's sentence as he asked in his mind, "In your memories was there anyone who was completely white, including their hair and eyebrows like Sha Sha?"

"Indeed, there were," Qi Yue replied after thinking. "In the ancient times, there was a high-grade type of creature called the Mystic Soul Ice Fox. After they reached the Saint Destroyer grade, their human form would be completely snow-white, including their eyes, just like this little girl. However, she doesn't have the aura of a beast clan, so I don't think it's that. The only other clan I can think of is the 'White Phoenix Clan'.

"White Phoenix Clan? Is it a type of Phoenix?"

“Of course not. Back in the ancient times, the human race wasn’t so simple. The ‘White Phoenix Clan’ was like the ‘Dwarf Clan’ – they were both humanoid races. The White Phoenix people were snow-white and worshipped phoenixes. There were not many of them, and they lived in the far north. When standing in the snow, they almost merge with their surroundings. After the Phoenix Clan went extinct, the White Phoenix Clan also disappeared, most likely going extinct as well. The only clans that fit this little girl’s appearance are those 2 clans.”

“Sha Sha’s definitely not a beast… so could she be from the White Phoenix Clan?” Ling Chen wondered.

“You should at least tell me where you found her,” Qi Yue said slowly.

Ling Chen nodded as he replied, “Do you remember the mysterious door I told you about at the summit of the Godchild Peak? After killing the White Tiger, I obtained the third key. After putting all the keys in their respective holes, I was sucked into the door and then…”

Ling Chen suddenly had an intense feeling that he couldn’t tell her the entire truth. This feeling came very suddenly, which made him feel quite strange. However, this sensation became stronger and stronger, making him feel that if he told the whole truth, a terrible catastrophe would happen.

“Afterwards, I saw Sha Sha. She was sleeping and woke up when I touched her… apart from Sha Sha, there was nothing else. Since I woke her up, and there was no one else inside there, I decided to bring her out.”

Just like that, an incredibly long story had been but short. He didn’t mention the vast, dark world, the Lunar Scourge’s attraction to something, the blue crystal ball, the world within, or the things Sha Sha said to him. He didn’t tell Qi Yue any of that – although the feeling was quite strange, Ling Chen couldn’t go

against it.

Could it be a warning from his mental energy? Ling Chen wondered. He trusted his intuition and gut feelings and did not resist the feeling. As such, he did not tell Qi Yue everything that had happened.

“So it’s like that... that reminds me of a long-lost Time Magic Formation,” Qi Yue said uncertainly.

“Time Magic Formation?” It was the first time Ling Chen had heard of such a thing.

“The Time Magic Formation is an extremely high-grade magic formation that can affect time. Once the formation is created, it can cause the time within it to slow down or even stop. The effects are only cancelled when a living being enters it from the outside. Activating this sort of formation is even more difficult than climbing to the sky, and they are usually used to store incredibly important things to prevent them from decaying or dying. They can also be used to protect important people,” Qi Yue slowly explained.

“You mean?” Ling Chen somewhat understood.

“From what we know, it’s quite likely that Sha Sha is from the White Phoenix Clan. She looks the same as the White Phoenix Clan I know of, and although the White Phoenix Clan’s people worshipped Phoenixes, which is a sovereign of fire, they loved the cold and always lived in extremely cold places. You discovered Sha Sha at the summit of the Godchild Peak, where the temperature is extremely low, and yet Sha Sha seemed fine. This matches with her being a member of the White Phoenix Clan.

“My guess is that the White Phoenix Clan faced an extremely powerful enemy that was trying to kill them all. In order to preserve their White Phoenix Clan’s bloodline, they used a Time Magic Formation to seal Sha Sha at the summit of the Godchild Peak to keep her safe. Many years later, after their enemy was gone

and the name of the White Phoenix Clan forgotten, Sha Sha would be able to escape once someone brought her out. Because of the Time Magic Formation, as long as the formation was not broken, she would never grow old or die. That way, the White Phoenix Clan would be able to rise again. It's not the first time a clan used this sort of method to preserve their bloodline."

"Oh... so it's like that." Ling Chen nodded. However, within his heart, he knew that Qi Yue's guess was most likely not correct. Sha Sha definitely wasn't within a Time Magic Formation – since Qi Yue's premise was incorrect, her conclusion was also incorrect. However, Ling Chen nodded and did not rebut her, and instead felt a desire to immediately change to topic.

"Ding..."

Ling Chen's communication device sounded out. After returning to the new city, Ling Chen finally turned on his communication device again. He raised his wrist and saw the name 'Tian Tian' – Tian Tian was calling him from the real world.

Just as Ling Chen was going to answer the call, Tian Tian hung up. Ling Chen felt a bit surprised, but quickly realised that Tian Tian was worried that she would disturb him. Very soon, a voice message came through.

"Big brother, the big sisters said that you're back. You haven't logged off or eaten for nearly 2 days; you'll starve to death at this rate. Hurry and finish whatever you're doing and immediately log off! If you don't come back before dinner, I'll eat all of it by myself and I'll draw 3 big turtles on your face!"

Ling Chen couldn't help but laugh and feel a bit of heartache. After moving to the Bamboo Sea Wonderland with Tian Tian, it was the first time he hadn't logged off for such a long time. Moreover, because of the special circumstances, he hadn't been able to tell Tian Tian beforehand – she was probably worried sick.

After putting away his communication device, Ling Chen put his

arm around Shadissika's shoulder as he said, "Sha Sha, we'll stop here for today. I'll take you to the new city."

"Is Ling Chen going to log off?" Shadissika asked as she smiled.

"... You know what 'logging off' is?" Ling Chen felt quite surprised.

"Of course I know; big sisters Qi Qi and Su Su told me about it. I know that Ling Chen is a player and like Sha Sha, belongs to another world. Logging on allows you to come to this world and logging off allows you to go back to your own world." The girl spoke with a smile that was as clear as a freshwater fountain, looking as beautiful as a flower.

Ling Chen let out a small sigh of relief. Since she knew, he didn't have to do any extra explaining. He held Sha Sha's little hand as he said, "I need to log off now, so I'll take you to the new city. There are many pretty big sisters, as well as Cai'Er, who can play with you."

"I don't want to!" However, Sha Sha shook her head, her eyes flashing as she looked at Ling Chen. "I don't want to play with them; I just want to be with Ling Chen. Wherever Ling Chen goes, I'll go with him. If Ling Chen is going to log off, I'll log off with him."

"But I can't take Sha Sha when I log off," Ling Chen said, feeling a headache coming. It seemed that Sha Sha didn't truly understand what logging off meant.

"Don't care! Don't care! I don't want to be apart from Ling Chen. I want to log off with Ling Chen... you said that since you took me out from there, you would take responsibility and wouldn't abandon me." Shadissika continued to shake her head as she pouted with her pink lips, looking extremely wronged.

"Then... does Sha Sha know how to log off?" Ling Chen felt quite complicated.

“Oh… of course I know. As long as Ling Chen holds my hand when logging off, that’ll be enough.” Shadissika’s eyes danced with light as she spoke confidently. Her small hands grabbed on to Ling Chen as if she was afraid he would suddenly run off.

“Alright, let’s make a deal then.” Hearing Sha Sha say this, Ling Chen formed a plan in his mind. “I’ll hold Sha Sha’s hand while logging off. If it works, I’ll bring Sha Sha with me every time I log off… if it doesn’t work, then Sha Sha needs to be good and stay here until I come back and can’t go anywhere else, alright?”

There weren’t any monsters in the Fairy Forest, so Sha Sha would be perfectly safe here.

Sha Sha’s cute eyes lit up as she nodded, “Okay! You have to keep your promise!”

In that case…

Ling Chen held Sha Sha’s little hand and stood straight as he prepared to log off, “Sha Sha, it’s starting now.”

The world in front of him turned white and then plunged into darkness. As the smell of the air changed, Ling Chen knew that he was back in the real world. He opened his eyes and looked at the familiar ceiling. Although he hadn’t eaten in 2 days, with his superhuman, monstrous body, he didn’t feel weak at all. He got up from the bed and saw the small figure by the bed immediately. He immediately said apologetically, “Tian Tian, I…”

Just as he started to speak, Ling Chen felt that something was stuck in his throat, preventing him from continuing. His expression also froze as his jaw dropped wide… as if it was going to smash into the floor.

The girl in front of him was small and cute, and had a tender and angelic face. Her eyes shone like resplendent stars, and she had snow-white skin as well as pure white hair and eyelashes… she was silently standing there, smiling sweetly.

“S-S-S-S-Sha Sha!!”

Chapter 605 – Tian Tian, Sha Sha

The girl in front of him was clearly Shadissika!

Ling Chen was completely dumbfounded... if there was nothing wrong with his eyes or mind, and if he wasn't dreaming, he should be in the real world not the virtual world!

So how could Sha Sha be here?!

"Hehe, I win! I logged off with Ling Chen!" Shadissika raised her right hand in victory as she curiously looked around while blinking her large eyes. "Ling Chen, is this your home in this world? It has a very warm feel to it."

"Sha... Sha... how are you... here..." Under immense shock and disbelief, Ling Chen's tongue seemed to have become stiff. He reached out with his hand and placed it on Sha Sha's shoulder... it was warm and soft... she was definitely real and not just some illusion. Ling Chen's mouth twitched as he inwardly screamed... what's going on?!

Has the world gone crazy?!

Back then, when he had been filled with despair, he suddenly heard Qi Yue's voice – that had completely shocked Ling Chen. The shock he felt this time was much greater, because back then it was only Qi Yue's voice, while now a character from the game was standing right in front of him.

This goes against all that was natural; it goes against science; it goes against common sense!!

Shadissika tilted her small head as she smiled and spoke in a deadly earnest tone, "Of course I came with Ling Chen. I said that as long as Ling Chen logs off while holding my hand I'll be able to log off with Ling Chen and come to Ling Chen's home."

Ling Chen's mouth opened, but he couldn't utter a word.

The Mystic Moon world definitely wasn't just a virtual game – Ling Chen was very clear about this. Qi Yue's voice that night was proof of that. However, seeing this girl follow him from the virtual world into the real world gave him an enormous fright. Luckily, he had never thought of the Mystic Moon world purely as a game world, or he would probably have died from shock.

Tap tap tap...

The sounds of footsteps came closer. These footsteps belonged to Tian Tian – evidently, she had heard noise from the room, which meant that Ling Chen was awake, so she quickly hurried over Following Tian Tian's footsteps were 2 incredibly light and synchronised pairs of feet, which belonged to Chao Ying and Chao Xi.

The door opened, revealing Tian Tian's tender face. She immediately saw Ling Chen and her expression relaxed as she half-angrily asked, "Big brother, why did it take so l-ahhh!!"

Halfway through her sentence, she suddenly noticed that snow fairy-like girl, causing her mouth to drop open.

Behind Tian Tian, Chao Ying and Chao Xi also revealed expressions of shock. Because Ling Chen hadn't logged out for a while and they had no way to contact him, they had stayed here to protect Tian Tian. Under their protection, no one was able to enter this place without their detection... so how did this little girl suddenly appear here?!

Moreover, her hair was completely snow-white as was her skin... she looked extremely cute.

She definitely wasn't a real person, but rather an incredibly realistic doll! Otherwise, how could she have suddenly appeared here and have such a strange appearance?

"Hello, I'm called Sha Sha." Just like when she had met Meng Xin and the others, Shadissika didn't seem shy or afraid at all.

Instead, she smiled as she looked up at Tian Tian and the sisters and greeted them.

This proved to them... that she was a real, living girl and not just a cute doll. Suddenly, this bedroom, which wasn't very big, was filled with excitement.

Anyone could imagine that Tian Tian would immediately ask where this white-haired girl came from, why she was here, and how she got here.

However, even if Ling Chen had 8 more heads, he wouldn't be able to answer those questions. Could he really say he had brought Sha Sha out from the game and that she was a special NPC from the game?

If he said such a thing, let alone Tian Tian, even Chao Ying and Chao Xi, who idolised him, wouldn't believe such a thing. They would only cover their mouths and laugh, thinking that he was trying to joke around. However, apart from that, how else could he explain how this girl had suddenly appeared in his room?

She fell from the sky? She dug up from the ground? She jumped out from the TV? She's a doll that gained sentience? What's more, Sha Sha looked completely different compared to most girls. Although she was still quite young, her hair and eyelashes were completely snow-white. Even her skin was milky white...

Although Ling Chen was extremely intelligent and quick-witted, he was unable to think of how to explain Sha Sha's presence. He tried to give a random explanation as he began to sweat. Luckily, Chao Ying and Chao Xi could see how flustered he was, and they started to help him make up a story... such as that when they went to swim, they saw a small figure flash by, which they thought was them imagining things... after rambling for a long time, they finally convinced Tian Tian.

However, the reason Tian Tian did not continue to ask about this girl's origins wasn't because they had given a perfect explanation

but because... Tian Tian didn't seem scared or fearful of this girl, but rather happy to see her! By looking into her sparkling eyes, they could see that she deeply liked Sha Sha!

The eyes she looked at Sha Sha with were like the eyes Leng'Er looked at dolls with!

Beautiful women were naturally enemies, and this applied to girls as well. Normally, if someone was to intrude on the 2 person-world that Tian Tian and Ling Chen shared, a girl would be quite unhappy and not welcome her. However, the emotions Tian Tian showed were the opposite... Ling Chen was surprised at just how much she liked Sha Sha.

"Sha Sha... is that your name? It's just as cute as you."

"Tian Tian's very cute as well. No wonder Ling Chen says he likes you the most."

Ling Chen was perplexed... Did I ever tell Sha Sha about Tian Tian?

"Eh? Did big brother really say that?" Tian Tian was quite surprised, but quickly recovered, "Heheh, but of course. I'm so cute and obedient that of course big brother likes me the most. Right, how did you meet big brother?"

"In the game," Sha Sha replied. "Ling Chen saved me from a place and said that he would take me home. Since he took me out, he needs to take responsibility."

"So it was in the game... Did big brother give you our address and you came here by yourself?" Tian Tian asked.

"Hehe, pretty much," Sha Sha replied.

"But where are your mum and dad? Are they okay with this?" Tian Tian asked.

"My mum and dad... I don't have a mum and dad. Before I met Ling Chen, I was always by myself."

“Ahh! So… it’s like that. No wonder big brother brought you here. Big brother has always had a soft heart. I should tell you that I was also brought back by big brother, just like Sha Sha!” Tian Tian exclaimed.

“Ah? Really? I thought you were Ling Chen’s little sister,” Sha Sha replied.

“Of course not. By the way, Sha Sha, how old are you?”

“Umm… I don’t know. I just know I’m many, many years old.”

“Haha, we’re quite similar. I also forgot how old I was, but in the past big sister said I should be around 10 years old. Sha Sha should be around how old I am, around 10 years old… but Sha Sha’s a bit shorter than me, so I should be Sha Sha’s big sister.”

Standing next to Shadissika, Tian Tian slightly stood on her toes, seeming a tiny bit taller than Sha Sha. She smiled with a sense of victory.

“Big sister Tian Tian.” Shadissika didn’t reject this and sweetly called out.

“Wow…” Tian Tian’s heart leapt upon being called ‘big sister’ for the first time. She felt an immense sense of pride in becoming a big sister, and she remembered the love and protection Ling Shui Ruo had given her. The concept of a ‘big sister’ became something warm and sacred to her, and she held Shadissika’s hand as she earnestly said, “Sha Sha, from now on I’ll be your big sister. Big brother and I will take care of you, and we won’t let anyone bully you.”

“Mm!” Shadissika clearly and happily replied.

“Sha Sha, why is your hair completely white? It’s the first time I’ve seen a girl with completely white hair.”

“My hair was like this when I was born and I don’t know why… Ah? Tian Tian, what’s this? It looks so strange.”

“That’s a vacuum cleaner. Has Sha Sha never seen one before?”

“I’ve seen them before, but it looks different to the ones I’ve seen.”

“That’s normal; there are many different types of vacuum cleaners.”

“Then this… is that a TV?”

“That’s right; that’s a TV. This one here’s a PS8, which you can play games with. I always play with big brother, but big brother isn’t very smart, so I wreck him every time. In the future, I’ll play with Sha Sha.”

While Ling Chen sat in the bathroom, he heard all of Tian Tian’s words. He grumbled inwardly, “What do you mean you wreck me every time? I’m letting you win, alright? If I beat you every time, wouldn’t you just start crying?!”

From their discussion, one could tell how much Tian Tian liked Sha Sha. As her ‘big sister’, she had vowed to take care of Sha Sha and protect her. Perhaps it was because of how charming Sha Sha was – after all, even Ling Chen couldn’t resist that charm, so it could probably insta-kill any man or woman of any age. Tian Tian was very willing for Sha Sha to stay… just like how back then Shui Ruo, who had liked Tian Tian, wanted to keep her with them.

“Ah! I nearly forgot – big brother hasn’t logged off in 2 days and hasn’t eaten in all that time. I need to immediately make dinner. Sha Sha, you can play with him for now. I’ll be done soon. Before coming back, I couldn’t cook for Ling Chen, but now I can cook yummy food for him.”

“Alright! I’m also a bit hungry.”

The real world and the virtual world was completely aligned. This was Shadissika’s first day in the real world, but with her incredible charm, it was as if she had always belonged to this home. Her appearance had shocked Ling Chen, but in just a few

hours, her existence here seemed extremely natural... it was as if she was always part of the family.

Chapter 606 – The Shocked Ling Chen

When Tian Tian went to make dinner, Ling Chen found an opportunity to talk to Sha Sha by themselves. He pulled Sha Sha aside as he asked in a low and serious voice, “Sha Sha, please answer me truthfully - how did you come here?”

Sha Sha blinked, “Of course it was when Ling Chen held my hand when he logged off, bringing me here. Wasn’t it like that?”

Sha Sha looked extremely cute and innocent, and no one would be able to think that she was lying. However, the problem was that what she said was simply impossible. Ling Chen scratched his head and felt quite frustrated. “How’s that possible?! Sha Sha, you’re an incredibly cute and good girl, so you can’t tell lies.”

“I didn’t lie.” Seeing that Ling Chen didn’t believe her, Sha Sha’s face fell, looking wronged. “It really was Ling Chen who brought me here. Could it be that Ling Chen hasn’t tried holding anyone else’s hand when logging off to bring them here?”

Hold someone else’s hand when logging off… in the game…

Who the hell would do that! Even someone who was mentally challenged wouldn’t do such a thing!

Hearing Sha Sha say this… could it be that it is possible to bring someone with him when logging off if he holds someone’s hand?

What the hell?! I actually thought such a thing? I must be going mad! If that’s true, the world would descend into chaos.

However, seeing how wronged Sha Sha looked, even though he didn’t believe it at all, he was unable to continue asking. He hurriedly said, “Yes, yes, of course I believe Sha Sha… but, but if it’s like that, how do I take Sha Sha back into the game?”

“It’s very simple!” Sha Sha stretched out her small hand to hold Ling Chen’s big hand and said, “Ling Chen just needs to hold my hand when logging on to take me back into the game.”

“Are… you sure?”

“Of course! Since Ling Chen can bring me out by holding my hand when logging off, he can take me back by holding my hand when he logs on.” This ridiculous suggestion was said extremely matter-of-factly by Sha Sha.

Ling Chen didn’t say anything. He held Shadissika’s hand and sat down on the sofa. He tilted his head back and logged on to the game.

“Ding… welcome to the Mystic Moon world, we hope you enjoying playing.”

As the pleasant voice sounded out, his vision became filled with the green forest, and he could smell the refreshingly fresh air… this all told Ling Chen that he had returned to the virtual world. However, he could feel something soft within his hands.

“Wow! We’re back already! The air here is so nice.” Shadissika vigorously breathed in the fresh air here. The Fairy Forest was naturally pure and clean, and the pure air here simply could not be compared to the polluted air in the real world.

Looking over and seeing Shadissika next to him, Ling Chen felt like he was turning into stone.

“Lala… lala… lalalalala… I’m the pretty and cute little Cai’Er… I’m a pure and kind Fairy…”

The clear sound of singing could be heard, and very soon a small, light green figure appeared in Ling Chen’s vision. She sang as she beat her small wings and flew around, carrying a small basket in her hands while collecting honey like a small bee. Seeing Ling Chen, she gave a small exclamation as she happily flew over, “Aiya! Big brother, why are you here? Are you here to play with Sha Sha?”

“Hello, little Cai’Er!” Shadissika smiled as she greeted Cai’Er.

“Cai’Er, why are you here?” Ling Chen asked. He still felt

stupefied, and his mind was incredibly chaotic.

“Granny told me to go home to collect some Fairy Fountain Water. The new city will be our new home, so we want to pour the Fairy Fountain Water on the soil in the new city... that’s what granny said,” Cai’Er spoke clearly as she floated in front of Ling Chen and Sha Sha. Her sweet voice could make anyone feel like they had just eaten honey.

“Oh, it’s like that,” Ling Chen began to reply. He suddenly frowned as he stretched his hand towards Cai’Er. “Cai’Er, give me your hand.”

“Eh? Hand? Is big brother going to give me something fun?” Little Cai’Er blinked before she gave her hand for Ling Chen to hold.

Without saying anything, Ling Chen immediately logged off.

The scene before his eyes changed as Ling Chen opened his eyes. He saw that he was in his living room, and just as he was about to get up, a voice that definitely, definitely shouldn’t exist in this world sounded out by his ears...

“Aiya! Where is this? We were definitely in the Fairy Forest; why would we suddenly be here?”

Ling Chen looked up and saw Cai’Er floating there, her small head almost hitting the chandelier. She continuously turned as she looked around, her eyes filled with fear, shock, and confusion.

Ling Chen felt his legs grow weak, and he almost fell to the ground.

An illusion... an illusion... this was definitely all an illusion... it was all an illusion!!

“Hehe, I was right. As long as Ling Chen holds our hands when he logs off, we’ll be able to log off with him,” Shadissika, who had acquitted herself, giggled as she spoke.

Ling Chen stared at Cai'Er before standing up with a 'whoosh'. He grabbed Cai'Er's small hand and entered the game... although he let go of Shadissika's hand.

"Ding... welcome to the Mystic Moon world, we hope you enjoy playing."

The familiar log-in voice sounded out as the scenery in front of him became the Fairy Forest again. Shadissika wasn't beside them, but in front of him, Cai'Er was staring at him with a pair of confused and innocent eyes.

"That was all an illusion, all an illusion." Ling Chen said seriously as he looked at Cai'Er.

"Illusion?" Cai'Er said as she opened her mouth.

"That's right, it was all an illusion. We were here the whole time, but everything Cai'Er saw was fake. It was just a fun game," Ling Chen said as he smiled stiffly.

The pure and innocent Cai'Er was very easily tricked, and she immediately believed Ling Chen's words. She let out a small sigh of relief, "Ah! Illusion, illusion, illusion! So there was a game like that – that nearly scared me to death... that game seems really fun though. Big brother actually knows such a game – you're so amazing!"

"Heheh, of course. If Cai'Er wants to play, I can take Cai'Er to play next time." Ling Chen smiled before changing the topic. "That's right, Cai'Er, didn't your granny ask you to bring back some water from the Fairy Fountain? Hurry and go home, otherwise your granny might get angry."

"Mhmm!" Cai'Er obediently nodded and flew towards the Fairy Realm. "Big brother needs to remember to take me to play that illusion game again next time!"

Ling Chen tricked Cai'Er with a few words, but Ling Chen's heart was still pounding. He spread his hands and looked as his palms,

his head incredibly muddled… my god, my ancestors! What the hell is going on?!

He had thought that he could take Sha Sha out and bring her back because it was her. After all, he had brought Sha Sha out from a strange place, so she didn't belong to the Mystic Moon world. She evidently still contained many mysteries. However, he could even bring Cai'Er out… Cai'Er was a Fairy from the Mystic Moon world; she definitely belonged to the virtual world!

Since it was like that, perhaps it was him!

Could it be that in this game, if a player held someone's hand when logging off, they could bring them to the real world?!

3 minutes ago, if anyone said this, Ling Chen would think that they were crazy.

However, he had actually done this! This was reality!

If this was true, just what was going on with the Mystic Moon world? If it was true, why had he never heard of such a thing happening before? There were billions of people in the world, so surely some players who were not right in their head had tried such a thing before!

"Little master, what happened? Your heart is beating so erratically. Could it be that you've met some sort of exquisite beauty?"

Qi Yue's voice suddenly sounded out in Ling Chen's mind, causing his mind to freeze. He immediately spoke, "Qi Yue, I just encountered something incomprehensible. Perhaps you'll know the answer to it."

"Oh?" Qi Yue sounded quite curious.

Ling Chen stretched out his hand as he frowned, "When I logged off and held Sha Sha's hand, I actually brought her to the real world!"

Qi Yue: “……”

“When I held her hand and logged on, I brought her back. Just then, I met Cai’Er and the exact same thing happened! When I held her hand and logged off, I brought her out with me, and when I held her hand when logging on, she came back here. What’s going on?!” Ling Chen asked as he frowned. He had found out that the 2 worlds intersected because of Qi Yue! It was when Qi Yue had suddenly appeared to him in the real world, letting him know that the Mystic Moon world was not that simple. As such, the only person who could answer this question was Qi Yue.

Qi Yue thought for a moment, as if she was shocked by what Ling Chen had said. Following this, she replied with a look of shock, “Such a thing actually happened? Are you sure it was real?”

“Would I joke around with you over such a childish joke?” Ling Chen said in frustration. “If you don’t know what’s going on, how did your voice and image appear to me in the real world?”

“That’s completely different,” Qi Yue replied. “Little master should know that I don’t have a real body, and I exist as a ‘soul’ and live in the Lunar Scourge. When little master enters the virtual world, it’s your mind or your ‘soul’.”

“The reason my voice and image could appear in your world was because before you log off, I attach some of my soul onto your own and go to your world with your soul. That way, I can experience your world through your senses as well as speak with my voice and create an image that looks similar to me. However, that’s only a small part of my soul, and whether it is simply sensing, speaking, or projecting an image, it can only last for a very short period of time. What little master just spoke of was bringing Sha Sha and Cai’Er’s bodies into the real world. Honestly, even I’m so shocked that I can hardly believe it… hm? Could it be because of the Lunar Scourge?”

“Lunar Scourge?” Ling Chen raised his wrist. “What does it have

to do with that?”

“The Lunar Scourge is an ancient evil item, and it is something left behind by the gods that also contains the power of True Gods. It is something incomprehensible even to the apex creatures of this day and age. As such, the Lunar Scourge contains some mysterious and incomprehensible powers. If what little master said was true, I think the Lunar Scourge is the only explanation.”

As Qi Yue spoke, the Lunar Scourge on Ling Chen’s wrist flashed as a woman with an incredibly enchanting and seductive body, wearing a black muslin dress, appeared before Ling Chen.

Her jetblack hair fell across her shoulders, and her black eyebrows were like fog. Her beautiful eyes looked around her surroundings, and her skin was as glossy and smooth as sheep rouge and white jade, while her thin black muslin dress barely covered her fiery body. The cloth in front of her chest was spread open, revealing her large, round, and perky breasts. The tight muslin clung onto them, making them seem extremely proud, and her cleavage could make any normal man’s blood boil.

The demoness Qi Yue!

Although Ling Chen had known Qi Yue for a long time, upon seeing her looks and body again, he couldn’t help but stare as he thought of a household item...

A Bed!!

Chapter 607 – The Woman Who Wouldn't Leave

Qi Yue's beauty could be described as extreme, and to Ling Chen, only Sha Sha's looks were superior. Apart from Sha Sha, there was no one else who could even compare to Qi Yue. Not even Meng Xin, Ying Xue, or Dia Wu, who are peerless beauties, could compare to her. Moreover, the witch-like seductiveness that came from her was something that not even all of the other women Ling Chen had ever met added together could compare to.

She definitely didn't possess the elegant and dignified beauty that Meng Xin had, nor that cold, inviolable beauty that Ying Xue possessed, nor was it the incredibly tender and cute beauty that Sha Sha possessed. When looking at Qi Yue, any man would immediately think of a bed! They would want to push her down on a bed and ferociously conquer her... without any foreplay.

Just like before, Ling Chen exerted incredible willpower to drag his gaze away from Qi Yue and gritted his teeth as he tried to settle his heart, "Didn't I tell you many times before that without my permission you're not to come out?"

Every time Qi Yue came out was a disaster to Ling Chen. He needed to use all of his self-control to resist the flood-like madness within him. Although she existed as a 'soul', that was only to other people. To Ling Chen, she was incredibly real! He could see her and touch her just like with Leng'Er.

Seeing how flustered Ling Chen looked, Qi Yue smiled bewitchingly as she looked at him with her misty, upturned eyes. Her gaze was incredibly sultry, looking extremely flirtatious. Her pink lips gently parted as she spoke softly, "I've always been very obedient to little master, and I have never come out casually. It's just that something so incomprehensible has happened to little master, and I want to help little master solve it... could it be that

little master doesn't want this?"

"... What do you want to do?" Ling Chen deeply breathed in, regulating his breathing... images of him ripping apart Qi Yue's clothes as well as dominating her repeatedly flashed within his mind... in that regard, Ling Chen wasn't a gentleman at all. Even he couldn't keep count of how many women he had slept with before. However, even if it was just Qi Yue, he couldn't sleep with her. With his powerful mental energy as well as the senses he had honed from walking along the boundaries of death countless times, he not only felt a sense of seductiveness and beauty from Qi Yue, but also a sense of danger... the more time he spent with her, the deeper this feeling became.

Although Qi Yue had been with him all this time and helped him, called him 'little master', and even occasionally tried to seduce him... he had never let down his guard towards her. He felt that if he truly gave in to her charms, he might never be able to extricate himself from her.

Ling Chen never doubted his intuition.

"It's very simple." Qi Yue smiled as she slowly walked towards Ling Chen, her hips swaying as a faint fragrance wafted off of her body. Her pink, glossy hand stretched out towards Ling Chen as she lightly laughed, "As long as little master holds my hand and logs off, if you succeed, I'll be able to see if I can find a reason. If it's because of the Lunar Scourge, as the soul possessing it, I'll be able to detect something. Isn't that a good idea?"

"... Could it be that you've forgotten that you're a soul without a body?" Ling Chen asked.

"That's not the same," Qi Yue smiled. "In front of little master aren't I a perfectly whole woman? Moreover, the Lunar Scourge's power might surpass what you expect. If it can bring characters from this virtual world into your world, what can't it do?"

"But..."

What if they actually succeeded? Bringing this incredibly strange and dangerous woman into the real world... what if something with unimaginable consequences happened? Such as...

Terrible thoughts flashed through Ling Chen's mind when his hand was suddenly gripped by an incredibly soft and smooth hand. Qi Yue had taken the initiative to hold his hand as her eyes narrowed while she smiled. "Could it be that little master doesn't want to know the truth? Taking someone from the virtual world into your own world – how incredible is that? If I can try it out, maybe we can really get to the bottom of this."

This was the first time Ling Chen had touched Qi Yue's hand, and by just having his hand held by hers, Ling Chen's heart trembled, and his ability to think was greatly affected. Slowly, his desire to find the answer took control as he spoke with great difficulty, "Alright."

He held onto Qi Yue's hand as he logged off.

The world in front of them changed, and Ling Chen immediately opened his eyes. When he saw the seductive figure next to him, he stood up from the sofa with a 'whoosh' as he stared at her in a daze.

As he logged off, he had hoped that it would fail... after all, Qi Yue wasn't a physical being but rather a soul that possessed the Lunar Scourge! She only seemed corporeal to him.

However, this shocking scene once again presented itself. When he returned to the real world, he immediately saw Qi Yue. She was standing in front of him, wearing that black muslin dress. She gave off a fragrant smell and looked incredibly sexy. Compared to Ling Chen, she was incredibly calm, and she didn't seem nervous at all in Ling Chen's home. After all, she had been here with her a part of her soul before and experienced this world with Ling Chen's senses.

Bringing Sha Sha into the real world... then Cai'Er... and now

even Qi Yue, who was a soul in the Lunar Scourge, was here!!

What was going on?!

Was the entire universe mad?!

“Looks like you’ve succeeded,” Qi Yue said in a soft voice as her eyes swept around her surroundings. “The world little master lives in is quite worrisome – not only is the Elemental Essence here not very active or dense, but there are also masses of germs, viruses, and suspended matter in the air. There are more than 3,000 viruses and 150,000 types of germs; in such an environment, living to become 100 years old can be considered a miracle.

The lifespan of those in the Mystic Moon world were quite long, and they ordinarily lived for 300-400 years. For people like Xiao Feng Chen and Daoist Tian Qing, who far surpassed everyone else, they could live for a few millennia. Comparatively speaking, humans on earth only lived for 80 or so years, which was much less.

Qi Yue was standing right in front of him, and adding on how thin and tight her clothes were, if Ling Chen slightly looked down, he would be able to see her deep, snow-white cleavage. If he looked, he would instantly think of the marvellous feeling of grabbing onto them – they were incredibly soft, bouncy, and simply just wonderful. Ling Chen’s heart rate sped up as his mouth dried up, and even his breathing became rough. Very soon, his lower body reacted as well.

This demoness!! Ling Chen gritted his teeth as he desperately looked away, almost biting his tongue.

Qi Yue’s body moved as she elegantly sat on the sofa beside Ling Chen. As she bent over, she revealed an extremely bewitching figure, enough to make anyone to cough up blood. Her long and slim fingers picked up a strawberry on the coffee table and gently bit into it as the sweet juice filled her mouth. “Earth’s fruits aren’t bad. As for the reason we were talking about… I already said that

for something so strange to happen, the Lunar Scourge is the only explanation. If even I can appear here, there are no other possibilities."

Qi Yue's answer was extremely vague and almost didn't count as an answer. Ling Chen didn't pursue this matter further and lowered his head as he muttered to himself, "Could it really be because of the Lunar Scourge?"

However, this meant that the Mystic Moon world wasn't simply a virtual game... it was an actual world!

If it wasn't an actual world, how could he bring people from the Mystic Moon world here?!

However, the Mystic Moon world was clearly a virtual game – it had the settings of a game, the rules of a game, the professions of a game, and the residents of a game, as well as different types of characters, monsters, quests and maps... everything was for the players, so how could it be a real world?

Just what was going on?!

"Ling Chen... eh? Wow!! What a pretty big sister!!"

Shadissika ran over from the kitchen, her large, crystal-like eyes fixed on Qi Yue. Although she was a young girl, she was deeply attracted by Qi Yue's beauty and seductiveness. She smiled as she spoke to Qi Yue, "Hello, pretty big sister. I'm called Sha Sha. Were you also brought out by Ling Chen from that world?"

Ling Chen: "....."

"So you're called Sha Sha! What an incredibly likeable and angelic girl. I'm called Qi Yue, though you can call me big sister Beauty." Qi Yue stretched out her hand and held Shadissika's small hand. Anyone who saw Shadissika would feel a sense of shock and affection, and Qi Yue was no exception. This was her first time seeing and speaking to Shadissika, and there was no way to fake the trembling in her eyes.

“Wait!” Ling Chen suddenly realised something as he spoke. “Sha Sha, you can see her?”

Qi Yue was a soul and therefore didn’t have her own body. She was just an image! The only one who could see her and touch her was the master of the Lunar Scourge! However, Sha Sha had evidently seen her and greeted her.

“Eh? Big sister beauty is right here. Of course I can see her.” Shadissika looked at Ling Chen with confusion.

“But…” Ling Chen looked at Qi Yue with confusion. Qi Yue laughed as she picked up another strawberry and placed it in Sha Sha’s hands as she smiled. “Hasn’t little master realised that after bringing me to this world I’m not just an incorporeal being anymore?”

“… What’s going on?” Ling Chen asked.

“I don’t know,” Qi Yue shook her head. “If I knew that, I would’ve regained a physical body a long time ago. However, I can roughly guess… this is a miracle that little master and the Lunar Scourge have created for me!” Qi Yue’s smile bloomed like a flower, her ample and perky chest rippling as she breathed. Her snow-white body, as well as her seductive figure, looked incomparably enchanting. As her lips opened and closed, they gave off a light fragrance.

Miracle? Miracle my ass! Looking at how calm and composed you look, I would rather believe that a sow could rape a dragon!

Ling Chen knew that this incredibly devious woman wouldn’t tell him the true reason even if he kneeled down and kowtowed to her. He could only inwardly curse as he stretched out his hand towards her. “Alright, since we’ve found the reason I should take you back.”

“Go back? Hehe…” Qi Yue’s eyes looked around as she laughed mischievously. She didn’t take Ling Chen’s hand but instead

wrapped her arms around her proud chest. “This is the first time I’ve come to be a guest at little master’s home. Can little master really bear to chase me away so soon?”

“Doesn’t little master feel that in such a big home little master is missing a female slave to serve little master? I’m sure I can take that role!”

Chapter 608 – The Truth

What Ling Chen was worried about the most had happened. When Qi Yue sat down with a look that said she wasn't going to go back, Ling Chen nearly jumped up and down in frustration.

Bringing a character from the virtual world into the real world was something that defied all logic, reason, and science. It was simply a heaven-defying act. When this sort of thing happens right in front of him, it causes an unimaginable chain reaction. If he had only brought Sha Sha here, after recovering from his shock, he would have been quite happy because Sha Sha was simply too likable. Moreover, apart from him, she had no one to rely on and wouldn't make things complicated. If it was just Cai'Er, he would have accepted it too – Cai'Er was a pure-hearted fairy, and although her presence in the real world would be quite shocking, she wouldn't cause any trouble for him.

However, Qi Yue was completely different.

She was an item's soul in the virtual world, and if she entered into his life in the real world... Ling Chen was certain that it was only a matter of time until his current life would be completely messed up.

Ling Chen definitely couldn't allow this!

"No! You need to immediately return; this isn't somewhere you should stay!" Ling Chen said.

Qi Yue didn't seem to mind Ling Chen's reaction at all. Instead, she looked at him bewitchingly. "Little master, don't be so shy. Just like in the game, I'll be obedient to little master and won't bother little master when he makes love with his lovers~"

"#$%... Alright, if you're so obedient then go back to the game with me," Ling Chen coldly said as he stretched out his hand.

Qi Yue looked quite hurt as she gazed at Ling Chen, her eyes

looking extremely wronged. “I’ve been with little master for so long that I thought that little master’s feelings towards me had grown. Who would have thought that little master would despise me and chase me away…”

Ling Chen was expressionless… Like hell I’d believe you felt so pitiful!

“Since little master is in a hurry to chase me away, I won’t be so thick-skinned as to stay here,” Qi Yue said as she extended her snow-white hand towards Ling Chen. This action caused Ling Chen to stare in shock… from what he knew about Qi Yue’s personality, if she decided to stay here, even a god would be able to do nothing about it. She shouldn’t have given in so easily. Ling Chen suspiciously took her hand as she continued to talk, “Before, I wanted to tell little master the truth about poor little sister Shui Ruo, but since little master hates me so much, I’ll just leave as soon as possible…”

Ling Chen’s body froze as his pupils expanded and contracted. He then suddenly took a step back as he stared into Qi Yue’s eyes, his breathing becoming increasingly ragged. “The truth about… Ruo Ruo? What truth? What do you mean?!”

Qi Yue waved her hand in front of Ling Chen as she said, “Little master always thought that poor little sister Shui Ruo was killed by the Long family’s people; however, that’s not the case. Her body was taken away by me, so I naturally know how she lost her life… in actuality, it had nothing to do with the Long family – they were just at the wrong place at the wrong time. Could it be that little master has never had his suspicions in the past? Shui Ruo died in little master’s arms, so you should be able to remember her condition. If it was because of the Long family, why did she have no injuries on her body at all?”

“It wasn’t the Long family?” Qi Yue’s words banged on Ling Chen’s heart, causing it to wildly tremble as his vision became distorted… just like Qi Yue had said, he had been suspicious about

Shui Ruo's death because she had indeed seemed uninjured; even her clothes were perfectly fine. However, the shock of losing Shui Ruo made him go mad, and he unleashed all of his rage on the Long family. Afterwards, he tried not to think about Shui Ruo's death."

"If it wasn't the Long family, why would Shui Ruo just leave like that? She had been completely fine before that!" Although Ling Chen tried to stay calm, his voice became incredibly emotional; he was unable to remain calm when talking about Shui Ruo. "Then tell me, if it wasn't the Long family, how did Shui Ruo die? Why didn't you tell me before?"

"Because little master never asked." Qi Yue said in a small voice.

"... Then I'm asking you now!"

Qi Yue didn't reply. She straightened her back, causing her ample chest to bounce up and down as her bewitching eyes looked at Ling Chen and smiled. "If you allow me to stay here and serve little master, and you don't chase me away... I'll tell little master after 1 month."

"You..."

Qi Yue smiled incredibly charmingly and casually cut Ling Chen off, "If little master is determined to chase me away, then I'll forget everything I know about this out of sadness. I might not be able to remember it during my lifetime... oh, right! I forgot to tell little master – if little master doesn't know why little sister Shui Ruo died that night, even if little master revives her... she could die at any time after that."

Ling Chen's expression froze as he stared at Qi Yue, unable to say anything. His heart and mind were filled with only one question...

It wasn't the Long family... not the Long family... then what was the reason?!

What was the reason?!?!

Could it be that something or someone else had caused Shui

Ruo's death?

The last sentence that Qi Yue said evidently hit Ling Chen hard... if he didn't know the reason for her death, even if he brought her back, she could die at any moment again... although Ling Chen desperately did not want Qi Yue to stay, he had no way to refuse. After settling the internal conflict within himself, he deeply breathed in as he slowly spoke, "Alright, if you want to stay, you can stay. I just hope that you won't do anything out of order... after a month, you must tell me everything you know about Shui Ruo's situation!"

"I've never broken a promise to little master." Qi Yue, whose wish had been fulfilled, grinned as she looked at him, looking quite coquettish and amorous, making Ling Chen's temperature rise. She stood up as she spoke in a soft and gentle tone, "Don't worry, I've always been little master's obedient little slave. I will only serve little master. I definitely won't do anything little master doesn't want me to do."

"I'm going to clean my room, the one to the left of little master's room. I'll do it myself."

Ling Chen was completely speechless as he watched Qi Yue walk while swaying her hips towards that room. Ling Chen was not surprised at all that she had chosen that room. From what she said, she had experienced this world through Ling Chen's senses, therefore she had long since become acquainted with this house.

Moreover, all of these rooms were already furnished and cleaned and didn't need any cleaning at all.

The moment Qi Yue turned around, Shadissika's gaze fell onto her back as she stared at her. Deep within her eyes, a white light flashed.

Ling Chen sat down, his mind filled with the exchange he just had with Qi Yue... evidently, Qi Yue had known the truth from the start, but she did not tell him. Even if he revived Shui Ruo, she

would die again. However, despite the fact that such a long time had passed, she had said nothing to him, only to use it as a condition for her staying... moreover, she didn't tell him everything; not even half.

Just how many plots and secrets was this woman hiding... Ling Chen had no idea.

"Ling Chen," Shadissika looked away from Qi Yue and called out Ling Chen's name. She walked to his side as she said in a small voice, "That pretty big sister seems to like you a lot."

Ling Chen looked up at the pure girl as he asked, "Why do you say that?"

"Because she was very determined to stay by your side and said that she would be obedient," Shadissika replied as she looked at him with her pure eyes.

Ling Chen stroked Shadissika's snow-white face as he smiled in amusement. "She'll like Sha Sha more. Who told Sha Sha to be so cute and likable?"

"Hehe." Shadissika happily laughed.

At that moment, the kitchen door, which had been tightly closed, was opened. Tian Tian poked her head out as she happily called out, "Big brother, Sha Sha, you can eat now. Come and help... eh?"

Apart from Ling Chen and Shadissika, she saw an unfamiliar face. That person was smiling at her and was the manifestation of what it meant to 'charm' someone. Her figure was the manifestation of a real woman, and her face was the manifestation of perfect beauty.

"So pretty!" Tian Tian spaced out as she spoke, almost forgetting what she was doing.

Ling Chen didn't feel surprised upon seeing Tian Tian's reaction – this was something that made him feel quite frustrated. No matter if it was Qi Yue's appearance, figure, or the enchanting air

around her, even a girl like Tian Tian was completely mesmerized by her. If it was a man, one could only imagine the consequences.

“Is little sister complimenting me?” Qi Yue, who was going to her room, smiled as she walked back, giving off a seductive fragrance.

“Mm!” Tian Tian nodded her head as she stared at Qi Yue – the prettiest woman she had ever seen in her entire life. “Big sister’s so pretty… but why are you here? Are you big brother’s guest?”

“You’re also very pretty. After you grow up, you’ll definitely be prettier than big sister.” Qi Yue came over to Tian Tian and bent down. As she did this, her large, snow-white chest swayed as her slim waist formed a perfect figure. “You must be little Tian Tian. I’m called Qi Yue, your big brother’s little slave. I came from the same place as little sister Sha Sha.”

“Little slave?” Tian Tian repeated this, feeling quite confused before smiling brilliantly. “So you also met big brother in the game? Did he also tell you to come here?”

“That’s right,” Qi Yue smiled as she replied.

“Oh…” Tian Tian nodded her head and looked at Ling Chen before looking at Qi Yue unblinkingly. “Looks like big brother likes you a lot, otherwise he wouldn’t have told you to come find us here. It’s no wonder – since big sister is so pretty, big brother definitely loves you to death… by the way, is big sister going to stay here for a while?”

“That’s right, am I welcome?” Qi Yue’s smile became more affectionate.

“As long as big brother is willing, of course I’d welcome you,” Tian Tian replied as she smiled.

Just like that, Tian Tian was also won over by Qi Yue. This demoness, who contained countless secrets, had successfully entered Ling Chen’s world. This allowed her to take a step closer to her ultimate goal.

Chapter 609 – A Different Night

With 2 extra people in the house, even the feeling that the evening brought was different. An extra demoness-like beauty, who continuously acted flirtatiously, was something that any man would want. However, if this sort of woman could only be looked at and not touched, after satisfying their eyes, one would feel immense torture. This was the first time Ling Chen had experienced this.

When Qi Yue walked out of the bath with only a towel covering her breasts and bottom, Ling Chen lost control of his eyes... that messy and damp hair, those thin eyebrows, the partially opened lips, the crystal-like skin, slim and long legs, and perfectly round ankles... even a goddess from the Nine Heavens would be completely outclassed by her. Moreover, Qi Yue did not seem embarrassed at all to be exposed like this in front of a man. Her watery eyes were narrowed, looking incredibly bewitching as she smiled. Her hand travelled down from her hips, moving over her body, as if she was enjoying feeling how soft and supple her body was.

Upon seeing Ling Chen's stare, Qi Yue seductively raised her hand and tucked some hair behind her ear as she teasingly looked at Ling Chen, speaking in a tempting voice, "Little master, do you like looking at my body?"

Ling Chen's body temperature skyrocketed as his entire face became red. The instant Qi Yue's voice sounded out, he felt something slide out of his nose, and he subconsciously lifted his hand...

"Ahhh! Big brother, you're bleeding from your nose!"

Before Tian Tian could bring over tissues, Ling Chen had run off as the demoness's charming laugh sounded out from behind him.

After taking care of his nosebleed, Ling Chen almost felt like

crying... he had seen many different types of women in his life, but this was the first time he had a nosebleed in front of a woman! He felt incredibly embarrassed.

The only comfort he had was that Tian Tian and Sha Sha didn't know what it meant for a man to have a nosebleed in front of a woman. At least, that was what he thought.

Qi Yue was sleeping in the room to the left of his. It was her first night on earth, and Ling Chen wondered what her state of mind and emotions would be like. As for Shadissika, when she hesitantly asked Ling Chen if she could sleep together with him with a look of hope in her eyes, Ling Chen and Tian Tian had been insta-killed. Tian Tian remembered the first night she had joined Ling Chen and Shui Ruo, and she had also used this sort of pleading look to ask Shui Ruo something similar... as such, she unhesitatingly asked Ling Chen to allow Shadissika to sleep with them. She took on Shui Ruo's role from back then, and she did her best to be as warm and gentle as Shui Ruo had been.

Even now, Tian Tian would sometimes call out 'big sister' in her dreams, which was often accompanied by 2 streams of tears.

When they slept, Ling Chen was in the middle, Tian Tian was on the outside, and Shadissika was on the inside. They both stuck closely to Ling Chen, sleeping peacefully. Ling Chen silently lay there as he stared at the ceiling through the dim moonlight from outside, unable to fall asleep. His mind replayed everything that had happened today: the future of the new city, what he should do about Shadissika, and the things Qi Yue had said... even when it was nearly dawn, he still was not sleepy, so he closed his eyes and entered the virtual world.

At that moment, Shadissika, who had been sleeping, quietly opened her eyes. She looked at the sleeping Ling Chen as well as Tian Tian and arose from the bed. She put on her slippers and silently opened the door as she walked out.

After walking out to the living room, she immediately saw a figure standing on the balcony. Shadissika gave a soft “eeh” as she hesitantly called out, “Is that big sister Qi Yue?”

“Little Sha Sha, why aren’t you asleep yet?” Qi Yue turned around as she smiled and asked.

“I’m going to the bathroom… why is big sister Qi Yue here? Aren’t you going to sleep?” Shadissika walked over and stood next to Qi Yue, looking up at the full moon hanging in the night sky.

Qi Yue also looked up towards the full moon. “Because you can see the moon here at night, and it’s a full moon, so I wanted to look for a bit longer.”

“That’s right, it’s very pretty…” Shadissika looked up at the round moon in the sky, looking slightly infatuated. A strange light danced in her eyes as she said in a small voice, “So this is the moon.”

“That’s right, there’s no moon in the other world,” Qi Yue said as she smiled.

Shadissika turned to look at Qi Yue as she asked in curiosity, “Big sister, you were brought out from the game by Ling Chen, just like me, right?”

“Yes.”

“Then how did you meet Ling Chen?” Shadissika asked.

Qi Yue’s eyes narrowed as she said slowly, “I’ve known little master for a long time, much longer than Sha Sha. Precisely speaking, little master saved me from a dark place, and I’ve been with little master until now.”

“Wow!” Shadissika said. “So big sister was also someone like me who Ling Chen saved. Then is big sister staying by Ling Chen’s side to repay him?”

“Of course,” Qi Yue smiled while replying.

“Same with me!” Shadissika nodded before looking up at the moon, her small hands in front of her chest as she said earnestly, “Ling Chen saved me and big sister; he’s a very, very good person. When he looks at me, his gaze is always very warm and gentle, and being near him makes me feel at ease and very warm. Although I’ve only been with him for a short period of time, when he was in danger, he brought the danger to himself to keep me safe. To be able to meet Ling Chen after I woke up, I feel extremely blessed.”

Qi Yue looked at her strangely and suddenly smiled as she said with a meaningful tone, “Legends say that although the White Phoenix Clan’s people live in extremely cold and harsh environments, they have an incredibly fiery and passionate heart. They fall in love easily, and once they fall in love, their feelings will not change even in death. Looks like this is completely true.”

“White Phoenix Clan? Fall in love?” Shadissika blinked as she looked at Qi Yue curiously. “Big sister, what are you talking about? I don’t understand.”

“I’m just talking to myself; little Sha Sha doesn’t need to understand.”

Shadissika continued to look up at the moon as her gaze seemed to become hazy and said softly, “A good person like Ling Chen should be rewarded with the best things and should always possess luck and happiness. He should also have good people around him. Those who harm him, use him, or bear ill-will towards him should all receive the cruellest punishments.”

Qi Yue: “……”

“Those who do good will receive good, and those who do evil will receive evil. This is a divine rule that no one can go against,” Shadissika said as she looked up at the moon. “That way, there will be more and more good people and less and less bad people, because the good people will be rewarded and the bad people will be punished. As such, we can’t be bad people, or we’ll be punished.

Some bad people can never be forgiven... what do you think, big sister Qi Yue?"

"....." After lapsing into silence, Qi Yue smiled bewitchingly, but the smile seemed somewhat forced. "Of course Sha Sha is correct. Mm, it's quite late, so Sha Sha should go and sleep. Big sister is also going to sleep."

"Mm, okay, good night big sister." After taking a final glance at the moon, Shadissika cutely smiled towards Qi Yue and quietly walked into the bathroom and closed the door.

Qi Yue did not immediately return to her room. She looked up at the moon, but under the moonlight, her eyes seemed quite dim. After a while, her lips moved as she softly spoke, "I'm... destined... to be a bad person... I have no choice..."

In the bathroom, Shadissika's small frame leaned against the door, her small and tender finger tapping against her lips. The innocent and cute look in her eyes was gone, and was replaced by an incredibly deep look.

"If you dare to harm him..."

.....

After entering the game, Ling Chen was called over by the women. He immediately summoned Snow Cherry and flew towards the new city.

"Ling Tian!"

"Ah! Little bro Ling Tian!"

"Tian Ya..."

After arriving at the northern gate of the new city, many voices called out. Ling Chen looked around... Xuanyuan Dia Wu, Yun Meng Xin, Li Xiao Xue, Xiao Qi, Su'Er, Winter of That Year, Hundred Miles of Ice, Chief Dilo, and Chief Greenwood.

They seemed to be gathering for a banquet!

“Big brother Ling Tian, try this! It’s a dessert made by the Dwarves, and it tastes so good!” Xiao Qi rushed over and pulled Ling Chen to sit down. There were tens of plates on the wooden table, filled with a plethora of foods and desserts. Just the sight alone was able to make one feel incredibly joyful and make their saliva to overflow to the ground.

“Wuu... Wuu... I’ve never even heard of such delicious food. Heavens, this is simply outrageously good!” Winter of That Year completely disregarded his image as he hungrily devoured the food. Before he even swallowed what was in his mouth, he would stuff his mouth with something else... that’s right, he would force it in. He looked like he was a ghost who had been starved to death.

“Of course.” Ling Chen picked up a cherry flat cake as he smiled and said, “Dwarves are not only great architects and engineers, but they are also natural gourmets as well. They love eating delicious food, but they love to cook delicious food more. As long as they have the ingredients, they can make the most delicious food in the world.” As Ling Chen spoke, he suddenly remembered something. He looked at Winter of That Year... hold on! Didn’t that guy say that he lost his smell and taste? Why was he looking like this?

“That’s right!” Upon being praised like that, Elder Dita’s face glowed red. “All of us Dwarves have remarkable talent towards food. That’s right, we designed a large gourmet plaza so that all humans can taste the gourmet meals made by us Dwarves... ah! Just thinking about it makes my heart become so excited that it’s going to jump out. None of our ancestors would have thought such a thing was possible, and that Handsome Pan was something that countless ancestors had dreamed of possessing.”

Dita became extremely emotional as he looked at Ling Chen and spoke with immense gratitude, “All of this was given to us by you. We will remember your deeds for all the generations to come. If you have any requests, we will do our best to fulfil them. Your enemies will be our entire clan’s enemies!”

Chapter 610 – It's Great Being A Man

"Here are the Spatial Orbs you wanted; they're all completed." Elder Dita took out the Spatial Orbs and gave them to Ling Chen.

"So fast?" Ling Chen was quite shocked. He counted them and found that there were exactly 500 of them, just as he had requested. Less than half a day had passed since he had passed the Spatial Stones to Elter Dita, while last time it had taken Dita more than 1 day.

"But of course." Elder Dita looked quite pleased with himself as he spoke with a red and ruddy face, "After coming here, my entire clan's potential has been unlocked. My soul has truly been awakened."

Dita's words were filled with overwhelming gratitude towards Ling Chen. Anyone could see that the Dwarves now saw Ling Chen as a god and felt wholeheartedly grateful towards him. With a single sentence from Ling Chen, they would dive into flames without even frowning.

"Also, we only used less than half of the Spatial Stones." Elder Dita took out the remainder. "What do you want to do with the rest?"

Li Xiao Xue cut in and said, "I heard Meng Xin say that these Spatial Stones can create permanent teleportation channels. In that case, can we link the new city with Azure Dragon City?"

"Of course we can!" Elder Dita immediately patted his chest as he replied, "With such a large piece of Spatial Stone, let alone connecting to Azure Dragon City in the East, we can even connect the most extreme points of the entire continent. However... the only problem is that Azure Dragon City is one of the continent's main cities. If we want to set up a teleportation channel there, we need the approval of the mayor."

“I’ll take care of that,” Ling Chen said confidently – he was quite familiar with Azure Dragon City’s Mayor. Back then, he had helped him with some important matters, so it was unlikely that the mayor would refuse.

“If that’s the case, the biggest problem will be easily solved.” Li Xiao Xue looked at Ling Chen as she smiled. “When the new city is opened, players will be able to directly travel from the Azure Dragon City to the new city without us having to provide teleport scrolls. If we knew about this, we wouldn’t have had to rush to make teleport scrolls and waste so much money… Ling Tian, it’s great that you’re back.”

“After coming back are you going to leave immediately? Have you found the things you’ve wanted to find?” Yun Meng Xin suddenly asked… what she asked was what everyone was wondering. Everyone turned to look at Ling Chen, waiting for his reply.

“Not yet.” Ling Chen shook his head then looked at Su’Er as he smiled. “But I’ve found most of them, and all of this was because of Su Su. However, Xiao Xue is right – this new city was created because of me, so I have some responsibility towards it. As such, before the new city is completely settled, I’ll be staying here. Of course, even if I wanted to leave, I wouldn’t know where to go without Su’Er’s guidance”

“That’s great!” Xiao Qi exclaimed. “I was worried that you would leave immediately. That’s right, big brother Ling Tian, can you tell us what you’re looking for now? I also heard that Su Su joined the Heaven’s Secrets Sect, which can tell one’s fate and see the future – is that true?”

Ling Chen shook his head and then nodded. “I can’t tell you what I’m looking for yet. However, with Su Su’s help, I’m sure that I’ll soon be able to find everything that I’m looking for. When that time comes, you’ll know. I was able to succeed time and time again because of Su Su’s guidance. She’s never been wrong before – it’s

very mystical."

"That's right, the Heaven's Secrets Sect's power is very mystical." Greenwood meaningfully nodded. "In our Fairy Clan, there are records of the Heaven's Secrets Sect. Although they can't go against the heavens and change one's fate, they can see the heaven's will as well as the heaven's secrets. That was why, back then, there were always countless people looking for the Heaven's Secrets Sect. They wanted them to reveal the heaven's secrets."

"They're so powerful? Is that really true?" Winter of That Year's eyes widened as he continued to madly eat.

"So awesome!!" Xiao Qi grabbed Su'Er's arm and shook it as she said, 'Su Su, can you take a look at my future then?"

"This..." Su'Er lowered her head as she said in embarrassment, "I've only just attained some accomplishments, and my power isn't sufficient; I can only use my power once in a long time, so I can't right now..."

"Ah... oh, so it's like that. That's okay, we have lots of time in the future," Xiao Qi said as she giggled. She was most likely joking with Su'Er. She believed that Su'Er's ability allowed her to find things in the game, but predicting the future of things outside of the game... how could that be possible?

"Speaking of the new city, Ling Tian, can you guess just how big the waves of this battle were?" Li Xiao Xue asked. "I thought that this event would be incredibly shocking to the rest of the world – after all, Qi Qi's fire incinerated 2 million troops, the Skyfall Dynasty and Battle Alliance defended against the Yan Huang Alliance and many other alliances, and Ling Tian returned and obliterated the remaining attacking forces. Every one of those things were incredibly shocking; however, the results far surpassed anything I expected."

"That's right, that's right!" Xiao Qi also became quite excited. "Now, almost the entire world is talking about our new city. An

army of more than 10 million players is the largest force we've ever seen in virtual gaming history, and yet we successfully defended against them... now that I think about it, it's simply unbelievable!!"

"Many people captured Qi Qi's attack before they died, and it's being called the most heaven-defying magic in the history of virtual games. Qi Qi's also being called the most powerful mage in history by countless players and was given the title 'Flame Empress'. The Skyfall Dynasty, Battle Alliance, Disillusion Alliance, and my Snow Moon Loulan's fame and reputation have skyrocketed overnight. And there's also you, Ling Tian."

Li Xiao Xue looked at Ling Chen in frustration. "Of course you would be viewed as the sun in the sky and be praised as a god. I'm sure there's no one who doesn't view you to be on par with Eve. You're now the second Boss-level player. Now everyone in the world has their eye on the new city, and almost every player is looking forward to its opening because they want to personally witness the player city that they all thought would be destroyed.

"On the other hand, the Yan Huang Alliance, Golden Age Alliance, and all of the other guilds that participated in the attack have been completely humiliated and are being mocked by everyone else. They lost immeasurable strength and gold, and they also lost their reputation. It'll take them at least a few years to recover. Adding on that ridiculous display at the end, they completely lost all face. It's impossible for them to attack the new city again within a short period of time, nor will they have time to take revenge against us. During this period of time, perhaps Alliance Master Xiao and the 3 Heavenly Kings will be able to make sufficient preparations. It's a pity that no one recorded that final spectacular scene. Otherwise, the situation would be even more amazing."

"Flame Empress..." Xiao Qi unhappily pouted, "Isn't that almost the same as that Flame Emperor? I don't want that title!"

“There’s nothing we can do about that. Male sovereigns are called ‘emperors’ while female sovereigns are called ‘empresses’. That’s the highest praise they can give you,” Yun Meng Xin gently said as she smiled. “However, in the eyes of every player in the world, you’ve far surpassed the ‘Flame Emperor’. Although your titles are similar, your position in their hearts is much higher.”

At that moment, a green light flashed as one of the Fairy Clan’s elders appeared. He spoke in a serious tone, “A group of people from the Vermillion Bird City came from the south gate. The one at the head says he’s the Vermillion Bird’s Mayor and that he wishes to meet the Vermillion Bird’s Representative…”

“Vermillion Bird’s Representative?” Everyone looked over to Xiao Qi. This was because Xiao Qi was now inextricably linked to the Vermillion Bird – even her life was given to her in exchange for the Vermillion Bird’s life. Even her profession’s name was [Vermillion Bird’s Representative].

“They’re probably… looking for me, right?” Xiao Qi stood up as she asked in hesitation.

Ling Chen immediately thought back to how before the White Tiger had died, it had told the truth of its death to the White Tiger’s Mayor, who used various methods to reduce the impact of the White Tiger’s death on White Tiger City. As the guardian beast of the Vermillion Bird City, the Vermillion Bird wouldn’t simply die without any regard to Vermillion Bird City – perhaps part of its duty, as its power and life, was passed on to Xiao Qi.

“Qi Qi, let’s go and have a look.” Ling Chen walked over and took Xiao Qi’s hand and summoned Snow Cherry before they flew towards the south gate. There were some inexplicable secrets regarding this matter, so he only took Xiao Qi and no one else.

Snow Cherry’s white wings spread out as she flew in the air. This was the second time Xiao Qi had been so close to Ling Chen as they sat on a mount. However, although their frame of mind was

completely different, what was the same was that their hearts still beat uncontrollably. Xiao Qi leaned back against Ling Chen's chest as she lowered her head and spoke in a small voice, "Big brother Ling Tian…"

Xiao Qi's incredibly soft and gentle voice almost melted Ling Chen's heart. He softly replied, "Mm?"

"Big sister Dia Wu really is your wife, right?" Xiao Qi asked in a small and hesitant voice.

"Mm, and she always will be," Ling Chen replied as he smiled.

"You'll love her forever, right?" Xiao Qi's eyes slowly dimmed.

"Forever and ever," Ling Chen resolutely replied.

"In that case…" Xiao Qi slightly raised her head, her eyes hazy as she asked, "Then… does our promise still count?"

The instant Xiao Qi asked that, Ling Chen's communication device received a text from Su'Er.

"Big brother Ling Tian… does our promise… still count?"

The 2 sisters asked him the exact same question at the exact same time, but they used different methods.

Ling Chen's heart pounded. Back then, when he detected it, he had tried to avoid their feelings towards him because he was afraid of hurting Shui Ruo and them… how could he not like them. However, now he felt more and more that if he let them down, it would be the greatest sin in this world.

He replied in a soft but resolute tone, "Our promise will forever count!"

The same words were conveyed to both girls through different means. He could feel Xiao Qi's heart begin to beat faster and faster as she leaned closer to him, a red glow of happiness across her face.

Within his heart, Ling Chen could almost see Su'Er's loveable and embarrassed manner. Suddenly, he wished he could see how

cute and adorable she was.

It was great being a man… especially a main character.

Chapter 611 – Vermillion Bird' Representative, White Tiger's Representative

When Ling Chen and Xiao Qi reached the south gate, they saw 20 to 30 people waiting there for them. They were all riding on large horses that were covered in dust. Evidently, they had suffered a lot to get here as fast as possible. The clothes they wore and the auras they gave off were not ordinary, and the man at the head of the party was tall with crimson hair and eyebrows. He had a fiery crown on his head, and each of his movements were majestic and dignified. Currently, in front of the gate of the new city, they were acting extremely reserved and continuously looked ahead, as if they were hoping to see something. However, they did not recklessly rush in for fear of offending someone.

With Xiao Hui's 'Eye of the Holy Spirit', information about their identities was sent into Ling Chen's mind... these people were indeed from the Vermillion Bird City, and they all held high statuses. The person at the head of the party was the Vermillion Bird's Mayor himself!

Ling Chen told all of this information to Xiao Qi.

"Are you looking for... the Vermillion Bird's Representative?" Xiao Qi descended as she asked somewhat anxiously.

In that instant, the crimson feather that the Vermillion Bird's Mayor was holding started to shine with a brilliant light as a clear image of the Vermillion Bird appeared behind Xiao Qi.

The eyes of everyone from the Vermillion Bird City widened as they stared at the Vermillion Bird's Phantasm behind Xiao Qi. Their expressions changed from one of shock to excitement as their eyes started to water up.

The Vermillion Bird's Mayor became so excited that his face

became bright red. He hurriedly jumped down from his horse and stumbled over to Xiao Qi as he yelled, “Great! Great! The Vermillion Bird’s Representative really does exist. I knew that the Vermillion Bird wouldn’t abandon us, great… great…”

Although Xiao Qi had guessed what was going on, upon seeing their reactions, Xiao Qi became a bit frightened. She weakly said, “These uncles, are you…”

The Vermillion Bird’s Mayor quickly and respectfully replied, “We’re from the Vermillion Bird City in the south, and we are the Vermillion Bird’s most faithful followers… no! Since you’ve inherited the Vermillion Bird’s power and soul, and you are the Vermillion Bird’s Representative, we’ll be your faithful followers from now on. Please use the Vermillion Bird’s power to bless our Vermillion Bird City with peace and fortune.”

“Eh?” Xiao Qi looked to Ling Chen for help, but saw Ling Chen smiling as he nodded. She let out a breath as she replied, “I’ve indeed inherited the Vermillion Bird’s power and soul, and before it left, the Vermillion Bird asked me to protect the Vermillion Bird City. However… However… I don’t know what to do.”

Xiao Qi’s words made the Vermillion Bird’s Mayor even more excited as he hurriedly replied, “Lady Representative, to be recognised by the Vermillion Bird, I’m sure you have a pure soul and kind heart. You don’t need to do much for the Vermillion Bird City; our Vermillion Bird City is linked to the Vermillion Bird’s power and soul. You just need to look after yourself and not let the Vermillion Bird’s power and soul dissipate. That’ll be enough for the Vermillion Bird City’s City Lifeline to continue existing. I believe that since Lady Representative has obtained the Vermillion Bird’s power, there will be very few people in the world who can threaten you. We hope that Lady Representative will come to visit the Vermillion Bird City now and then and accept the worship and praise of our residents.”

Xiao Qi opened her mouth… how is it this simple? She had

thought that they would make her do something very troublesome.

“Mm, I understand.” Xiao Qi nodded. “The Vermillion Bird has helped me greatly, so I will definitely help protect what it protected. Please don’t worry. If the Vermillion Bird City faces trouble someday, I’ll definitely do my best to protect it.”

The Vermillion Bird’s Mayor bowed and said in extreme gratitude, “On behalf of all of the Vermillion Bird City’s residents, thank you Lady Representative!”

Xiao Qi never expected that with just a few words these people would become so moved and emotional. After all, she didn’t belong to this world and didn’t fully understand the position these guardian beasts held in the hearts of the residents they protected. They were not only guardian beasts, but also something that these residents worshipped and placed their hope and trust in. If the guardian beast had died, the residents would feel as if the sky was falling and the earth was splitting.

“Lady Representative! Right now, the Vermillion Bird City has fallen into chaos after the death of the Vermillion Bird, and things are extremely unstable. Only if you appear and summon the Vermillion Bird’s Phantasm will we be able to settle this chaos and save the Vermillion Bird City. Lady Representative, please come with us to the Vermillion Bird City and receive the worship of our residents,” The Vermillion Bird’s Mayor said as he looked at Xiao Qi pleadingly.

“This…” Xiao Qi once again turned to look at Ling Chen. Ling Chen looked at her and sent her a message, “Just agree to it. Our new city is nearly complete, and if we want to strengthen our city, we not only need massive numbers of players, but also NPCs! If you go to the Vermillion Bird City, let the residents know of your existence, and let them know that you’ll frequently go to the new city, many of the residents will also be willing to move to the new city and become residents here. This will be incredibly beneficial

to the new city.”

“Alright, I’ll come with you,” Xiao Qi replied without hesitation.

The Vermillion Bird City’s Mayor and the other people looked delirious with joy, and they respectfully handed Xiao Qi a teleport scroll to the Vermillion Bird City.

“Big brother Ling Tian, aren’t you coming with me?” Xiao Qi looked at Ling Chen as she asked.

Ling Chen shook his head as he smiled. “It’s best that you go by yourself. If I went, the Vermillion Bird City’s residents would feel quite strange.”

“Alright,” Xiao Qi reluctantly said.

“Are you the Lady Representative’s friend? The Lady Representative’s friends are all distinguished friends of our Vermillion Bird City. The Vermillion Bird City will welcome you at any time,” The Vermillion Bird’s Mayor said respectfully to Ling Chen. Naturally, he couldn’t show any disrespect to the Vermillion Bird Representative’s friends. Suddenly, the Vermillion Bird’s feather in his hand suddenly flashed. The Vermillion Bird’s Mayor looked up at Ling Chen, and found that without anyone realising, a hazy white shadow had appeared behind him.

Although it was quite hazy, it was evident... that it was a gigantic, roaring white lion that was covered with purple markings!

The White Tiger!

“W-White Tiger’s Representative!!” The Vermillion Bird’s Mayor was dumbfounded.

Although he was extremely shocked, the Vermillion Bird’s Mayor quickly recovered and didn’t actually yell out. As he returned to the Vermillion Bird City with Xiao Qi, his emotions were incredibly complicated... no wonder he was friends with the Lady Representative. He was the White Tiger’s Representative - the

person who had inherited the power and soul of the White Tiger, the most powerful of the 4 guardian beasts. News had spread that the White Tiger had gone berserk and then died, causing the White Tiger City to fall into chaos. The White Tiger City's Mayor was also desperately searching for the White Tiger's Representative... and he was right here!

Thinking to the state of the Vermillion Bird City, the Vermillion Bird City's Mayor understood just how the White Tiger City's Mayor was feeling and immediately sent him a message regarding the White Tiger's Representative... within 30 minutes, tens of people in light armour charged out from the White Tiger City, rushing towards the Fairy Forest.

Afterwards, Ling Chen devoted all of his time towards the new city. It was impossible for him to familiarise himself with such a large city in such a short amount of time. As he familiarised himself with the place, he made suggestions about some changes, which the Dwarves unhesitatingly complied with. This made Ling Chen feel a bit embarrassed about suggesting any more changes.

"Tian Ya, when I logged off earlier, I had a look in a mirror and found that it wasn't just an illusion in the game; the wounds on my face really all disappeared. There isn't even a scar left." Xuanyuan Dia Wu was sitting back to back with Ling Chen as she happily spoke while looking at the sky.

"Haha, of course it wasn't an illusion. My Dia Wu should naturally be that pretty," Ling Chen said as he laughed.

"But..." Xuanyuan Dia Wu's eyes were filled with confusion and haziness. "Although I didn't dare to look in the mirror, I would wash my face every day and feel those countless, coarse scars on my face. If the scars had long since disappeared, I should have discovered this long ago. Yesterday, when I washed my face, I could still feel them..."

"It's quite simple; this is a classic psychological effect," Ling

Chen said breezily. “Because you’ve always been sure that there were scars on your face, when you touched your face, your brain convinced you that there were scars there. Don’t think about it too much. All you need to know is that you’re my perfect Dia Wu.”

“Mm!” Xuanyuan Dia Wu replied as she smiled. Although she still felt quite confused, she wanted to believe Ling Chen’s explanation and let go of those thoughts.

“Tian Ya, right now you’re at the Bamboo Sea Wonderland in Su Hang, right?” Xuanyuan Dia Wu asked.

“That’s right. Hurry and fly over here,” Ling Chen smiled as he replied.

“… How many girls are there with you?”

“Err, let me count: 1, 2, 3, 4, 5…”

“So… So many!”

“Are you angry?”

“No way! Hmph! Since there are so many girls staying with you, I… I’ll go next month! Hmph!”

“……”

……

Sunlight shines brightly at noon. Right after lunch, the screeching of brakes sounded out outside of Bamboo Sea Wonderland.

Li Xiao Xue, who was supposed to come in the afternoon, had come early.

“Big sister Xiao Xue!!”

Li Xiao Xue elegantly walked out of her red sportscar and immediately saw Tian Tian next to the man-made lake… as well as Shadissika. She stared for a moment before smiling. “Isn’t this little Sha Sha? Why are you here? I thought you were an NPC in

the game.”

It wasn’t just Li Xiao Xue. Everyone else who met Shadissika thought she was an NPC… because her pure-white skin, pure-white hair, and diamond-like eyes were not things that Chinese girls had. As such, Li Xiao Xue was quite shocked to see Shadissika here… but even if she was 100 times more intelligent, she wouldn’t have imagined that Ling Chen had brought her out from the game.

“Good afternoon, big sister,” Shadissika cutely smiled.

“Is big sister Xiao Xue here to find big brother?” Tian Tian skipped over.

“That’s right, I have an appointment with him. Hasn’t he come out from the game yet?”

After speaking, Li Xiao Xue saw Ling Chen walk out from the villa. Upon seeing her, he asked in frustration, “Didn’t we agree to meet in the afternoon?”

Li Xiao Xue smiled as she walked over while batting her eyelashes and said in a small voice, “Would you believe me if I said that I just couldn’t wait to see you?”

“… Alright, it’s fine if you’re early. I wanted to meet Gu Qing Han as soon as possible too,” Ling Chen said.

“Little master, do we have guests? Do you want me to do anything?”

An extremely bewitching voice came from behind Ling Chen, causing Ling Chen and Li Xiao Xue’s bodies to weaken. After the voice travelled out, its owner walked out from behind Ling Chen… in that instant, Li Xiao Xue felt as if the sky and earth had suddenly dimmed and that all of the light in the world was gathered on this ridiculously beautiful woman. Compared to her, everything else was incredibly dim and not worth looking at.

Ling Chen nearly cursed out loud, swearing at her thousands of times inwardly… Didn’t I tell you, time and time again, not to

come out??

When a beautiful woman – an incredibly intelligent and beautiful woman – saw a woman even more beautiful than her, how would she react?

What's more, it was in front of 'her man'!

Furthermore, from Qi Yue's gaze... she was evidently provoking Li Xiao Xue!

Chapter 612 – Meeting Gu Qing Han

With a peerless background, extraordinary looks and figure, intelligent mind, dignified temperament, and her status as the sole heir of the Li family, Li Xiao Xue was not inferior to any other woman in China. However, after facing Qi Yue and exchanging a few glances for just a couple seconds, she couldn't help but admit that she had lost.

She couldn't understand or see through this woman's gaze, and this woman's looks and figure were so perfect that she couldn't breathe. What's more, the aura that came from this woman gave her a strange feeling of suppression... as the big miss of the Li family, she had always reigned above other people, but when facing Qi Yue, she felt that completely suppressed without even doing anything.

This was the first time Li Xiao Xue had felt this way towards a woman since birth.

However, in the end, she was Li Xiao Xue. No matter what sort of situation she was in, she would never seem flustered. She naturally held Ling Chen's hand as she smiled. "Ling Chen, when did such a beautiful big sister start living in your home? I've never heard you mention her before. She also seemed to call you 'little master'."

Ling Chen didn't hesitate and started to walk hand in hand with Li Xiao Xue towards the car, not giving Qi Yue an opportunity to make things worse, as he struggled to find words, "She's a maidservant I found... just ignore her. Take me to see Gu Qing Han."

"Big brother, are you going out with big sister Xiao Xue?" Tian Tian ran over as she stretched out her hand, which contained a strand of snow-white hair, towards Ling Chen. "This is Sha Sha's hair; big brother can bring Sha Sha a gaming device. Sha Sha seems to have lost her gaming device."

"... Alright." Ling Chen hesitated and then nodded. Sha Sha came from the game and didn't belong to earth. However, after coming to the real world, she was like a normal human – maybe she really could use a gaming device.

"Little master, can you take me with you? I heard that there are lots of beautiful clothes you can pick. I just have this simple piece of clothing, so I feel embarrassed every time I go out," Qi Yue said in a pitiful tone while wearing her black muslin dress. Although her clothes weren't see-through, they were incredibly revealing and completely different from what people normally wore on earth... but that wasn't the main issue! Allowing Qi Yue to come here was already enough to make Ling Chen feel incredibly frightened, and taking her out... Ling Chen shook his head and didn't dare to think any further as he replied, "I'll ask Chao Ying and Chao Xi to buy you some clothes... Xiao Xue's let's go... Ying Xue, make sure you protect them well."

The sportscar roared as it shot off into the distance. Only then did Ling Chen let out a sigh of relief. If Li Xiao Xue and Qi Yue interacted for any longer, who knew what that demoness could have done.

"You know what I want to ask." Li Xiao Xue gripped the steering wheel as she spoke without looking at Ling Chen. She didn't look too happy.

Ling Chen leaned back against the headrest as he said powerlessly, "The situation is a bit complicated, and I don't know how to explain it clearly... do you want to hear the truth or a lie?"

"... I can allow my man to have his secrets. Moreover, that woman is so beautiful that even if I wanted to get jealous, I wouldn't be able to. I can't even imagine how such a perfect woman could exist in the world. What's even more surprising is how well you've hid her. Logically speaking, such a beautiful woman should be known throughout the world." They had already come out from Bamboo Sea Wonderland when the car stopped at a

red light as Li Xiao Xue said somewhat sadly and wistfully, “Plus, you never belonged to me alone.”

Ling Chen agreed with Li Xiao Xue’s words… however, the truth was that Qi Yue didn’t even belong to this world!

……

Su Hang, Gu family’s residence.

Ling Chen was wearing an extremely wide peaked cap, and without lowering his head, it already covered most of his face. After all, he was a national fugitive, and everyone in the country knew what he looked like. As such, he had to do this. Beside him, Li Xiao Xue affectionately held his arm as they walked into the Gu family’s residence, causing many of the Gu family’s people to stare in shock.

It was the first time they had seen the big miss Li so intimate with a male around her age. Could it be…

Since Li Xiao Xue had come personally, the Gu family didn’t dare to treat her with less respect than was due, nor did they discourteously ask Ling Chen to take of his cap. After being shown to the guest hall, the Gu family sent people to notify Gu Qing Han.

“Big miss, the Li family’s big miss has arrived with a man. The man looks around big miss Li’s age and is wearing a peaked cap, so we can’t see his appearance. Because he was brought by big miss Li we didn’t dare to ask, but he looks quite intimate with big miss Li…”

Gu Qing Han stood up with a ‘whoosh’ as she hurriedly asked, “Where are they?”

No matter what happened, Gu Qing Han never showed any emotions. Upon seeing her so flustered, the people reporting were given a big fright as they replied, “They’re in the guest hall.”

Gu Qing Han didn’t say anything as she turned and rushed out of the door. Because of how rushed she was, she tripped at the

doorstep and almost fell over. The people who came to report stared, incredibly dumbfounded.

This was Ling Chen's second time meeting Gu Qing Han, and seeing her still caused his eyes to light up. He knew that Gu Qing Han was middle-aged, but there weren't any traces of age on her face. Time, something that is generally merciless and cruel, hadn't destroyed her looks, but instead made her look more majestic and dignified.

However, her footsteps when she entered the guest hall made him feel quite surprised and confused. Moreover, when she entered, her gaze didn't fall on Li Xiao Xue, but on him... the first time they had passed each other, her eyes had been still as water, as if she hadn't even seen him. And yet, her eyes were trembling as she looked at him... a trembling due to intense emotions.

"Aunty Gu," Li Xiao Xue stood up and courteously greeted her.

"Hello, Gu family's leader, nice to meet you," Ling Chen also stood up as he spoke neither servilely nor overbearingly.

"He's..." Facing Li Xiao Xue, Gu Qing Han did her best to suppress her emotions as she asked.

Li Xiao Xue silently nodded.

In that moment, Gu Qing Han's expression became indescribably complicated... excitement, delight, sorrow, confusion, pained... these emotions, which shouldn't be able to be experienced at the same time, all chaotically appeared on her face. She then waved her hand as she choked out the words, "Everyone leave and close the doors. Without my orders, no one is to come within 50 metres."

Gu Qing Han's words carried the highest seniority in the Gu family, and upon hearing this, everyone within the hall immediately complied and quickly left. The hall doors were closed as footsteps could be heard walking away.

Gu Qing Han sat down in front of Ling Chen and Li Xiao Xue, instantly regaining her composure. She looked up and down Ling Chen slowly before she spoke softly, “You must be Ling Chen. Take off your hat. You can treat this place as your home, so you don’t need to make yourself uncomfortable.”

Gu Qing Han’s gaze made Ling Chen feel slightly awkward, but her gaze warmed his heart and he simply couldn’t refuse. He took off his hat, showing his face as he looked at Gu Qing Han. “You can call me Ling Chen or Ling Tian. Thank you for your help in yesterday’s battle for the new city, Gu family’s leader.”

Ling Chen got straight to the point. Evidently, he wanted to turn the conversation to what he thought was the reason for today’s meeting. However, Gu Qing Han did not seem to be in a hurry and seemed to ignore what Ling Chen was trying to say. She continued to stare at Ling Chen. “Calling me ‘Gu family’s leader’ is simply too awkward. Just call me Aunty Gu like Xiao Xue.”

“Yes, Aunty Gu,” Ling Chen replied unreservedly.

“Mm.” Gu Qing Han slightly smiled and calmed her breathing as she spoke calmly and elegantly, “Ling Chen, before getting to the main topic today, let’s talk about some things about you that I’m very curious about. Of course, I won’t tell anyone else even a little bit about what we discuss here.”

Before Ling Chen could speak, Li Xiao Xue cut in, “Of course. Aunty Gu can ask whatever she wants.” She then turned to Ling Chen as she blinked. “Did you know that Aunty Gu likes you quite a bit. You’re the first young person she’s taken favourably to - quite an achievement.”

“... Then, what would Aunty Gu like to ask me?” Ling Chen could only ask that. Facing Gu Qing Han, he felt that she was quite different to what the rumours said... the Gu Qing Han he heard about always had an icy expression and would speak with a mighty and severe tone. She was cold-hearted and emotionless, and no one

had even heard about her smiling before. And yet, the Gu Qing Han in front of him, no matter if it was her gaze, tone or expression, was like a gentle and warm breeze. She didn't seem high and mighty at all, and instead seemed like... a gentle mother facing her own son.

Were the rumours wrong? Or was it because she was close with Li Xiao Xue? But that didn't quite seem right.

"Because I was quite curious about you, I've tried to investigate you. Can you tell me who your parents are?" Gu Qing Han leaned forward as she asked with a hint of anticipation. She realised that her question seemed quite sudden, so she added, "I'm just curious what sort of parents could raise such an excellent child."

Ling Chen didn't feel like this question was very strange and calmly replied, "I don't have a father. Although he's still alive, he is dead in my heart and has never existed. As for my mother... she's already dead."

"Dead?" Gu Qing Han's expression flickered.

"She died when I was born," Ling Chen expressionlessly replied, "so I never met her. She only left me a name."

"Tian... Ya?" Gu Qing Han softly said.

"Yes." Ling Chen nodded. For Li Xiao Xue to be able to discover his name while in the Long family, he wasn't surprised that Gu Qing Han knew of it too.

"But you said that you've never met your mother, so how are you sure that she's dead? Perhaps... her death was a lie told to you by others. Perhaps she didn't die, but had to leave you for some reasons out of her control. Maybe... Maybe... have you considered that your mother might still be alive?" Gu Qing Han spoke emotionally. She immediately realised that her reaction had been too exaggerated as she explained, "I just feel like if you've only heard something and haven't confirmed with your own eyes, you

shouldn't fully believe it. This is especially so for things relating to family."

Ling Chen stared in shock for a moment... he had never considered the possibility that his mother was still alive. However, since he was capable of conversing, he had been told that his mother was dead and that she had given him the name 'Tian Ya' before she died. For him, who grew up being told this, how could he, as a child, have thought any differently?

However, immediately after, Ling Chen calmly smiled. "Aunty Gu's right – without seeing it with my own eyes, I won't be able to confirm this, so perhaps the possibility Aunty Gu suggested might be the truth. However, no matter if it's the truth or not, it's not important to me. When I was younger, I admired other children for having mothers. As I slowly grew up, I became used to this, and the concept of a 'mother' disappeared from my mind. She gave me my life, but I have no emotions connected to her. Even if she's still alive, the only connection I have to her is my blood... in other words, we would just be strangers with the same blood.

"Moreover, when I was 9 years old, I should have died. I only have my current life because 13 years ago I determined that I would live on for Dia Wu. As such, the current me has no father or mother."

While saying this, Ling Chen's face was expressionless, looking terrifyingly calm.

On the other hand, tears were flowing out of Gu Qing Han's eyes.

Li Xiao Xue was about to say something, but decided to stay silent and only lightly sighed.

Chapter 613 – A Shocking Turn Of Events

“Aunty Gu, you…?” Seeing Gu Qing Han like this, Ling Chen felt quite perplexed… he had just been casually speaking, and yet the famous and mighty Gu family’s leader had started crying… what was going on?

Li Xiao Xue sighed as she spoke, “When Aunty Gu was younger, she also had a son. It was just that the third day after her son was born, she was separated from him, and she didn’t see him for the next 20 years. Many years ago, she had even heard that her child had died. Because of this, Aunty Gu became cheerless and hasn’t smiled in the past few years. What happened to you most likely reminded Aunty Gu of her past.”

“So it’s like that…” Ling Chen instantly understood. No matter how strong and domineering Gu Qing Han was, as a mother, she would still display the same emotions as other mothers. As such, he tried to comfort her by saying, “Aunty Gu, don’t feel sad. Just like you said, it doesn’t mean it’s the truth just because you were told that. Perhaps your son is still alive and is looking for you.”

“Yes… you’re right.” Gu Qing Han gently wiped away her tears as she smiled warmly but at the same time mournfully, “I believe that he’s still alive and that we’ll be reunited one day… it’s just that when he was born, I left him and didn’t fulfil my duties as a mother. Moreover, he suffered immensely… even if I find him, I don’t know if I’ll have the boldness to face him, much less have the right to be his mother.”

“Absolutely not,” Ling Chen shook his head as he reassured her. “Although I don’t have a mother, I’m certain that mothers are the greatest and warmest symbols in the world. Apart from a few twisted monsters, all mothers love their children… to the point that their love for their children surpasses their own lives. I’m sure that back then Aunty Gu had her reasons for leaving her child. Otherwise, even if there was a faint hope, you would have still held

onto it and not been willing to be separated from your child. I'm sure that if your child is still living and has grown up, he would think the same thing as me. If you feel like you owe your child, these tears are enough to make up for it."

Gu Qing Han stared at Ling Chen dumbly, and the tears that had just stopped once again rushed out, unable to be stopped. Li Xiao Xue deeply looked at Ling Chen silently, but she seemed to relax a bit.

"Is... that what you really think?" Gu Qing Han's body and voice slightly trembled, and she was sobbing so much that she almost couldn't speak, "If... If your mother was still alive... would you... forgive her and want to reunite with her?"

Ling Chen paused in shock, and after thinking for a moment, he slowly shook his head, "I've never thought about this, so I'm unable to reply. In the future, I won't think about it either... my experiences are far too different from normal people's, so I can't answer this question like a normal person. Haha, it seems like there's no need for me to think about it either."

A strange feeling came over Ling Chen, making him change the topic, "Aunty Gu, your time is more precious than anyone else's, and I wouldn't dare to waste too much of it. Let's talk about the main topic for today. I want to know why you would risk everything to help the new city... as well as what you would like me to do for your Skyfall Dynasty."

The atmosphere was broken by Ling Chen's words, and Gu Qing Han could feel a slight sense of impatience from Ling Chen. She quickly calmed her emotions... Gu Qing Han was indeed Gu Qing Han, and she regained her composure in the blink of an eye. Although there were still traces of tears on her face, her gaze was just as cold and awake as it had been before, "Apologies, I've allowed my emotions to get the better of me. Please don't take it to heart. As for the answer to your question, it's very simple: because I saw the potential of the new city."

“Potential?” Ling Chen frowned.

“That’s right, for example, all of the money and effort that Xiao Xue has poured into the new city is one of those factors. From a few days ago to the battle yesterday, if we joined the attackers, there was a slight chance that we could obtain the City Creation Token. However, with all of those wolves, as well as the ferocious tiger that is the Yan Huang Alliance, even if the Skyfall Dynasty gave all it had, it would have been unlikely for us to obtain the City Creation Token. As such, I would rather that the Skyfall Dynasty do the opposite to all those other alliances by not only not attacking the new city, but defending it.” As Gu Qing Han spoke, her gaze and tone became calmer and calmer.

Ling Chen’s eyebrows remained furrowed as he replied, “I still don’t understand. You should have been very clear about the scale of the attacking forces. With your Skyfall Dynasty’s power, how could you stop those attacking forces? If nothing out of the ordinary happened, the Skyfall Dynasty would have been completely obliterated by the attacking forces. Following this, the Skyfall Dynasty could have been completely suppressed by the Yan Huang Alliance, and might have never been able to recover. With all those considerations in mind, making that decision was essentially sending the Skyfall Dynasty on a suicide mission with almost no benefits! I want to know where your confidence came from.”

Gu Qing Han sighed… Confidence? What confidence? When I made that decision, I was already prepared for the entire Skyfall Dynasty to be annihilated. My decision was solely because…

“Of course it came from you.” A calm smile appeared on Gu Qing Han’s face, “I heard all about the great things you did, and even about some of the things other people don’t know about. Those things made me understand why the prideful Xiao Xue, who never put other people in her eyes, would blindly trust you so much. If Xiao Xue dared to bet on you, I would also naturally dare to bet on

you. From how things turned out, it seemed that I bet correctly. Although the Skyfall Dynasty's forces were wiped out, we saved the new city. As for the Yan Huang Alliance and the other alliances, their losses were even more severe, and even if they wanted to take revenge, they do not have the strength to do so. Because of that, not only did we gain you as a powerful ally, we'll also be able to move to the new city."

This was the excuse Gu Qing Han made up on the spot. Although it seemed quite reasonable, if one thought about it, they would find that it was quite forced. Ling Chen quietly listened without saying anything.

"There's another reason, and this was the most important reason." Gu Qing Han's chest rose and fell. Evidently, she was thinking about something that she could not remain calm about. "You completely hate the Long family, and from your actions, it seems like you wish that the Long family would disappear from this world. As for me, I also utterly hate the Long family!"

Ling Chen did not doubt this reason, for when Gu Qing Han spoke, the hatred and iciness within her eyes were bone-piercing. It was to the point that he felt his heart tremble... this sort of hatred wasn't a mere hatred of life and death. This hatred had been engraved on her heart over many decades!

Ling Chen did not indicate whether he accepted these reasons, and instead he asked, "All in all, we owe the Skyfall Dynasty a great favour. Aunty Gu, what would you like in return?"

"We simply wish for the Skyfall Dynasty to move to the new city, that's all," Gu Qing Han replied without hesitating, "Moreover, if the new city has any uses for the Skyfall Dynasty, you can use them as you please. Skyfall, Against The Sky, and Judging Sky will also follow orders from the new city."

Ling Chen's eyebrows jumped... was Gu Qing Han telling him that the Skyfall Dynasty would work for them? This was... This

was giving the Skyfall Dynasty, which the Gu family had invested all of their resources and effort into, over to the new city!

To be able to rank in the top 3 guilds, the Gu family had invested extremely large amounts of time, money, and effort. It was the Gu family's and the esper families of the south's largest virtual asset! And now, with a single sentence, Gu Qing Han was essentially gifting it over to the new city!

Even Ling Chen was unable to stay calm. He emotionally shot to his feet, his eyes trembling; however, he did not say anything. Finally, he only managed to say a single word, "Reason?"

"Because I feel that in the new city, the Skyfall Dynasty will be able to develop even more," Gu Qing Han slowly said. She also knew that this reason was quite tenuous... and even laughable. However, since the new city was about to be opened, what they needed most was 'new blood'. It needed players to support and protect it while it developed, which the Skyfall Dynasty could do.

Ling Chen stared at Gu Qing Han for a long time, and his expression changed more than 10 times as the hall became strangely silent. No one said anything, each person waiting for someone else to speak.

Finally, Ling Chen looked away and looked up, silently looking at the high ceiling. When he lowered his head, his gaze was calm again. He nodded at Gu Qing Han and said, "I'm sure you won't regret the decision you made today... since it's like this, I won't take up any more of Aunty Gu's time. Xiao Xue, let's go."

Without waiting for Gu Qing Han's reply, Ling Chen grabbed Li Xiao Xue's hand and marched to the doors of the hall. His footsteps were strangely hurried, as if he was running away from something.

Ling Chen's sudden actions caught Li Xiao Xue by surprise. She managed to say a farewell to Gu Qing Han before she was dragged out by Ling Chen. Gu Qing Han stood up and silently watched Ling Chen and Li Xiao Xue leave, but she did not move or say anything,

nor did she try to stop them. She only stared as she watched them leave...

After leaving the Gu family's residence, Ling Chen and Li Xiao Xue got into the car and shot off, Li Xiao Xue driving wildly. Driving on the not-so-crowded roads, they drove further and further away from the Gu family's residence.

After driving for about 15 minutes, the 2 of them hadn't said anything yet. Li Xiao Xue silently drove while Ling Chen sat with his eyes closed as if he had fallen asleep. Finally, Li Xiao Xue could hold back and broke the silence, "You..."

"Don't say anything!" Ling Chen cut her off, his voice frantic. "Don't tell me anything; I don't know anything."

Li Xiao Xue did not say anything, but her gaze became complicated.

Aunty Gu, your wisdom and intelligence is unmatched, and you have the entire southside of China under your feet... but when facing him, you were unable to keep your cool. You were too emotional and anxious... your strange expressions, the overly warm and longing looks in your eyes, the strange questions, the uncontrollable tears, the awkward reasoning, and giving him the entire Skyfall Dynasty...

He's not an idiot, and he will be able to connect all these together... and reach a conclusion.

The car slowed down and the sunroof opened, allowing a cool breeze to flow in.

"Where are we going now?" Li Xiao Xue asked, feeling that Ling Chen's breathing had calmed down.

"The Mystic Moon gaming device issuing point," Ling Chen replied with his eyes closed. He hadn't forgotten that Tian Tian had asked him to pick up a gaming device for Sha Sha. He also wanted to know if Sha Sha, who was from the game, could use a

gaming device to return to the virtual world in a different way.

Chapter 614 – Delicious Delicacies

Gaming device issuing point:

“Greetings sir, please give me your DNA sample.” The attendant slightly leaned forwards while smiling professionally. The Mystic Moon world had been opened for nearly 8 months, and there were now very few people who didn’t have a gaming device. However, this issuing point was still there, but now it was mostly for giving players replacement gaming devices when they lost or broke theirs.

Ling Chen gave Sha Sha’s white hair to the attendant. Seeing the colour of the hair, the attendant was slightly surprised, but still placed it into a special machine with practised ease.

“Thank you for waiting, the DNA analysis has been completed. What sort of device would you like… a bracelet or a pendant?”

“Bracelet,” Ling Chen replied.

“What colour would you like?”

“White.” Only white suited Shadissika because she was essentially a pure white fairy.

After the data was entered, the gaming device was quickly completed. The attendant brought over a white game bracelet and handed it to Ling Chen, “This is your gaming device. Please keep it safe, and we hope you enjoy your time in the game. If you have any further inquiries, you can call our customer service hotline at any time.”

Success? It succeeded just like that? Ling Chen hesitantly received the game bracelet and absent-mindedly looked over it… so could Sha Sha really use this gaming device? After all, she was someone who he had brought out from the game.

By the time Li Xiao Xue brought Ling Chen back to Bamboo Sea Wonderland, it was already dusk. After driving out from Bamboo

Sea Wonderland, she parked the car and called Gu Qing Han.

“Aunty Gu, although I can understand your emotions, you acted too rashly… he seems to have sensed something. However, as you saw, he doesn’t want to turn his suspicions into reality. Right now it’s not yet time for you to be reunited. However, that’s good. Perhaps if he’s given enough time, he’ll be able to gradually accept it and will seek out this matter himself.

“Also, Aunty Gu, there’s another matter that has been weighing on my heart that I would like an answer to: back then, why did you leave Beijing? And as for him, he was that person’s son, so why was he treated in such a way? Despite thinking about it for a long time, I’m still unable to think of a reason.”

Gu Qing Han fell silent for a while before she finally spoke, “Xiao Xue, come to my place.”

The car started and quickly sped towards the Gu family’s residence.

……

Ling Chen put on the game bracelet for Shadissika and taught her how to use it. Following this, Shadissika leaned back on her chaise lounge, closed her eyes, and entered the virtual game.

Sha Sha instantly fell silent, and after a long while, she opened her eyes with a look of confusion on her face.

“Sha Sha, did it work? Did you return to the virtual world?” Ling Chen asked.

“It’s so strange,” Shadissika got up and looked at Ling Chen in confusion. “The place where Ling Chen and I had been before we left was a pretty forest, but I was in a dark place where a voice was telling me… mm, that’s right, to create a character. It asked me a lot of questions, and I suddenly came to a place called ‘Novice Village’.”

Ling Chen was speechless… Sha Sha, who he had brought out

from the game, had used a gaming device to re-enter the game and was now a player. It was quite… logical.

“Novice Village? Why would it be Novice Village?” Tian Tian asked in surprise. “Didn’t you meet big brother in the game? Big brother left Novice Village a long time ago. How are you still in Novice Village? Oh right, Sha Sha, what level are you now? And what’s your profession?”

“LVo, profession… I seem to have chosen Summoner because I heard Summoners can summon many things, which sounds very fun,” Sha Sha replied as she smiled.

“Eh? LVo?” Tian Tian blinked in surprise. “How can you be LVo? And you created a new character… why would it be like this? Ah, right!” An idea came to Tian Tian’s mind, “Could it be that you lost your gaming device, and after getting a new one, you had to start from the beginning again?”

“It’s… something like that.” Shadissika continued to smile sweetly. No one knew if she understood Tian Tian’s question.

Ling Chen let out a small breath… he was worried about how to explain this, but Tian Tian had explained it herself. Mm, no less than expected from my Tian Tian, so smart!

“It’s a pity that you have to start from LVo and that all of your previous effort went to waste,” Tian Tian said sympathetically. As she spoke, she protectively put her hand over her game bracelet, seeming to fear that she would lose it or break it.

“It’s okay,” Shadissika comforted Tian Tian. “Novice Village is very pretty, and I’ll have a lot of fun there.”

“Haha! I was worried that you would be sad, but it turns out Sha Sha is so optimistic! So amazing! Big brother and I will wait for Sha Sha to leave the Novice Village so we can go adventuring together. That’s right, what does Sha Sha want to eat tonight?” Tian Tian rubbed her hands together. It was nearly dinnertime, and as she

became better and better at cooking, she started to like it more and more. She enjoyed the feeling that came from looking after Ling Chen.

“I’ll make dinner tonight.” Shadissika raised her hands.

“Sha Sha, you know how to cook?” Ling Chen and Tian Tian were both quite surprised.

“Of course!” Shadissika jumped down from the chaise lounge chair and then ran to the kitchen. “Although I don’t know how good it’ll be, I’ll do my best. This is the first dinner I’ve made for Ling Chen and Tian Tian, and I’m going to do my best, so please don’t come in.”

Shadissika closed the door and locked it. Evidently, little Sha Sha was determined to make dinner by herself. After a while, the sounds of cooking could be heard. Ling Chen and Tian Tian turned to look at each other.

“Will she be okay? Sha Sha’s so little, and she doesn’t look like she can cook,” Tian Tian said worriedly.

“You only look a bit older than Sha Sha, but don’t you know how to cook? Plus, your cooking is getting better and better,” Ling Chen said as he looked at Tian Tian. He could help but marvel at Tian Tian’s intelligence – perhaps she was a genius at cooking. In just a short period of time, she, a young girl, had taken her cooking to the point that the look, aroma, and taste were all perfect. Even some people who had studied cooking for decades couldn’t cook as well as her.

“That’s because big sister taught me well and because I’m really smart, so it’s only natural that my cooking would become better and better.” Tian Tian proudly raised her very slightly-developed chest.

Half an hour later, the kitchen door was opened as a fragrant aroma filled the living room.

Shadissika made 6 dishes in total... with her small body... in just half an hour she made 6 dishes! What's more, each of the dishes had big servings.

When the 6 dishes were carefully brought out by Shadissika and placed on the table, Ling Chen and Tian Tian, who had just walked out of the bedroom, were completely dumbfounded.

This was because the aroma from these dishes was simply too wonderful. When Ling Chen and Tian Tian smelled it, their hunger level, which was quite low, suddenly skyrocketed as their bodies walked uncontrollably towards the table filled with delicious-smelling food.

"It smells so good! These dishes smell so good... ahhh!!! I want to eat! I want to eat!"

Tian Tian rushed over to the table and stared at the 6 dishes, saliva flowing out from her mouth. Ling Chen came over not in a much better state than Tian Tian, continuously gulping down his saliva as he stood in front of the food... the smell coming from the food was ridiculously good, and all of the cells in his body were screaming for it. Even if his willpower was 10 times as strong, he wouldn't have been able to control this natural reaction.

"Dinner's ready, hurry and give it a taste!" Shadissika was wearing the apron that Tian Tian normally used, and she smiled as she portioned out food for Ling Chen and Tian Tian.

Tian Tian and Ling Chen, who could barely control themselves already, couldn't even reply before they quickly picked up their chopsticks and started to eat the food. Closest to Ling Chen was stone pot fish. Tian Tian could make this dish as well, and she could do it quite well. It was one of the dishes Shui Ruo had spent the most time teaching her. He picked up a piece of fish meat and placed it in his mouth... his body instantly trembled and the hand holding the chopsticks froze, forgetting to bring it out from his mouth. In that instant, he felt all of the pores on his body open up

as all of his cells jumped in joy…

The fish meat was extremely tender to the point that it was simply unbelievable. The instant the meat touched Ling Chen's tongue, it almost melted. The rich flavour of fish also spread throughout his mouth, spreading to every nook and cranny.

He could tell that this was carp.

However… how could such delicious carp exist in this world!!

It was difficult to imagine that ordinary carp could release such a taste. A taste so good that the person eating could feel intoxicated.

"It's too delicious… heavens! It's simply too delicious! There were actually such delicious mushrooms in the world!"

Tian Tian was eating a meat and mushroom stew. It was an ordinary dish made from ordinary ingredients, but Tian Tian couldn't help but cry out. Her mouth was madly chewing as her crystal-like eyes almost radiated with light, her little face glowing red… she started to rapidly devour the food, her chopsticks stuffing her mouth with food as she continuously cried out and cheered.

Ling Chen tried each of the 6 dishes. Every time he tried one, his tastebuds became more excited. The stone pot fish was only the beginning, and each of the dishes was delicious to an incomprehensible level. He had tried countless delicacies in his lifetime, but none of them could compare to the dishes he was currently eating. In the morning, he had tried the Dwarves' dessert… the Dwarves were extremely talented in cooking. As long as they had the ingredients, whatever they made would always be delicious delicacies. However, in front of the dishes in front of him, all of the Dwarves' food seemed extremely lacklustre.

Eating these dishes, Ling Chen felt that this was not reality. This sort of food was only fit for gods and shouldn't appear in the world.

Shadissika filled a bowl with rice and placed it in front of Ling Chen. It was indeed a bowl of rice, an incredibly ordinary staple food, but the rice he saw was completely different to the rice he normally ate. These grains of rice were incredibly smooth, and they looked more like pearls in the bowl. He hesitantly ate a spoonful, and his tastebuds and heart were greatly shaken...

Heavens!! Even the rice was so delicious that one could accidentally swallow their tongue!!

Was this really the rice from the kitchen??

Chapter 615 – Emergency Mission

“Sha Sha, did you… make all of this?” Ling Chen asked with shock. All Ling Chen could do was raise his head and stare at Shaddissika dumbly. Only Sha Sha had been in the kitchen – apart from her, who could have made this? However, Ling Chen was unable to believe that this divine meal was made by such a little girl!

“Of course I made it. Is it good?” Shadissika tilted her head as she asked in expectation.

“It’s delicious! Too delicious! Too delicious… omnomnom…” Tian Tian mumbled as she continued to ravenously devour the food.

“It’s incredibly… good!” Ling Chen spoke with great difficulty because he simply couldn’t think of how to describe it.

“Really?” Shadissika happily smiled, “Great, then Ling Chen and Tian Tian need to eat a lot.”

Ling Chen simply couldn’t resist. Even if he could control himself, the gluttony within him would have caused an uprising. He didn’t waste any words and started to devour the food with Tian Tian. After taking a few big bites, he heard the sound of a door opening and then Qi Yue’s soft and silky voice, “It smells so good to the point that I can’t control myself.”

Shadissika hurriedly called out, “Big sister Qi Yue, hurry and come eat. It’s the dinner I made.”

The delicious aroma that assailed her nose greatly impacted Qi Yue, making it so that she couldn’t resist leaving her room. When she tasted her first dish, her reaction was exactly like Ling Chen’s. Her body froze, and she forgot to take the chopsticks out from her mouth.

“This was… made by Sha Sha?” Shock was written all over Qi

Yue's face as she stared at Shadissika.

"Mhmm! Is it good?"

Qi Yue stared at Shadissika for a while before slowly replying, "It's the most exquisite food I've ever tasted."

Knock knock...

Knocking sounds came from the living room door as Chao Ying and Chao Yi's voices sounded out, "Master, Tian Tian, can we come in?"

Chao Ying and Chao Xi were dressed in seductive clothing as usual. After arriving in the living room, they immediately saw the food on the table. Even with their extremely strong willpower, they gulped down their saliva 7 or 8 times while they stood in the room.

"Big sisters Ying and Xi, this is the food I made. Do you want to have some as well?" Shadissika asked as she waved at them.

"This was made by Sha Sha?" Chao Ying and Chao Xi also stared in shock before asking in a hopeful tone, "Can we really eat together with you?"

Before they received a reply, they had already been drawn over to the table by the delicious-smelling food. They tightly gripped their chopsticks as they brought the food to their mouths, instantly resulting in them crying out from bliss and shock.

With 5 of them, 6 dishes should have been quite a lot... putting aside the massive eater Tian Tian was, Ling Chen's appetite was medium, while Qi Yue was still not quite used to this world's food and only ate 3 strawberries for lunch. As for Chao Ying and Chao Xi, in order to maintain their figure, they did not eat too much either. And yet, the 6 dishes and the pot of rice were finished within 3 minutes... and everyone was not yet satisfied, looking at Shadissika in expectation.

"Oh... did I make too little and everyone's not full yet?"

Shadissika, who had cooked all of this but had not eaten any of it, weakly said as she looked at their ravenous stares.

Everyone nodded.

“Then… Then… I’ll go make some more.”

Everyone nodded once again twice as vigorously as before.

Shadissika, who had just come out from the kitchen not too long, once again went back inside. She felt quite happy that everyone enjoyed eating her food so much. This time, she did not lock the door. Tian Tian and Ling Chen also went in and watched as she cooked the food… because of how short she was, a lot of the time she had to stand on a stool. The 6 stoves were operated simultaneously as another 6 dishes were cooked together, and yet Shadissika did not seem flustered at all. Her movements were like drifting clouds and flowing water. They seemed as practised as that of a cooking maestro with half a century of experience. Ling Chen and Tian Tian were completely flabbergasted as they watched.

Holy crap… even if she started to cook from when she was born, it should be impossible to reach such a level of proficiency!

All of the ingredients that she used were from the kitchen, the same as that which Tian Tian normally used. She didn’t use any tricks at all. Apart from being quite skilful, her methods didn’t look much different from what Tian Tian normally did, but when the dishes were completed, the aroma was enough to make their saliva overflow.

This time Shadissika cooked 8 dishes and another pot of rice… all of this was once again completely devoured by the 5 people, leaving not even a bit of sauce. Because they had been so frantic and absorbed in their eating, they forgot to leave Shadissika any. Poor little Sha Sha could only munch on a big apple in front of the television.

“Sha Sha, where did you learn to cook?” Ling Chen couldn’t help but ask as he sat next to Sha Sha. He knew where she had come from, and he was sure that she definitely wasn’t a chef or some world-class chef’s daughter. She was a mysterious figure from the game… someone who came from ancient times and had lost most of her memories!

“I don’t know either.” Just as Ling Chen had expected, Shadissika shook her head and said hazily, “When I thought about dinner, I suddenly felt that I could make it, so I tried it out… and seemed to succeed.”

Ling Chen marvelled inwardly… ‘seemed to succeed’?! I almost swallowed my tongue!

“Sha Sha, you’re simply a genius! You’re so amazing! You’re clearly very young, and yet your cooking skills are better than even big sister’s!” Tian Tian, who had eaten till she was satisfied, looked at Sha Sha with an expression of adoration. Her eyes flashed as she grabbed Sha Sha’s hands and earnestly said, “I’ve decided that I’m going to learn to cook from Sha Sha in the future, so that I can cook just as well as Sha Sha… ah! Sha Sha, you’ll definitely continue to stay here, right? If you leave, we won’t be able to eat all that yummy food again!”

“Of course I’ll stay here,” Shadissika nodded without any hesitation. “As for teaching Tian Tian cooking… although I don’t know how to teach, I’ll do my best.”

“Awesome! It’s a promise then! Then… can we start now?”

“Mm, okay!”

The 2 girls ran and jumped into the kitchen. Seeing that there was no one around, Ling Chen licked his lips… Sha Sha’s dinner was so delicious that he felt as if he was going to die. Compared to the dinner he just had, all of the delicacies he ate in the past were simply tasteless.

The construction of the new city had reached its final stages and would be completed by noon the next day. What he needed to do after the official completion of the construction was to ask the Azure Dragon's Mayor to set up a permanent teleportation channel to the new city. That was all he was required to do.

There was a saying that 'those who are well-fed and well-clothed will have their lust aroused'. After eating until he was incredibly full, Ling Chen stood up and swaggered out as he muttered, "Ying, Xi, prepare to do an emergency mission!"

The location of the emergency mission was in the nearby bamboo forest, and was very, very intense. It was much more intense than the previous times, the reason for which was Qi Yue's arrival.

Qi Yue, that demoness, had acted flirtatiously in front of him time and time again. Although Ling Chen had successfully resisted her each time, the flames of desire built up within him. He did his best to resist Qi Yue, but when he couldn't hold back anymore, he released his pent-up lust on Chao Ying and Chao Xi. Within the empty bamboo forest and under the cover of night, the 3 of them were wildly entangled. Chao Ying hugged Ling Chen from behind, rubbing her large breasts against his back. Ling Chen groped Chao Xi's supple breasts, vigorously pounding into her as Qi Yue's figure repeatedly appeared in his mind. Chao Xi's snow-white legs were tightly wrapped around his waist as she uncontrollably moaned. Her snake-like waist twisted as her bottom shook rapidly. The loud colliding sounds, as well as tantalising moans, filled the surrounding bamboo forest with a sense of lust.

After Chao Xi was Chao Ying, then Chao Xi again. The 3 of them 'battled' for many rounds, moving around chaotically. By now, they had moved 10 or so metres from where they had begun. At first, Chao Ying and Chao Xi were like a swarm of mad bees, but at the end, they could only beg for mercy. After Ling Chen released all of his lust on them, the 2 women pretended to faint multiple times.

The ‘emergency mission’ was finally over... the sounds stopped as Ling Chen looked around. He put on his clothes as he leaned against a bamboo tree, appreciating the beautiful scene of the 2 women under the moonlight. Chao Ying and Chao Xi were both naked as they hugged each other, a red glow over their bodies, and a blissful and hazy expression in their eyes. They looked incredibly seductive, and their eyes, which were tantalising to begin with, seemed even more erotic as they were filled with lust. There was not a bit of energy left in their bodies, and they had more or less lost consciousness. Their eyes were unfocused as they lay there.

After Sha Sha and Qi Yue had moved from the virtual world into the real world, Ling Chen felt like his life in the real world had changed. However, regardless, his life was still incredibly blissful.

Xiao Qi was safe and well, and Dia Wu had returned. Meng Xin’s new city was nearly completed, and the only thing missing was Shui Ruo. If Shui Ruo could return, everything would be perfect, and there would be nothing more he desired.

He was sure that day would come... and that it would be soon in the future.

Ling Chen turned and gently kissed Chao Ying and Chao Xi on their cheeks as he lustfully smiled, “Well done you two beauties, this mission was executed perfectly. In the future, you can moan a bit louder and not hold it in; they won’t be able to hear you.”

After rubbing their breasts simultaneously, Ling Chen got up and happily walked away.

Chapter 616 – The Ling Tian City Is Opened

Just as Ling Chen had estimated, 3 days after the attack on the new city, the construction of the city was finally completed. The new city was called [Ling Tian City], and because Ling Chen adamantly refused the title of Lord of the city, the title of Lady of the city fell on Yun Meng Xin. This was because Ling Chen knew that he wouldn't be able to stay in the Ling Tian City for extended periods of time and because he didn't have the time nor the skills to manage the city. As such, handing it to Yun Meng Xin was the best decision. After all, this city was something Ling Chen had originally gifted to Yun Meng Xin. However, under the insistence of the Dwarves, Fairies, and the players, he was given the title of 'Vice-Lord'.

That day, the entirety of Ling Tian City became a sea of cheering.

Although it had been completed, that did not mean it would be immediately opened. After a day of joyous celebrations, the anxious preparations to open the city began. With the Dwarves' immense talent, as well as abundant resources and the powerful Fairies working with them, the complicated preparations were completed with great efficiency. Ling Chen was able to successfully negotiate with the Azure Dragon's Mayor to connect the Azure Dragon City and Ling Tian City with a permanent teleportation channel. One side was connected to the Ling Tian City's Central Plaza, and the other was near the Azure Dragon City's revival point. The Azure Dragon's Mayor could find no reason to refuse Ling Chen's request... Ling Chen had helped him greatly, and he was the War God's successor. He simply couldn't refuse.

During this period of time, the Disillusion Alliance, Battle Alliance, Snow Moon Loulan, and Skyfall Dynasty left their headquarters and prepared to move to the new city. This process wasn't very complicated, and was completed within a few days. As they did this, they were not harassed or attacked by the Yan Huang

Alliance or any other guilds. Evidently, they had suffered grievous losses during that battle and wouldn't be able to do anything for quite a while.

"Moving from a main city to the player city Ling Tian City, as well as following all of the orders from the Ling Tian City… just what is big sister thinking? I'm simply unable to comprehend her actions. Ai." Skyfall watched the Skyfall Dynasty's players hurrying around as he sadly thought inwardly. No matter how well the Ling Tian City was developing, in the end, it was simply a player's city. It would never be able to compete with a main city. The Skyfall Dynasty moving to the new city would be a great help to the new city… but Skyfall could not see how the Skyfall Dynasty would benefit.

Simply moving there was something that he could more or less accept. However, why did they need to unconditionally follow all orders from Ling Tian City? If it wasn't Gu Qing Han, who had given this order, he would have started cursing on the spot and beaten up the person who said that to the point that their head exploded.

The 3 brothers had spent an incredible amount of mental and physical effort and money, and had suffered much to developed the Skyfall Dynasty… they had spent countless days and nights working hard to look after the Skyfall Dynasty. They had made countless alliances, gone to countless wars, and had made countless plans and plots… and now, their alliance had to completely follow the orders of someone else… this was essentially gifting the Skyfall Dynasty to the new city.

"Since it's a command from big sister, we'll have to follow it," Against The Sky said sorrowfully.

"These years, many of big sister's orders have seemed crazy and incomprehensible. However, from all the results we've seen, when has big sister ever made a bad decision? As such, we don't need to think too much about it – the truth will come to light someday.

Come to speak of it, I'm also looking forward to the Ling Tian City's development. Because of that battle, Ling Tian City's fame from the very beginning will be much greater than any other city's in virtual gaming history." Judging Sky seemed at ease and looked calm and unhurried, his eyes filled with expectation.

"That's true." Skyfall let out a long sigh as his gaze became serious. "Li Xiao Xue just sent a message saying that Ling Tian City will be opened in 10 days at the latest. The day before the opening will be a grand ceremony, so prepare for that."

For Li Xiao Xue, who was the major stakeholder in the Ling Tian City, chief of finances, and Vice-Lady of the city, it was only natural for her Snow Moon Loulan to move to the new city. It was no problem either for the Disillusion Alliance because the Lady of the city was the little sister of their Alliance Master. As for the Battle Alliance, they were willing to move as well. If Xiao Qi requested it, it was possible that Xiao Qiu Feng would wrap up the entire Battle Alliance and hand it over to Ling Tian City.

Just like that, before the new city had even opened, it had more than 30,000 NPCs and over 4 million players! Moreover, Ling Tian City no longer had to worry about being attacked. This was because the Dwarves and Fairies were now officially residents of Ling Tian City. If the city was attacked, they could retaliate against the attackers. The Dwarves' battle power was quite weak, but the Fairies... what a joke! Let alone the entire clan, a single Mysterious God grade greenwood was able to kill all attackers so that they wouldn't even be able to touch the city.

2 days later, a large crowd of people from White Tiger City arrived at Ling Tian City, requesting to see the 'White Tiger's Representative'. When Ling Chen appeared with confusion written all over his face, the White Tiger's Mayor almost knelt down... to him, kneeling to the White Tiger's Representative was not something shameful, but rather something completely normal. After the White Tiger had perished, White Tiger City had

descended into chaos. There were rumours flying around that White Tiger City's City Lifeline was about to be destroyed, and that the end of White Tiger City was nigh, causing the residents to become extremely worried and fearful. Before the White Tiger had perished, it had left him a message, telling him the truth about its death. It had emphasised that Ling Tian had saved it, and had received its inheritance, becoming the White Tiger's Representative. Only the White Tiger's Representative could calm this situation.

As such, Ling Chen went with the White Tiger's Mayor and entered White Tiger City, a place that normally only LV70 and above players could enter...

7 days later...

"Ding... China Region Announcement! Because more than 40% of players in the China Region have completed their second profession upgrade, the Forgotten Continent's Royal City, the Forgotten City, has been unlocked. All players can now freely enter and exit the Forgotten City. As the Royal City of the Forgotten Continent, the Forgotten City holds the most power and authority in the Forgotten Continent, and it will be a new starting point for players."

A loud system announcement rang out, telling everyone that the Royal City had been unlocked. The early stages of the game had now progressed into mid-game, indicating that the main city for players would no longer be the Azure Dragon City but the Forgotten City.

Countless players, who had been unable to enter the Forgotten City because of their level, loudly cheered. Some businesspeople, who had long since been waiting, rushed into the Forgotten City to obtain the best resources and positions to gain an advantage over the others.

Just as players were about to rush into the Forgotten City,

another loud system announcement rang out.

“Ding... China Region Announcement! China Region’s only player city, ‘Ling Tian City’, has officially been opened today. All players can reach Ling Tian City through the teleportation channel at the Central Plaza of Azure Dragon City. Ling Tian City welcomes all players and friends to come. Although Ling Tian City is relatively new, its management and rules system is complete, so please follow the rules when entering Ling Tian City or receive punishment. Punishments include being temporarily banned or permanently banned from the city.”

This system announcement once again sent the players into a frenzy. This city, which had miraculously survived under the attack from the onslaught of more than 10 million players, the first city that wasn’t owned by the Yan Huang Alliance, was opened today, and the name of this city clearly pointed out its owner – Ling Tian!

What surprised people was that they had chosen to release Ling Tian City right when the Royal City was unlocked. The opening of the Royal City was something that countless players had looked forwards to, and was symbolic of their entire region progressing. This enlarged the scope of activities for the China Region, allowing players to obtain better equipment and making China stronger as a whole. As such, when the Royal City was opened, it was always given great attention and masses of people would rush to it.

Ling Tian City instantly became the centre of attention. However, no matter how big of a miracle Ling Tian City had created, it was just a player’s city. It could be said that it was simply a private city and had nothing to do with outsiders. Therefore, it could not be compared to the system’s Royal City. At most, it could raise the curiosity of some players and give a fresh feeling... but that was all. And yet, they had arrogantly decided to open the city on the same day that the Royal City was unlocked... Even if you beat back 10 million troops – or even 100 million troops

– what makes you think you could stand up against the Royal City? Now that the Royal City has opened, who would bother going to your player's city?

What's more, apart from telling players the method to reach the new city, it did not say anything to attract players or even introduce the new city. In previous games, when the Yan Huang Alliance completed a city, they would use extremely enticing words and descriptions to promote their city. Even something that was extremely insignificant would be praised to no end. Even if Ling Tian City didn't promote itself, that would have been fine. And yet, it emphasised its strict rules, which included banning! Fudge! The new city was dependant on players and should have been begging players to come, not the other way around.

Without a doubt, most players naturally disregarded the second system announcement and bought teleport scrolls to the Royal City from those who had already been and then swarmed towards the Royal City. As for the new city… did it have the masses of new quests that the Royal City had? Could they do their second profession upgrade at Ling Tian City? Did Ling Tian City have high level equipment, crystals, and potions? Going to Ling Tian City was akin to going on a sightseeing trip; they could do that anytime. As such, going to the Royal City was much more important.

Although, comparatively, it was a much smaller figure, there were still some people who went to the Azure Dragon City's Central Plaza, preparing to have a look at the new city. These people had long since reached LV50, and they had all been to the Royal City before. When they reached the teleportation channel, unexpectedly, nothing happened. After waiting for a while, they started to curse loudly.

This was because while standing at the teleportation channel, they received a notification… if they wanted to go through the teleportation channel, they would have to first pay 50 gold coins.

……

“Xiao Xue, are you sure this is the right thing to do? Over the course of history, all player’s cities have done all they could to make things as easy as possible for players to come. We have the advantage of this teleportation channel, but we’re imposing such a high ‘teleportation fee’. Are you sure this will be alright?” Yun Meng Xin asked worriedly.

“At the beginning, there’ll be some slight problems.” Li Xiao Xue smiled as she played with her nails, a light of brilliance in her eyes, “But within half an hour, even if we raise the teleportation fee by 10 times, there’ll be people crying and screaming to enter.”

Chapter 617 – The Crowded Ling Tian City (1)

“They’re asking us to pay 50 gold coins to go through the teleportation channel? Fudge! Is this a joke?!”

“Is Ling Tian City that desperate for money?!”

“Goddamit! It’s their first time building a city and they’re all mad! They should be begging for players to go right now, and yet they’re asking for money! Fudge! This elder was going to visit the new city to give you some face, but 50 gold coins? Pshaw! Even if you beg me, I won’t go anymore!”

“The teleport scrolls for each of the main cities and the Royal City only cost 5 silver coins, and yet they’re asking for 50 gold coins? It’s 100 times more expensive! Which idiot thought of this idea? This is simply chasing away all of the players who were going to give them some face and visit. Fudge, I’m not going anymore!”

“You want us to pay to support you? Go screw yourself!”

“With this teleportation fee, if the new city can really develop, I’ll run around the Forgotten City naked 3 times!”

The Azure Dragon City’s Central Plaza was filled with cursing. After seeing the condition to go through the teleportation channel, the entire China Region exploded with discussions as threads flooded the forums. The reason was very simple… We’re going to the new city to support you and give you face! And yet you’re charging a fee! A ridiculously expensive fee! How can you be so shameless?! Only idiots would go to Ling Tian City!

All of the major media outlets immediately reported this matter. Countless experts, professors, and teachers all concluded… that Ling Tian City was desperate to recover their investments, resulting in them thinking of this ridiculously stupid method. They all criticised Ling Tian City and called on Ling Tian City to immediately cancel the ‘teleportation fee’, saying that it was

bringing ruin upon itself.

In response, Ling Tian City did not change anything at all, preparing for the first day of the new city's opening.

There were more than 1 billion players in China, and although they were all infuriated by the high price of the teleportation fee, there were some who could not hold back their curiosity. Even if it was just to satisfy their curiosity, they decided to pay the teleportation fee. Finally, some fairly rich players unhappily paid the 50 gold coins.

A white light flashed as the first wave of players arrived at Ling Tian City's Central Plaza. After looking around, they all stood there, transfixed, unable to believe their eyes.

This was a player's city? This was really a player's city?!

How could this be a player's city?!?!?

The size of the Central Plaza couldn't compare with that of the Forgotten City's, but it was no smaller than the Azure Dragon City's. The Central Plaza's revival stone hovered in the air, giving off a mysterious light... that's right! It was a revival stone! A player's city had a revival stone, something only main cities normally had! This meant that if players set their revival point here, they could revive at Ling Tian City's Central Plaza!

To the Dwarves, as long as they had the materials, making a revival stone was as simple as eating.

The ground at the Central Plaza looked as if it was created from precious jade, and the light reflected off it was brilliant. However, it was not slippery at all. Next to the revival stone were giant magic screens. The nearest screen detailed the layout of Ling Tian City... the Business District, the Player Trade District, the Administrative District, the Entertainment District, the Public Leisure District, the Battle District, the NPC District, the Residential district, the Alliance District... there was even a Class Change Hall. The layout

was extremely clear, and had almost everything.

No matters where the players looked, there were looks of shock on their faces. There were countless structures around them, and the style of these structures were quite similar. However, they had never seen such buildings before. From these buildings and structures, the players truly understood what ‘grandeur’ was. The players were not allowed into the Administrative District in the north, but the mighty and awe-inspiring buildings gave off an imposing air, striking a sense of respect into the players.

As for the structures in the east, they were beautiful and elegant, and they were delightful to look at. In the south, the buildings in the ‘Business District’ gave off an air of temptation. From the map displayed on the screen, there was essentially every type of shop: Equipment Shop, Item Shop, Potion Shop, Tailor Shop, and Smithy. Apart from a Pawn Shop, it had everything that a main city had.

A look of confusion appeared on the faces of the players who had arrived… player’s cities normally couldn’t have Player Trade Districts, much less Business Districts which belonged to main cities. Could it be that, just like main cities, they could sell equipment, items, and potions? Surely that was impossible? Alright… if they bought them in large quantities from main cities and then sold them here, it was possible… but what was the point of that?

The crowd of players, who had come here out of curiosity, went to the nearest district, the Business District, and walked into the Equipment Shop.

“Welcome, distinguished guests.” A middle-aged Dwarf smiled politely as he stood up from his chair. “My name is Kaidi and I am the manager of this Equipment Shop. You can buy LV40 to LV60 Gold grade equipment here. No matter if it’s weapons or protective equipment, they’re only 600 gold. Earrings, necklaces, and rings are a bit more expensive at 1400 gold. What would you like?”

Before Kaidi could even finish speaking, the players who had entered to just take a look were dumbfounded. After staring in shock, they started to stutter, “W-W-W-W-What did you say? Gold grade equipment… 600 gold?? What sort of joke is this? Do you think we’re idiots?”

Kaidi rolled his eyes and didn’t bother to say anything as he directly showed them the trade window:

[Sword of Glory]: Type: Double-Handed Sword, Grade: Gold, Equipment Requirements: Warrior professions above LV50… Price: 600 gold.

[Lacasiro’s Protection]: Type: Upper Light Armour, Grade: Gold, Equipment Requirements: Archer professions above LV50… Price: 600 gold.

[Golden Storm]: Type: Boots, Grade: Gold, Equipment Requirements: Any profession above LV50… Price: 600 gold.

[Earrings of the Sage]: Type: Earrings, Grade: Gold, Equipment Requirements: Magic professions… Price: 1400 gold.

The list of equipment was densely packed to the point that their eyes blurred. From LV40 to LV60, except for Masks and Lunar Chains, there was equipment for every level and profession. What’s more, all of the equipment… was Gold grade!!

Let alone White, there were no Iron, Copper, or Silver grade equipment – they were all Gold grade! All of them!!

Apart from the jewellery equipment, all of the Gold grade equipment were only 600 gold!!

600 gold!!!

No one could forget that during the first auction, a mere LV15 Gold grade Earrings was sold for 8 million gold while a Gold grade Lunar Chain was sold for 50 million gold! Gold grade equipment was no longer as rare as it had been during the early stages of the game, but it was still a rare luxury. If a player had a single Gold

grade equipment, even if it was just Gold grade gloves, they would still be incredibly proud. Wherever they went, they would always be followed with stares of jealousy and admiration. The preciousness of Gold grade equipment was no less than that of a sports car in the real world.

And now, right in front of them... were LV40 to LV60 Gold grade equipment. No matter if it was weapons or defensive items, they were all 600 gold! 600 gold!!!

It was like seeing the sportscar of your dreams right in front of you and being told that it cost only $600...

After a deathly silence, all of the players who had entered the Equipment Shop madly rushed up...

“I want that Sword of Glory and those Golden Gauntlets... Helmet of Pride... Cape of Purple Runes... Ring... Earrings... all of them, I want all of them...”

“I want the entire LV52 set for Berserkers... including all of the jewellery equipment. The whole set!!!”

“Don’t push! I came first! I was here first! Whoever pushes me, I’ll kill their entire family!”

“Ol’ 7!! Ling Tian City’s Equipment Shop is selling Gold grade equipment... from LV40 to LV60, they have everything!! And it’s unlimited! All of them are 600 gold! Screw you! You’re the crazy one; your whole family’s crazy!”

“Alliance master! Ling Tian City’s Equipment Shop is selling Gold grade equipment... all levels, all professions, and all types. All of them are just 600 gold! I’m absolutely sure! Hurry and tell the rest of our alliance to come... Alliance master, please believe me! If I’m lying, you can kill my entire family!!”

There were very few players in the first wave that came to the Ling Tian City – only 200 or 300 people. However, when the news was spread from these 200-300 people that Ling Tian City was

selling Gold grade equipment for 600 gold, it sent waves across all of China.

This news was simply too shocking and unbelievable!!

Initially, the players who heard this only had a single response: “You’re mad!”

When this news was confirmed by more and more players, all of the players who heard this news went crazy... they completely disregarded the Royal City and immediately returned to Azure Dragon City, rushing towards the teleportation channel that was completely inundated with people... in the face of 600 gold Gold grade equipment, the teleportation fee of 50 gold was nothing.

Chapter 618 – The Crowded Ling Tian City (2)

These potions were extremely powerful and extremely cheap. Upon seeing them, the players felt like they were being blinded.

The importance of powerful recovery potions was something every player knew about. They gave players the right to challenge higher levelled monsters and to easily kill powerful Bosses. They could greatly increase a player's survivability, and allowed players to overcome differences in strength in PVP battles. The potions in front of them were so powerful that they had never even heard of a potion with such effects before. They should have been potions that only Bosses dropped in extremely small quantities. They should have been worth an astronomical fortune. However, these heaven-defying potions in front of them had an unbelievable price! Moreover, they could buy as many as they wanted!

"Give me 1000 drops of each!!"

"With these potions, it'll be difficult to die even if we wanted to! I'll buy 2000 drops of each! Fudge! I don't have enough gold... I'll immediately go and exchange some; please don't sell them all before I return!!"

"... Hurry and come to Ling Tian City's Potion Shop! The potions they're selling are incredibly heaven-defying! And the prices they're selling them for are essentially giving them to you for free! Remember to bring enough gold; if they sell out... you'll have to cry yourselves to death!!"

"Hall master, hurry and notify the alliance and tell all our brothers and sisters to come to Ling Tian City's Potion Shop!!!"

The Equipment Shop and Potion Shop were momentarily flooded with people when a countless number of players charged into the shops like mad bulls. There were various shops in the Ling Tian

City's Business District, and the Equipment Shop and Potion Shop were merely the beginning. When the items being sold in each shop were broadcasted to the rest of the world, the Chinese players all went utterly mad, while players from other countries became completely flabbergasted.

"Incredibly important information! Ling Tian City's Crystal Shop's lowest quality Crystals are Advanced!! And they even have various Super Crystals! Advanced Crystals are only 1200 gold... goddamnnit! They're even cheaper than the Forgotten City's Intermediate Crystals! And the Super Crystals are only 2000 gold!!"

"This information is simply unbelievable! Ling Tian City's Smithy can add at least one bonus stat to any equipment! And you don't need to bring materials yourselves! Adding a low-grade stat only costs 200 gold, while a high-grade stat costs 800 gold!! Holy crap... and there's a 100% success rate for equipment of Celestial grade or below! You really don't have to bring your own materials!"

"My god! Ling Tian City's Tailor Shop is simply heaven-defying! The clothes they sell actually give bonus stats!! It's completely true! No matter if it's upper garments, lower garments, cloaks, or shoes... even the masks have at least one stat!! These are clothes that can be worn outside of normal equipment, and they don't count as equipment! They also all look incredibly good. The key thing is the prices... they're only 500 gold! They're cheaper than any normal equipment in the Forgotten City by more than half!"

.....

The criticisms and cursing towards Ling Tian City for charging such a high 'teleportation fee' completely disappeared. More and more players desperately rushed towards the teleportation channel to Ling Tian City. 600 gold for equipment, super potions for 1 gold... under that sort of temptation, the 50 gold for the teleportation fee was nothing!

Just like Li Xiao Xue had said, even if she raised the teleportation fee to 500 gold, players would still fight to use it. The number of players entering the city did not decrease at all.

The vast Business Street was completely filled with people, and only ants would be able to crawl through. Gold grade equipment, which most people could only dream about, could be bought with a normal white collar monthly salary and multiple of them at that. The super potions that only mega tycoons could afford could be bought in almost unlimited quantities here... this was simply blessings falling from heaven! All of the players madly fought to buy items and equipment because they couldn't help but worry that these things would be sold out. If that happened, they would only be able to cry.

Those who had just gone to the Forgotten City and bought LV50 White grade equipment and potions felt like crying and almost died from regret. LV50 White grade equipment from the Forgotten City cost about 800 gold on average, while Ling Tian City's LV50 Gold grade equipment only cost 500 gold... White Potions from the Forgotten City that restored 2300 HP instantly cost 2 gold, while Ling Tian City's potions could recover 3000 HP instantly and only cost 1 gold. What's more, it was stackable with the super potion that restored 500 HP every second... the Intermediate Crystals from the Forgotten City cost 1500 gold while the Advanced Crystals in Ling Tian City cost only 1200 gold...

The players who had just bought a whole haul of things from the Forgotten City could only weep to themselves with no one to complain to.

At the beginning, countless players swarmed into the Business Street. However, as more and more players arrived, they found that Ling Tian City was not just amazing for its Business District.

In the gigantic Gourmet Plaza, those who ate the delicacies made by the Dwarves couldn't help but tear up...

“Delicious! Absolutely delicious! This food is world-class!”

“What did they use to make this… the taste is so fresh and beautiful; I feel as if my soul’s going to fly away.”

“Wuuu… I actually ate something so delicious; I feel so emotional… what if I can’t eat such delicious food in the future…”

“Another serving… another one… another one…”

Seeing the Class Change Hall, players were initially incredibly confused. Why would they build such a thing in a player’s city? Could they upgrade professions like in the system’s main cities? When the information regarding the Class Change Hall was broadcasted, all of China’s players were once again shocked.

“Important news!! Heaven-shocking, earth-shaking, extraordinary news! Go and look at Ling Tian City’s Class Change Hall’s notice board… it says that if you pay the Profession Trainer 100 gold, you can select a quest for a Hidden Profession!! Hidden Professions include Fairy Warrior, Fairy Shield Bearer, Fairy Marksman, Fairy Elementalist, Fairy Assassin, Fairy Paladin, and Fairy Summoner… any player can accept a quest with a limit of one per day! The first person each day to complete their quest can change into the corresponding Fairy Hidden Profession! This is completely true!!”

Initially, most players doubted this information. After all, only the system’s main cities could change or upgrade one’s profession – how could a player’s city do this? Let alone change or upgrade one’s profession, how could they give someone a Hidden Profession? However, when the first system announcement sounded out in the Ling Tian City, China’s players were once again sent into a frenzy.

“Ding… Congratulations player ‘Number 1 Chicken’ for completing the quest given by the Fairy’s Archer Elder and obtaining the Hidden Profession ‘Fairy Marksman’. Each Hidden Profession can only be obtained by 1 player per day. Players above

LV50 who have not yet completed their profession upgrade can take one quest per day. We encourage players to continue working hard."

"Did you hear that? Hidden Profession!! You really can obtain a Hidden Profession!!!"

"Get out of my way! I'm going to take a quest! I'll kill whoever tries to block me!"

"Hidden Profession... my heart's about to explode from my chest!"

"Wuu... wuuu! Oh heavens! Oh earth! Why have I already done my profession upgrade... why?!?!"

"It's not fair!! Why can't those who have done their profession upgrade accept a quest?! It's not fair!! Arghhhh... why did I have to do my profession upgrade already! Who can tell me how to reverse my profession upgrade?!?!"

Hidden Professions were incredibly tempting, and they were not something that high-level equipment and super potions could compare to. This was because Hidden Professions meant more power, potential, and prestige. A low-level player with trash equipment and a Hidden Profession would still have a sense of superiority over players with normal professions dressed in exquisite equipment.

According to the Class Change Hall's notice, although almost anyone could take the quest, only one Hidden Profession for each class could be obtained every day, 7 in total. With the amount of people in China, the chances of succeeding in obtaining a Hidden Profession were like winning the lottery. However, when a player obtained a Hidden Profession, with extreme admiration and envy, everyone else also felt that they had a chance as well. As such, countless players madly rushed to the Class Change Hall... under the massive temptation from the Hidden Professions, 100 gold coins was nothing.

The Fairy Clan's 10 Elders outclassed the Azure Dragon City and the Forgotten City's Class Trainers in every way. Giving players some of the Fairy Clan's power and changing their profession to the corresponding Fairy profession was something incredibly easy for them. The Fairy professions were naturally stronger than normal professions, but not by too much. Under the instructions from Li Xiao Xue, the Fairy Clan's elders were able to perfectly control how much power they gave to the players.

At Ling Tian City's southside, the Residential District, there were already countless players standing outside the railings, staring dumbly.

The southside was closer to the Fairy Forest, and the air here made them feel like they were in heaven, their bodies in a state of total relaxation. Moreover, they were unable to turn their eyes away from the residential buildings in front of them... the style of the buildings completely defied what they were used to, and the gardens in the air defied all natural laws. They mystically hung like a marvellous rainbow in the air, crossing paths with the island in the air as well as with the scenic elevator... all of these things could only be seen in movies, but they were right there in front of their eyes. Moreover, they were part of the Residential District, meaning... they could all be bought! As long as one had enough money, they could live in these magical houses!

All of these were the amazing works made by the Dwarves.

"Apologies, dear friends, these houses are not for sale yet." A beautiful and pure Fairy beauty elegantly smiled as she spoke.

"Then when will they be for sale?! Can't you give us a specific time??" The crowd of players impatiently asked. Some were so desperate that their faces were completely red, wishing that they could immediately buy a house and live in it.

"They will be for sale after Ling Tian City's grand opening tomorrow. Dear friends, please do not be impatient; we invite you

all to come to the grand opening tomorrow," The Fairy beauty said as she smiled.

"Can we sign the contract now? Money isn't a problem!!" A chubby man welled out from within the crowd.

"Apologies, we're unable to do that right now. I believe it should be possible after the grand opening tomorrow. If you would like to pre-order a house, you can line up here. The order in which pre-orders will be taken will be based on the line," The Fairy beauty continued to smile.

As she spoke, a massive line appeared before her. Because players were all desperate to be near the front, there were hundreds of collisions every second.

Chapter 619 – A Number That Could Shock People To Death

As the players' average level passed LV50, the number of people in Azure Dragon City gradually fell. Today, the numbers at Azure Dragon City reached an all-time high... because 99.99999% of these players were all there for the teleportation channel to Ling Tian City.

On the very first day it was opened, the number of people entering Ling Tian City was a monstrous figure.

Currently, when players met each other, the standard greeting was, "Did you buy any? How many did you buy?"

Some were delirious with joy, and others were depressed, such as...

"Hello, what sort of equipment... oh? You're a player from the Yan Huang Alliance? Sorry, but we won't be selling any equipment to you!"

"You're not selling? Why not?"

"Why not? You have the face to ask why not?" The manager of the Equipment Shop, Kaidi, was furious, "Who was it that wanted to destroy our Ling Tian City for no reason?! Huh? Who was it? Who was it?! Tell me why I should goddamn sell to you!"

The players nearby smirked as they looked over... that's right! Back then, it was the Yan Huang Alliance who had led the attacks against the yet-to-be-completed Ling Tian City. If it wasn't for Ling Tian City's incredible defence, it would have been completely obliterated. It was not an exaggeration to say that the Yan Huang Alliance and the other guilds that had attacked were irreconcilable enemies with Ling Tian City – why should they sell exquisite equipment to their enemies? It was already good enough for them not to immediately kick the Yan Huang Alliance players out.

The Yan Huang Alliance player could only walk away dejectedly.

Potion Shop:

“Eh? Aren’t you from the Golden Age Alliance? I’m sorry, but we’d rather throw out all of our stock than sell to you. Please get out of my sight.”

Crystal Shop:

“Oh, you’re from the Black Flames Alliance? The door’s over there; you can show yourself out.”

Tailor Shop:

“Scram!”

Gourmet Plaza:

“Dogs and all players who participated in the attack aren’t allowed in… although if the dog is cute enough and friendly enough, we might let it in.”

……

Yan Huang Alliance Headquarters.

Long Tian Yun’s face was as black as the bottom of a pot, suppressing his rage as he coldly listened to the report from Flame Shadow.

“… Right now, almost no players are interested in the Forgotten City anymore; they’re all rushing to Ling Tian City. Everything in the report I just gave about Ling Tian City was completely true - none of it was false or embellished. I don’t know how they did it, but they have information on all of the players in all of the guilds. They’re refusing to sell to any player belonging to a guild that attacked the new city, and they immediately chase them away,” Flame Shadow spoke as he wiped the cold sweat off his forehead. He could already feel Long Tian Yun’s rage. Long Tian Yun had been venting all this time about the loss and humiliation he had suffered. Now that this had happened, he could only imagine how

furious Long Tian Yun would be.

“Where did they get all of those things? This is impossible!” Long Tian Yun roared as he gnashed his teeth. “You can’t even buy those things at the Royal City! How could they have so much Gold grade equipment? What a joke! What a joke!!”

“At first I also thought that it was a joke… but it’s the truth,” Flame Shadow said fearfully. “Now, there are more and more players who are equipping Gold grade equipment, have Super Crystals,and have those high-grade potions… but our Yan Huang Alliance was unable to buy anything. If this goes on…”

“Are you all idiots?” Long Tian Yun’s face darkened as he yelled, “Haven’t you asked some players to buy some for you?!”

“Of course we thought of that, but… but…” Flame Shadow lowered his head, “No matter if it’s the equipment sold at Ling Tian City, the Crystals, or the potions… they can only be used by the buyer at the store or the seller at the Pawn Shop, so it cannot be transferred or traded with another player. However, if someone is determined to transfer or sell it to someone else, they need to go to the Potion Shop and buy an ‘Unsealing Potion’, which unlocks the seal on the item or equipment. A single drop can unlock the seal on a single item or equipment, and a single drop of Unsealing Water costs… costs… 10 million gold.”

Long Tian Yun’s body shook and almost vomited out blood.

This discussion happened within all of the guilds that had attacked the new city. From that instant, they tasted the bitter fruit of their greed.

By night time, there were players all over China who were covered with Gold grade equipment. It was so common in fact that Gold grade equipment seemed as common as cabbages. Those who did not have gold equipment on them were looked at with condescending glares… as if they were looking at scum. If a person didn’t have any gold equipment, it was evident that they were part

of a guild that had attacked the new city.

No matter if it was the Yan Huang Alliance or the 30 guilds that had allied together to attack the new city, they were all incredibly powerful. The players that belonged to these guilds were all proud and haughty. If they saw a training spot they liked, they would take it for themselves. However, now they wished they could cover their faces when walking around, and they picked training spots as far away as possible from other people. The glory they once had was now a massive humiliation. However, this was the opposite for normal players – before, they would always tremble when they saw players from powerful guilds. It was normal for their training spots to be taken, and they didn't even dare to resist.

However, now... Hoh? Isn't that person from the so-and-so guild? Luckily I'm not from that guild, otherwise I'd still have a set of crappy equipment, how embarrassing. Hm? You want to take our training spot? You think we'd be afraid of you? Those in Copper grade equipment can abuse those in Iron grade equipment; those in Silver grade equipment can abuse those in Copper grade equipment. This elder has a full set of Gold equipment, Super Crystals, clothes that give bonus stats, and potions that make me invincible. It'd be incredibly easy to beat you down!

When all of the other players had changed into a full set of Gold grade equipment with Super Crystals and their bags filled with high-grade potions, the players from the Yan Huang Alliance, Golden Age Alliance, Black Flames Alliance, Savage Wolves Gang, etc, could only stare in envy. Wherever they went, they were looked down upon condescendingly... it was a horrible feeling.

In just an instant, the hearts of these players who were in the large guilds trembled, and they started to quietly leave their guilds. There were more and more of them, and the guilds simply couldn't do anything to stop them.

As for Ling Tian City, it had become the focus of the entire world. All of the countries were making the same complaint – that Ling

Tian City was destroying the balance of the game!!

The reason was very simple – Ling Tian City was endlessly manufacturing Gold grade equipment and selling them for such a cheap price! This made Gold grade equipment almost a commodity in the China Region! What's more, there were also the high-grade potions and the Super Crystals. In the future when there were international battles, almost the entirety of China would be dressed in Gold grade equipment with Super Crystals, and everyone would possess potions that made them near-invincible... how were the other countries supposed to keep playing?

It would be strange if they could remain calm!

However, Ling Tian City completely ignored these objections. The Fairies and Dwarves were preparing for the grand opening, and the leaders of the city had a very simple, but important job...

Counting money.

"Up until now, Ling Tian City has been opened for 15 hours. During these 15 hours, more than 350 million players have visited the city... what's more, there were countless players who were unable to come in because of the population limit, otherwise this number would be much higher. We earned 17.5 billion gold from teleportation fees, and we sold 980 million pieces of Gold grade equipment. Perhaps I should explain this – although trading in the virtual world is incredibly fast, it's not as fast as the speed of light. More than half of the people were not able to buy anything, otherwise this number also would have been much higher. We earned 774.2 billion gold from selling equipment, 86 billion gold from the Potion Shop, 165 billion gold from the Crystal Shop, 9.5 billion gold from the Smithy, 66.9 billion gold from the Tailor Shop, 9.4 billion gold from the Class Change Hall, and everything in the Gourmet Plaza is free, so we did not earn anything from that.

"Right now, the total amount we've earned so far is: 1.119 trillion

gold. According to our agreement, you can decide how to split the money for this first day. Congratulations, Lady of the City, on the first day alone you've earned half of what my Li family financial group possesses, more than half of what the Yun family financial group possesses, and almost 7 times more than what your father possesses. Rest assured, I've checked over every single number countless times, and I definitely didn't mistakenly add 0s or remove decimal points."

After saying this, Li Xiao Xue saw Yun Meng Xin's entire body freeze.

Even as the big miss of the Li family financial group, someone who possessed an immense fortune and did not have much interest in money anymore, she almost fainted when she saw those numbers.

The Li family financial group had developed for over 100 years, and it was acknowledged to be the biggest financial group in all of China with more than $2 trillion in assets!

And yet, the new city... on the day it had opened... had earned more than 1 trillion gold!!!

As for the costs... they were ridiculously low. The potions were made from the Fairies' Dew of Dawn, Dew of Dusk, and Fountain Water... a single drop could produce one massive vat. A single vat could produce thousands, if not thousands of bottles, and each bottle contained 100 drops... costs? What costs?

Moreover, the materials required to make the Gold grade equipment could be found all over the Forgotten Continent. What was difficult was creating the equipment. All of the materials had been brought from the Nameless Ridge and the Fairy Forest, so they did not have to purchase any of it. After finding a mountain containing a large mine, the Dwarves could smelt the entire mountain, producing tens of thousands if not hundreds of thousands of equipment every minute... as for the Advanced and

Super Crystals, it was as easy as making candy for the Dwarves.

In total, the costs were less than 20 billion gold.

Taking away the costs...

On the first day it had opened, Ling Tian City had made a profit of over 1 trillion gold!

On the very first day!

Even the incredibly confident Ling Chen and Li Xiao Xue hadn't expected such a thing. They had so much money... that they could pave roads with it!

Chapter 620 – Big Sister Is Brilliant!

"1 trillion gold... in 1 day... am I dreaming?" Yun Meng Xin muttered. She simply couldn't believe that this was true.

"No, it's not in 1 day; it's in 15 hours. At this rate, it's likely that our revenue for the first 24 hours will break through 1.5 trillion." Li Xiao Xue sat down next to Yun Meng Xin as she smiled, a red glow of excitement on her face. "Although it's incredibly shocking, if you think about it, it's actually quite reasonable. After all, the best way to make money in this world is through monopolisation! The things that we've monopolised will never go out-of-date or out-of-fashion; after all, they're the most important things in this game.

"Moreover, even if the other main cities know what we're selling, they're unable to do the same thing because our Ling Tian City has the Dwarves who have disappeared for over 10,000 years and the Fairies who have disappeared for thousands of years – the Dwarves and the Fairy Clan are in our Ling Tian City. The equipment and potions that they can create are things that the humans of the Forgotten Continent will never be able to compete with, and they can't even copy them. What's even more important is that the Dwarves and Fairies are incredibly grateful to Ling Tian City, and they have thrown all of their passion into the city and will never betray it.

"Taking into consideration that we have a monopoly on all of these goods, it's completely normal to be able to reap these profits. Moreover, as time goes on, these profits won't decrease, but will rather instead increase." Li Xiao Xue's eyes sparkled with light as she spread out her hand and explained to Yun Meng Xin, "The equipment at the Forgotten City are split into LV50, LV55, LV60, LV65... all of the equipment sold by main cities are in 5 level intervals, but our Ling Tian City has equipment of every level."

"When players level up, do you think they will still use their old,

under-levelled equipment when faced with such cheap Gold grade equipment? As for the Potion Shop, I'm sure that doesn't need much explanation. After using the Fairy Clan's potions, the players will definitely develop a dependence on them. Do you think they'd be willing to buy potions from main cities anymore? Plus, even the normal potions at the main cities are twice as expensive! Apart from Ling Tian City, they won't be able to buy potions that can greatly increase their maximum stats from anywhere else... the only thing that is affected by the effluxion of time is the Crystal Shop. After all, Crystals can be used forever, and a Super Crystal can last one until they are max level – unless they obtain even higher grade Crystals from monsters. As such, the sale of Crystals will gradually plateau, but Crystals are only one small part of the revenue generated by Ling Tian City.

"Our Ling Tian City's teleport scrolls are also very expensive – 50 gold, which is 100 times that of the main cities. However, because of the monopolies we have, this price will not affect the flow of players into the city at all, and will instead continuously bring great benefits. Furthermore, the Gourmet Plaza has not been officially opened yet; with the Dwarves' talent in cooking, it'll be difficult to stop the Gourmet Plaza from becoming a massive success. There's also the Entertainment District and Relaxation District. The facilities created by the Dwarves combined with the aura of Nature from the Fairy Forest will be more than enough to satisfy people.

"Also, the places that we're leasing players in the Guild District and Business District naturally have high prices. With the number of players entering Ling Tian City, people would be suspicious if we didn't charge 2-3 times more than main cities. There's also the Residential District... real estate in the virtual world will always give the greatest profit margins. Even I want to immediately live in the houses that the Dwarves constructed, and I'm not at all worried that they won't be sold out. Those with money are usually willing to spend as much as we ask for on things that can allow

them to live comfortably and give them a sense of prestige and nobility…. Lady of the City, how should we price the houses? Don't make it too low."

"You can be in charge of that. I'm sure you're much more experienced in that regard than myself," Yun Meng Xin said as she rubbed her forehead, still wondering whether she was dreaming. She knew that Ling Chen had given her the entirety of 'Ling Tian City', including the Dwarves and Fairies, so that she could win her bet with her father. However, on the first day that the city was open, she was completely shocked. Only now did she realise what a massive present Ling Chen had given her.

No! Although I'm the 'Lady of the City', this city belongs to everyone and not just myself. This title only means that I have the responsibility of further developing Ling Tian City.

"Xiao Xue, I think we should expand the new city as quickly as possible," Yun Meng Xin stood up as she announced her thoughts.

"Expand the new city?" Li Xiao Xue's eyes lit up. "Meng Xin, I was thinking the exact same thing. Yesterday, Ling Tian City looked extremely large, but now it seems far too small."

"That's right, it's too small. I underestimated the abilities of our Dwarf and Fairy friends as well as the impact that our city would have. Currently, our size is the greatest limiting factor for the development of the new city… this is all because I was too short-sighted before," Yun Meng Xin said in pity.

"No! It's not just you," Li Xiao Xue smiled as she shook her head. "I was the same. I'm sure that anyone, before today, wouldn't have felt that Ling Tian City was too small. After today, they would all find that Ling Tian City seemed much smaller than they had originally thought."

Yun Meng Xin looked up as an idea surfaced in her mind. "Expanding to the north isn't possible because the land five kilometres to the north no longer belongs to the Fairies but to the

Forgotten City. However, this is not an issue for the east, west, and south. We can expand 50 kilometres or so to the east and about 60 kilometres to the west. Chief Greenwood said that these regions all belong to the Fairies and that they can affect some rules. They can use the Fairy Fountain's water to purify territories belonging to monsters, making it so that monsters will no longer appear there. As for the south..." Yun Meng Xin paused as she said, "We can directly extend Ling Tian City into the Fairy Forest."

Li Xiao Xue froze in surprise, and after thinking for a moment, her eyes lit up, "A city within a forest?"

"It's impossible in the real world to combine a flourishing city with the refreshing aura of Nature. However, in the virtual world with the Dwarves' talent and wisdom, we can definitely achieve it!" Li Xiao Xue started to become excited. "Just thinking about it makes me impatient to see it completed. If even I'm like this,it will be much more so for other people. Meng Xin, what a brilliant idea! I can't wait at all... let's go and talk to the Dwarves and Fairies immediately!"

"This matter isn't that urgent," Yun Meng Xin grabbed Li Xiao Xue, who was just about to rush off. "Let's first prepare for the city's grand opening. Tomorrow morning is the grand opening and I don't know if everyone has finished preparing yet. This is especially so for the Skyfall Dynasty – they seemed quite reluctant the other day, and I don't know if they've changed their mind."

"The Skyfall Dynasty won't be an issue at all," Li Xiao Xue smiled widely. "Before today, it was possible that they would change their mind. However, after seeing the Ling Tian City's performance... I'm sure that even if you try to chase them away with a broom, they'll beg you to stay.

"In 2 hours, everyone will be gathered at the Central Meeting Hall. Beautiful and blessed Lady of the City, please don't be late."

.....

It was nearly dawn, but the new city was just as crowded. No matter where one went, there were seas of people everywhere. It was almost to the point where Ling Tian City, which was not small at all, nearly exploded.

“What?!?! 1 trillion gold?!?!?!”

This was the first time Ling Tian City had used its Central Meeting Hall, and it was filled with roars of shock.

Everyone present, apart from Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice, was incredibly rich. However, 1 trillion gold... that was 1 trillion gold!! What was even scarier was that this was just from the first day!!

“That was the figure from 2 hours ago. Now, it’s much more than that. Moreover, less than half of the new city’s enterprises have been opened. If they were all opened, it’s possible to earn even 3 or 4 trillion in a single day,” Li Xiao Xue calmly said.

Everyone’s faces were completely comical. Some were frozen and some were completely twisted, but everyone’s hearts rapidly pounded... 1 trillion gold in less than 1 day... was there anything more ridiculous in the world?

“1 trillion gold in 1 day... then 10 days... 100 days... 1 year... oh heavens, oh heavens!” Xiao Qi covered her mouth, completely dumbfounded by the numbers.

“So much...” Su’Er’s cute and lovely eyes were wide open as she muttered softly.

“That... That...” Winter of That Year tightly grabbed his clothes, his face red from excitement as he trembled and said, “Beautiful and novel Lady Yun, who is also our Chief Financial Officer, although we didn’t participate in the construction of the city, we did protect it for a long time... I wonder if the boss and I can... can... can... have even a little bit of that, even just a little, little bit!”

Everyone looked over in condescension.

Yun Meng Xin smiled elegantly as she slowly spoke with an expression of gratitude, “If it weren’t for Winter and Hundred Miles, it’s possible that the city wouldn’t even exist. As such, you are Ling Tian City’s esteemed guests, and we can never thank you enough. We know that you need some gold, so Xiao Xue and I have decided to give Winter and Hundred Miles 100 million gold.”

“One… One hundred million gold?” Winter of That Year’s mouth fell open as his eyes rolled back and fell backwards as he fainted. Beside him, Hundred Miles of Ice lowered his head in embarrassment… it was simply too shameful sitting with that guy.

Yun Meng Xin smiled as she turned to look at Xiao Qiu Feng, “Big brother Xiao, have the preparations for the Battle Alliance to move into the Ling Tian City tomorrow been completed?”

Xiao Qiu Feng nodded, “We’ve finished.”

Yun Meng Xin turned to look at Skyfall, Against The Sky, and Judging Sky, “Then, Skyfall Dynasty’s 3 Heavenly Kings…”

“No problem! No problem at all!!” Before Yun Meng Xin had finished speaking, Against The Sky had already cried out emotionally. There was a solemn expression on his face as he vigorously beat his chest, saying, “Rest assured Lady Yun, there’ll be no issues at all. As long as Lady Yun gives the order, we’ll immediately move to Ling Tian City with not a single person less! In the future, with a single command from Lady Yun, we’ll go up mountains of knives and go down pots of oil without even frowning!”

“Yes, yes, yes, yes, yes, yes!” Judging Sky hurriedly nodded.

“Mm… ah… yes, it’s like that… tomorrow, we’ll move into the new city per your instructions,” Skyfall awkwardly said.

Before, they were extremely unwilling to move into the new city, and they had only agreed because of Gu Qing Han’s order.

However, after seeing the potential of Ling Tian City and how they had completely eclipsed even the system's Royal City, they felt as if everything they knew was crumbling... with the overall figures of Ling Tian City, whether it was the flow of players or the speed at which money came in, they were extremely willing to move to this heaven-defying city and become an elder-level pillar guild. Without even thinking, they could imagine the future prospects of the Skyfall Dynasty – they might even be able to surpass the Yan Huang Alliance!!

What's more, Lady Yun promised that upon moving into the Ling Tian City, the entire alliance's equipment and potions would all be provided free of charge! Moreover, each of the leaders would be given a massive gift for free as well as one of those villas that countless rich people were desperate for!

This wasn't them making a sacrifice for the new city, but the new city providing them with countless blessings.

At this moment, there was only one thought in their minds:

Big sister is brilliant!

Chapter 621 – Grand Opening

Big sister's insight is amazing and her foresight is brilliant. Big sister is indeed wise beyond comprehension, and she has never made a bad decision before! No less than expected from big sister, someone whose name resounds throughout all of China and single handedly made the Gu family the ruler of the other families in the south!

When they thought about how they had doubted their big sister and grumbled about her decision, the 3 Heavenly Kings felt incredibly ashamed.

There was no need to even ask Yun Feng—from how red his face was, one could see how excited he was, and he would definitely be willing to move the Disillusion Alliance to Ling Tian City.

Li Xiao Xue looked at Ling Chen, who was silently sitting, as she smiled and asked, "Does the Lord of the City and the Lord of the City's wife have anything to say?"

Upon being called the 'Lord's wife', Xuanyuan Dia Wu instantly blushed. Ling Chen's eyelids jumped a he lazily said, "The situation is much better than expected. However, I already said that my title as Vice-Lord is only a title—I won't interfere at all in the management of the new city. 1 trillion gold... how is it possible to spend that amount of money."

Although Ling Chen had said that he wouldn't take part in the management of the new city, everyone present knew that anything he wanted would be immediately carried out. After all, he was the soul of Ling Tian City, and it was because of him that Ling Tian City still existed. Although he had been forced to take the title of 'Vice-Lord', no one would dare to disobey his commands.

"Meng Xin, I'm sure that your fame and fortune will exceed that of the Yun family financial group's after the grand opening of the new city," Ling Chen said as he looked at Yun Meng Xin and

smiled. “The bet between you and your father has been won in advance. Now, I’m sure that there’s no reason for your father to force you into that marriage anymore.”

Yun Meng Xin looked up and bit her lip as she nodded, “Mm!”

“This is awesome, big sister Meng Xin!” Xiao Qi cheered.

“We really won.” Su’Er also looked incredibly happy.

Yun Meng Xin slowly shook her head as she looked at everyone gathered in the hall and softly said, “Back then, that bet was my final struggle because I was unwilling to give in. Although I’ve been doing my best, I never thought that I would win. What’s more, I never thought that winning was a possibility, nevertheless actually winning so quickly. I’m truly amazed. The people who did this are all of you here... without all of you, winning that bet by myself would have just been a dream... thank you all.”

“Today, I’ve clearly realised that in the face of the city we’ve built, my personal bet was very insignificant. The fortune that Ling Tian City has brought isn’t just so that my assets could exceed that of the Yun family financial group’s. This is because Ling Tian City belongs to everyone and contains all of our efforts and hopes. The title of Lady of the City isn’t so my fame could exceed that of the Yun family financial group’s, but to give me an opportunity to do my best to develop this city that belongs to everyone so that I can repay everyone... I, Yun Meng Xin, will not disappoint you all.”

Yun Meng Xin’s words made everyone feel quite touched, and they couldn’t help but admire this heavenly beauty even more. Everyone could tell that most of her words were directed to Ling Chen. After all, Ling Chen had changed her entire life.

Ling Chen did not say anything. He had perfectly fulfilled the promise he had made to Yun Feng, and it had gone much smoother than he had expected. However, he understood that half of this was because of him, and the other half was because of Yun Meng

Xin's hard work. All he had done was give Yun Meng Xin the City Creation Token and information on how to contact the Fairies and Dwarves. Following that, he had left everything to Yun Meng Xin and sealed himself off from the outside world.

It was Yun Meng Xin who had researched everything necessary to build a city, even spending many days and nights reading through the Forgotten Continent's Chronicles. From that, she had learned much about the Fairy Clan and Dwarf Clan. It was Yun Meng Xin who had convinced the Fairies to leave the Fairy Realm. It was Yun Meng Xin who described to the Dwarf Clan the wonderful future they could have and brought them out of the Nameless Ridge using irresistible reasons. It was Yun Meng Xin who had chosen the best location for the new city, and it was Yun Meng Xin who had chosen Li Xiao Xue as a business partner...

Ling Chen had given her an incredible starting point, but it was Yun Meng Xin who had taken care of the city from the beginning to the end. She fully deserved the title of Lady of the City. As for the development of the new city, he didn't have any intentions to step in—he trusted that Yun Meng Xin would do a good job. His goal was clear, and he didn't want to be distracted by Ling Tian City.

In this small meeting, they once again confirmed the procedure for the grand opening of the new city as well as the plans for future development and expansion.

Finally, Ling Chen gave everyone a massive surprise—he presented everyone with a bottle of Fairy Fountain Water, which could raise their HP and MP by 1000 as well as increase their overall stats by 40 points, and a Chilling Crystal Chalcedony, which could instantly increase their level by 3. When each person received these 2 gifts, they couldn't help but cry out.

The 3 Heavenly Kings, Xiao Qiu Feng, Winter of That Year, and the others felt more and more that joining Ling Tian City was their blessing.

Following this, the grand opening arrived.

The flow of players into the new city was much greater on the second day, and every inch of the new city was packed with players. The Business Street was completely flooded, and what was even more shocking was the line in front of the Residential District... the line almost extended through half of Ling Tian City. Some lined up for themselves, while others were paid high prices to line up for others—and this was before the sales officially began and before the prices were even announced.

As for the Forgotten City, it was completely cast aside by players. Upgrading professions? Ling Tian City had Hidden Professions. Equipment? The Ling Tian City sold Gold grade equipment for cheap prices. Quests? Fudge! Those crappy quests from the Forgotten Continent only gave Silver grade equipment at best, so who would waste their time on those?

The name 'Ling Tian City', in just a single day, shook the entire world. This was because Ling Tian City completely turned people's conceptions of player's cities upside-down. The attention given to Ling Tian City skyrocketed overnight.

The grand opening of Ling Tian City became the focus of media all over the world. This was because all players were asking the same questions—how could Ling Tian City have unlimited quantities of Gold grade equipment and super potions and sell them for such a cheap price? How could they have the ability to give Hidden Professions? Which grandmaster designed and built this city? What was the story behind Ling Tian City... etc.

At 9am in the morning, a system announcement sounded across the entire Forgotten Continent, signalling that the grand opening was about to take place at Ling Tian City's Arena. The Arena, which could accommodate millions of players, was packed to the brim. There were no empty seats, and there were countless players, who had not been able to secure a ticket, wailing outside. Media from countries all around the world were broadcasting the

grand opening. It was no exaggeration to say that it was possible to watch Ling Tian City's grand opening from any place in the world.

This grand opening was suggested and planned by Li Xiao Xue. The reason for this grand opening was to declare the establishment of Ling Tian City to the entire world as well as display the might of Ling Tian City. Of course, the main goal was to attract even more players to Ling Tian City, increasing Ling Tian City's power and influence step by step.

There were countless first-rate stars singing at the grand opening. With Li Xiao Xue's wealth and power, inviting world-famous bands and stars was an incredibly easy task. Following this, Li Xiao Xue stepped onto the stage to give a speech. It was incredibly rare for her to give a public speech, and all eyes were fixed on her attentively as everyone listened to her every word.

Li Xiao Xue introduced Ling Tian City's history and how long it took to construct. Following this, as all players stared, dumbstruck, she talked about the Fairy Clan and Dwarf Clan and how and why they joined the Ling Tian City. She discussed the Dwarf Clan's talent and intelligence as well as the power of the Fairies. Hearing this, the players were completely flabbergasted, and they felt as if they were listening to a fairy tale.

Telling the public about the Dwarf Clan and Fairy Clan was necessary because it would explain many of the unbelievable things about the new city. Otherwise, as the questions became larger and larger, they could negatively impact the new city.

Li Xiao Xue talked for a long time, but she was not today's main character. After saying what needed to be said, she took a step back as she lifted her hand towards the back, "Next, we'll have our Ling Tian City's esteemed Lady of the City talk."

Woahhh....

The entire crowd was sent into a frenzy. All of the players stared with their eyes wide open as countless cameras and video

recording devices were lifted high into the air. The Lady of the City, who had created countless miracles, was finally going to appear. However, everyone felt quite confused—given the name of the new city, why was the title ‘Lady of the City’?

When Yun Meng Xin walked onto the stage, the entire Arena fell silent. There were millions of people in the Arena, and yet it was so silent that even a whisper could be heard. Every player stared with their eyes and mouths wide open as they looked at the goddess in front of them, feeling as if their souls had left their bodies.

This was because Yun Meng Xin... was not wearing the veil that she normally wore. She displayed her face to the public.

She was a goddess-level beauty, and her looks could topple countries and cities. She looked like a celestial beauty who was untainted by the world, and any man who looked at her felt as if their souls had been stolen from them. Her brilliant, star-like eyes looked as still as an ocean, and just by gently blinking, she could dazzle countless people. A simple smile from her could cause the heavens and earth to lose their colour in comparison.

Her appearance greatly shocked the entire crowd.

Chapter 622 – The Dark Night's Deathgod

This was because from today onwards, Yun Meng Xin was no longer that girl who had to bitterly fight against her fate; she had broken free of her chains and gained her freedom. She was the Lady of Ling Tian City, Yun Meng Xin. She no longer needed to hide her appearance.

"So beautiful… she's like a goddess…" Countless people murmured in awe and wonder.

"A woman can actually be so beautiful… she's so beautiful… that I can't breathe…"

"Heavens… this incredible beauty is the Lady of Ling Tian City… oh heavens!"

No matter if it were the players inside the Arena or the players watching the broadcast, they were completely shocked by Yun Meng Xin's appearance. They were shocked by her beauty, but even more so by the fact… that she was the Lady of the City!

The Lady of this ridiculously powerful, heaven-defying city was actually a woman so beautiful that even the heavens would be jealous of her—the combination of these 2 things made everyone feel as if there was a storm within their hearts.

Although it was the first time that her true appearance had been seen by so many people, Yun Meng Xin did not seem nervous or shy at all. When her eyes met their gazes while looking around, they felt a sense of gentleness and kindness, causing their souls to tremble.

Meng Yu You Xin was the name displayed above her head. In just a few seconds, this name was firmly embedded within the hearts of players all over the world.

"Good morning, everyone," Yun Meng Xin started off with a simple greeting, "my name is Meng Yu You Xin, and I am the

current Lady of Ling Tian City. Thank you for coming to Ling Tian City's grand opening, and thank you to all the friends caring for our Ling Tian City. I'm sure there are not many people who know about me, and I do not wish to waste everyone's time by introducing myself. I'm sure that through my efforts and Ling Tian City's development, everyone will remember my name."

The people almost yelled out... who cares about Ling Tian City's development? Just with your looks, even a blind person would not be able to forget about you.

"Xiao Xue has already told you much about Ling Tian City, and I need not add any more to that. The construction of Ling Tian City went fairly smoothly, but as most of you know, because of some vile people, Ling Tian City almost faced destruction. However, no evil will be tolerated by the heavens. Because of the fierce resistance put up by Ling Tian City, the vile people who wanted to destroy our city were forced to retreat in shame, allowing Ling Tian City to have its grand opening today."

Yun Meng Xin's tone was elegant, calm, and contained her true emotions from within. When she spoke the words 'vile people', everyone could hear the hatred in her voice.

"Although Ling Tian City is fairly new, it already possesses immense strength. The wisdom of our Dwarf friends will definitely allow Ling Tian City to become one of the 6 biggest cities in the Forgotten Continent, while our powerful Fairy friends will provide absolute protection. Moreover, we also have countless alliances and players who have joined our city. Now, I will announce the appointment of management roles!"

Yun Meng Xin turned her body and looked at her friends on the side as a proud smile appeared on her face. She spoke with a loud and clear voice, "Ling Tian!"

As soon as the name 'Ling Tian' appeared, the entire scene burst out in cheers. Ling Tian was an absolute legend to players, and he

had become a truly heaven-defying player. Under countless passionate gazes, Ling Chen calmly walked onto the stage, neither too fast nor too slow.

“Ling Tian is the Vice-Lord of Ling Tian City and also the Governor-General. He is not to be managed by anyone, and he can make any decisions regarding Ling Tian City,” Yun Meng Xin said with a smile on her face. He indeed shouldn’t belong to Ling Tian City because a small place like Ling Tian City could never become his world. What he needed was unrestrained freedom.

“Flowing Clouds and Flying Snow, Li Xiao Xue. Ling Tian City’s Vice-Lady, in charge of the Ling Tian City’s statistics, audits, planning, markets, finances, and day-to-day management. She will also continue to lead the Snow Moon Loulan.”

Li Xiao Xue stepped onto the stage as she raised her hand, vowing, “I will never let down the city!”

With the Li family’s power and Li Xiao Xue’s own capabilities, she would be able to greatly develop Ling Tian City. In return, the massive influence that Ling Tian City had displayed in just a day was sure to bring the Li family to new heights as well. Li Xiao Xue joining the new city and becoming a Vice-Lady undoubtedly meant that the Li family and Ling Tian City had entered an alliance!

“Skyfall, Judging Sky, and Against The Sky, Heads of Ling Tian City’s law enforcement, and they will continue to lead the Skyfall Dynasty!”

The 3 Heavenly Kings walked onto the stage, looking ahead of them as they simultaneously yelled, “The Skyfall Dynasty has joined Ling Tian City and vows to advance and retreat with Ling Tian City and to live and die with Ling Tian City!”

Although this was to be expected due to the Skyfall Dynasty helping the new city during that intense battle, everyone was still incredibly shocked when they heard that the Skyfall Dynasty had moved to Ling Tian City. Moreover, they had given an iron-clad

promise that did not seem half-hearted or false at all.

Now that the Skyfall Dynasty had joined the new city, it was impossible for Ling Tian City not to have a solid foundation.

“Xiao Qiu Feng, Yun Feng, Heads of Recruitment and Applications, and they will continue to lead the Battle Alliance and Disillusion Alliance.”

“Feng Xie Yu, Head of the Ling Tian City’s Warriors and Shield Bearers Alliance.”

Xuanyuan Dia Wu stepped onto the stage, but she was once again wearing the cloak that covered her entire body, looking like the Sword Emperor that everyone knew. This was because she was still unused to showing her face, and only Ling Chen and a few others had seen her true appearance.

“It’s the Sword Emperor! He’s also joined Ling Tian City!” Below, everyone was sent into a frenzy.

“Cute Qi Qi, Head of the Ling Tian City’s Mage Alliance.”

When the cute and sweet Xiao Qi, wearing her flame-red Vermillion Bird Battle Gown, appeared on the stage, everyone below burst into cheers.

“Wow! The Flame Empress!”

“She’s the one who annihilated the Yan Huang Alliance’s army with a single attack! I actually saw her in person!”

“Winter of That Year, Head of the Ling Tian City’s Archer Alliance.” The crowd’s reaction to this was not the same as that towards the Sword Emperor and Xiao Qi. After all, Xuanyuan Dia Wu and Xiao Qi had absolute strength, and no one could object to them being the heads of those alliances. However, Winter of That Year... no one had even heard of him before, and seeing how flippant he looked... it would be difficult for him to manage all of the Archers.

Winter of That Year breezily walked onto the stage, but there were no cheers, though people silently discussed among themselves.

“Who is this guy?”

“I’ve never seen him before.”

“Winter of That Year… oh, I think I’ve seen him on the Player Level Rankings a long time ago. He was the highest-levelled Archer, but he’s fallen from the rankings for a long time. But he looks… so perverted! No wonder why he’s an Archer.”

“Gui Ya is head of the Ling Tian City’s Assassin Alliance, and he will continue to lead the Dark Night.”

When Yun Meng Xin said this sentence just as casually as before, everyone in the Arena felt as if they had been struck by lightning, and some almost fainted.

What did they just hear?

The Dark Night? Yun Meng Xin had just said… the Dark Night?

The entire Arena fell silent, and within this strange silence, a figure completely dressed in black slowly walked onto the stage.

He was not very tall, nor was he powerfully built—instead, he looked skinny and weak. However, whenever anyone’s gaze fell on that skinny body, their hearts involuntarily contracted as a chilling feeling spread throughout their entire body, filling them with fear and causing them to tremble. Slowly, what they saw was not a person dressed in black, but a ferocious wolf that had its mouth wide open, its fangs bared, preparing to rip through anyone’s throat… or that he was a deathgod holding a sickle, preparing to take people’s lives.

2 chilling words gradually appeared in everyone’s minds: killing intent!

This sort of person could have only come from hell!

The name above his head told everyone the identity of this terrifying demon – the Dark Night's leader, the 'Deathgod' Gui Ya!

"The Dark Night will join Ling Tian City, and I will live and die with Ling Tian City. All those who offend Ling Tian City will die!"

Gui Ya's voice was piercing and cold, creating a suffocating atmosphere.

"The deathgod, the deathgod!!" A player's teeth were chattering as countless terrifying legends about the deathgod surfaced in his mind.

"That name... as well as that feeling that makes my soul tremble. There's no doubt about it—he's that deathgod!"

"The Dark Night's deathgod... it's the first time he has appeared in public... he actually... no! The entire Dark Night joined Ling Tian City! This is too scary! Too scary!!"

"Isn't the Dark Night just an alliance of Assassins? Why would they join Ling Tian City??"

It wasn't just the crowd that was amazed—even Skyfall, Xiao Qiu Feng, Yun Feng, Xiao Qi, Winter of That Year, and the others were completely flabbergasted.

"D-D-D-Dark Night? I-Is this true?!" Yun Feng's eyes were completely wide, and he couldn't even speak properly.

"That person is indeed the deathgod Gui Ya... unbelievable," Xiao Qiu Feng said in shock.

"Not only are they moving, but they're completely joining... t-t-t-this... this is the Dark Night! My goodness, my little heart can't take it anymore," Against The Sky said as he trembled and held his chest. Although he was one of the Skyfall Dynasty's 3 Heavenly Kings, he couldn't help but feel fear towards the name 'Dark Night'. To date, if the Dark Night wanted anyone dead, no one had been able to escape from them!

“I suddenly pity the alliances that attacked Ling Tian City,” Skyfall said in a low voice. He secretly glanced at Gui Ya, and he happened to meet those dagger-like eyes, causing his body to tremble as he quickly turned his head away. The scene from the Heaven Ranking Battle from back then flashed in his mind: he had been slaughtered by Gui Ya in just 3 attacks, and that was while directly facing him. If the deathgod Gui Ya decided to ambush him, he would never be able to rest in peace.

When the leaders of the guilds that had attacked the new city saw this, their souls almost scattered, and they almost fell down from their seats.

Chapter 623 – The Furious Emperor

The Battle Alliance, Snow Moon Loulan, Disillusion Alliance, and the Skyfall Alliance all joined the new city. This didn't surprise anyone at all—after all, they had defended Ling Tian City to the death and created a miracle. However, the Dark Night joining... no, from what Gui Ya had said, they were pledging their absolute loyalty, shocking everyone and terrifying all of the guilds that had attacked Ling Tian City.

The Dark Night was quite small, and it was confirmed that it had less than 1000 players. And yet, this guild, which only had a measly 1000 players, was ranked second in all of China. It was only behind the Yan Huang Alliance, but in front of the Skyfall Dynasty, which had millions of players, it was evident just how powerful and terrifying this guild was.

If one offended the Yan Huang Alliance or Skyfall Dynasty, they would be annihilated. However, if someone offended the Dark Night... that would be a true nightmare! This was because everyone in the Dark Night was a deathgod in the darkness. Despite existing for so many years, no one had ever seen the true appearance of any of the Dark Night's members, killed someone from the Dark Night, or escaped from an assassin from the Dark Night.

This was a nightmarish legend that had existed for many years.

However, today, the deathgod who had always stayed in the shadows appeared in public and announced that the Dark Night would join Ling Tian City. While the crowd was shocked by these turn of events, they couldn't help but start to pity the Yan Huang Alliance and the other guilds that had attacked Ling Tian City. It was evident that after Ling Tian City was fully settled, it was more than likely that the Dark Night would take revenge for them... normal assassinations from the Dark Night were already terrifying, let alone their revenge.

After announcing these positions, Yun Meng Xin's voice became a bit louder when she said, "The following positions take effect today. These people are Ling Tian City's pillars. Apart from our players, we also have 30,000 Dwarf friends and 2,000 Fairy friends. They will also become our strength in developing and protecting Ling Tian City."

"Ling Tian City was originally just a player's city, but the entire concept of player's cities has been changed by Ling Tian City. This is because our goal isn't just to make Ling Tian City the strongest city in the Forgotten Continent... but also to be the strongest city in the entire Mystic Moon world! So that it can dominate everything under the heavens!"

Yun Meng Xin looked like a celestial beauty on the stage, and her voice was clear and elegant, but the words she spoke shocked everyone. Even Xiao Qi, Su'Er, Xiao Qiu Feng, Yun Feng, Skyfall, and the others' jaws completely dropped open, looking utterly shocked.

Player's city... entire Mystic Moon world... dominate everything under the heavens... this included even main cities and Royal Cities...

No one in any country or virtual world had dared to say such a thing before.

This was because no one had the capability or confidence to sayF such a thing... in fact, it was likely that no one had ever considered such a thing.

Yun Meng Xin was incredibly beautiful and charming, but the words she spoke were incredibly arrogant and domineering.

The Arena fell silent—there was no response. Her celestial and elegant voice reverberated in everyone's ears, but the contents were so arrogant that no one knew how to respond. Laugh? If it was anyone else, laughter would have filled the Arena. However, such a breathtaking beauty had said these words—no matter how

arrogant they were, no one could bear to laugh. Agree? That was even more impossible...

From within the strange silence, a loud voice sounded out from the back of the Arena, “The Vermillion Bird City congratulates Ling Tian City for its successful opening, and we have brought precious gifts. We wish that Ling Tian City becomes stronger day by day until it can dominate everything under the heavens! The Vermillion Bird City wishes to forever maintain friendly relations with Ling Tian City and to also share in both good and bad times.”

The crowd quickly parted as a middle-aged man, who had a red crown and a mighty air about him, walked forwards. His gaze fell on Xiao Qi’s face, and his eyes lit up as he gave a slight bow... when the players around him saw his name and position above his head, they all sucked in a mouthful of cold air.

Vermillion Bird’s Mayor!!

It was the Mayor of the Vermillion Bird City, one of the 5 main cities of the Forgotten Continent! He had actually personally come to the grand opening of this player’s city!

This was something that had never happened in virtual gaming history! This was something that no one had ever dared to even imagine before!

The gifts formed a small mountain, and the Vermillion Bird’s Mayor personally came to say a few congratulatory words with a big smile on his face. Moreover, he had loudly said that ‘The Vermillion Bird City wishes to forever maintain friendly relations with Ling Tian City and to also share in both good and bad times.’ It was as if they were afraid that Ling Tian City wouldn’t be willing to maintain friendly relations with them, causing all of the players’ jaws to drop and stare in awe.

After the Vermillion Bird’s Mayor spoke, another loud voice sounded out.

“The White Tiger City congratulates Ling Tian City for its successful opening, and we have brought precious gifts. We wish that Ling Tian City becomes stronger day by day until it can dominate everything under the heavens! The White Tiger City wishes to forever maintain friendly relations with Ling Tian City and to also share in both good and bad times.”

The crowd once again parted as a middle-aged man wearing a cloak covered with purple runes hurriedly walked to the front, his name and position making the players feel as if they had been blinded.

White Tiger’s Mayor.

The White Tiger’s Mayor’s face was glowing red with joy. After Ling Chen had gone to the White Tiger City, the chaos had completely subsided and everything became peaceful again. The White Tiger’s Mayor’s worries were gone, but it was incredibly difficult to deal with the ‘White Tiger’s Representative’. Since the White Tiger’s Representative was Ling Tian City’s Vice-Lord, how could he not personally come to say congratulatory words and present gifts?

The gifts from the White Tiger City also formed a small mountain, and the White Tiger’s Mayor went up and said all types of blessings… all of the players fell completely silent, feeling as if their eyes were going to pop out.

Just what was going on…

How could Ling Tian City be so heaven-defying?!

……

A place forgotten by players.

The Forgotten City, the largest of the 5 main cities on the Forgotten Continent as well the only Royal City, was the centre of the Forgotten Continent. It contained the highest power in the Forgotten Continent as well as the most wealth and authority. It

was also the starting point for players in the middle stages of the game.

The previous day, the Forgotten City had finally been opened to everyone, much to the excitement of players. The instant it was opened, countless players flooded in, making the Forgotten City incredibly lively.

However, this had lasted for only less than 45 minutes...

Currently, if anyone looked into the Forgotten City, they would not believe that it was a recently-opened Royal City.

A newly-opened Royal City was almost always completely filled. This was because here, players could buy high-levelled equipment, potions, and items. Currently, however, it was almost empty.

The owner of the Equipment Shop, which had been flooded for those first few minutes, closed his eyes as he sat back on his chair. He had been like this for the past 3 hours, and not a single player had come in. There were only a few birds pecking at the entrance of the widely-opened doors.

The owner of the Potion Shop stared at the entrance of his shop while continuously yawning, looking incredibly bored. The Item Shop's owner was lying on the counter, fast asleep as he loudly snored.

There would occasionally be a few players visiting the Forgotten City coming to these shops, and the dialogue would be like such:

"What? Your LV50 White grade Knives cost 900 gold? Ling Tian City's LV50 Gold grade equipment only cost 600 gold! Are you trying to scam me?"

"What? Your potions that only recover 2300 HP cost 2 gold? Ling Tian City's super potions only cost 1 gold! Are you trying to rip me off?"

"What? The highest grade Energy Crystals you have are Intermediate? And they're 15 gold each? Ling Tian City's LV50

Advanced Energy Crystals are only 12 gold! Are you trying to fool me?”

“What? You’re actually so shameless to sell such crap? Stop trying to trick me!”

“What? This trash is for sale? Are you trying to swindle me?”

“What? You’re so ugly, and yet you still dare to come out and sell things? In Ling Tian City, the men are handsome and the women are beautiful..”

“What? ...”

.....

Centre of the Forgotten City, Emperor’s Imperial Residence.

The Lord of the Forgotten City, who was also the Emperor of the human world in the Forgotten Continent, was furious and his face was incredibly dark. He thought that the opening of the Forgotten City would be incredibly living and earn him a large sum of money. However, who would have thought that the current situation would be so bleak?

“Who can tell me just what is going on with that Ling Tian City? If an otherworlder wants to build a city, they need to come here to request for land and register it, and all of this requires my approval! How come I didn’t know about this at all?!” The Forgotten Emperor was outraged.

“Please quell your anger, your imperial majesty,” An elderly man with a white moustache said. “Your humble servant has already investigated Ling Tian City. Ling Tian City was constructed around 4 months ago. If it was built on your imperial majesty’s land, according to the rules, they would require your imperial majesty’s approval to build the city. However, Ling Tian City was constructed north of the Fairy Forest and south of the Azure Forest Village. With the Azure Forest Village as the boundary, it stretches to the southern side of the Fairy Forest. This lot of land does not

belong to humans, but the Ancient Fairy Clan. If one wishes to build on that land, one only needs to obtain the City Creation Token and the Chief of the Fairy Clan's approval. There would be no need to notify us... your humble servant simply can't understand why the Fairies, who have disappeared for so long, would suddenly reappear and work with those low-level otherworlders."

"Nonsense!" The Forgotten Emperor furiously flicked his sleeve. "Otherworlders are also humans! They should be under our reign! How can they construct a city without my approval?!"

"Yes, yes, your imperial majesty is correct. Their actions are simply disgraceful and rebellious." The Ministers could only agree with the Emperor, but he inwardly sighed... after all, these people were otherworlders and were not humans who belonged to the Forgotten Continent. As long as they didn't enter the human territories of the Forgotten Continent, they were not under the rule of the human emperor.

"And those Fairies and Dwarves! The Chronicles say that in the past they were the humans' best friends, but they vanished without a trace... hmph! And now those 2 clans have come out like ghosts. Not only have they not come to establish connections with us, but they're also helping those otherworlders! And now the Forgotten City has fallen into a crisis!" The Forgotten Emperor became more and more enraged.

Chapter 624 – The Emperor Visits

“Your imperial majesty is completely right! However, please do not be angry. The Fairy Clan and Dwarf Clan recorded in the Chronicles are from over 10,000 years ago. After being separated from the rest of the world for so many years, the current clans are no longer the clans they were in the past. They’ve made the mistake of allying with the otherworlders, but this is not too surprising. It’s possible that the 2 clans thought that those otherworlders were humans from the Forgotten Continent,” The white-moustached elderly man said.

“That’s right! It must be like that!”

“The Left Chancellor is right!”

“That’s right! Otherwise, why would the 2 clans that have disappeared for so long help those otherworlders? They definitely thought that they were residents of the Forgotten Continent. After all, we look the same!”

“Those otherworlders are simply too shameless! And those Fairies and Dwarves are simply too stupid!”

The Ministers hurriedly agreed, feeling more and more certain that this was the correct answer.

“Hmph!” The Forgotten Emperor angrily harrumphed as he stood up and said, “Now, all of the otherworlders are flooding towards Ling tian City, and the Forgotten City has been completely abandoned. What can we do to change this? Left Chancellor, what ideas do you have?”

The white-moustached elderly man shook his head, looking embarrassed as he replied, “Replying to your imperial majesty, the Fairy Clan is the most beautiful and pure clan in the entire world, and they are protected by Nature. The potions they make have been purified by Nature energy, and we cannot compete with such

things."

"As for the Dwarf Clan, all of the Dwarves are natural engineers and gourmands. As long as they have enough ingredients and time, they can even create Heaven's End grade and Mysterious God grade items. According to the Chronicles, back then, the Dwarves created a heaven-defying Saint Destroyer item—the Underworld God Cannon. Creating high-level equipment and Energy Crystal for them is as easy as reaching into a bag and pulling something out. We simply cannot compete against them in equipment or Energy Crystals either. As for food... ai, if your imperial majesty tried the Dwarves' food, you would know what we couldn't possibly compete in that either.

"There's also entertainment items, transportation, everyday-living items, and housing... with the Dwarves' talent and intelligence, we simply can't compete..."

"What about upgrading professions?" The Forgotten Emperor roared. "Upgrading professions is a power that only main cities have. Why are there so few otherworlders coming to upgrade their professions?! Haven't most of them reached LV50?"

"It's because... because although there are not many Fairies, they contain the power of Nature, and every Fairy is born with incredible power. It is incredibly simple for them to upgrade the professions of otherworlders, who are far inferior to them. Moreover... I heard that within Ling Tian City, they've been helping otherworlders obtain Hidden Professions."

The Forgotten Emperor's body swayed, and he almost coughed up a mouthful of blood.

When the Left Chancellor saw how dark the Emperor's face looked, he hurriedly said, "Please quell your anger, your imperial majesty. Perhaps the situation is not that bad. There's something that we best Ling Tian City in, and countless players will come to us for it."

“What is it?” The Forgotten Emperor asked, calming down slightly.

“The Pawn Shop,” The Left Chancellor said seriously. That’s right, the Forgotten City’s Pawn Shop was doing incredibly well.. because players had been going there to get rid of their ‘trash’ equipment.

This was because… Ling Tian City didn’t even have a Pawn Shop.

Pft… the mouthful of blood that the Forgotten Emperor was suppressing shot out of his mouth.

“Immediately tell all of the Pawn Shops to close… Close them all!!” The Forgotten Emperor screamed.

“Report!!”

Just as the Forgotten Emperor angrily coughed up a mouthful of blood, a light armour-clad messenger rushed in in an untimely fashion. He half-knelt as he yelled, “Reporting to your imperial majesty! I’ve just received news that the White Tiger’s Mayor and the Vermillion Bird’s Mayor personally attended Ling Tian City’s grand opening, presented gifts, and declared their intentions to forever maintain friendly relations.”

“What?!” The Forgotten Emperor shot to his feet. The Ministers all looked horrified and glanced around at each other, wondering why they would do such a thing for a city created by otherworlders.

The Forgotten Emperor’s face was extremely unsightly. After trembling in anger for a moment, he said in a low voice, “Prepare a teleport scroll. I want to see this city for myself.”

……

By now, Ling Tian City’s grand opening had reached its conclusion.

The Arena’s screen lit up, displaying the China Region’s Player

Level Rankings. After looking through the list, every player in the China Region gasped in shock.

Player Level Rankings (players with more EXP are ranked higher):

Number 1: Feng Xie Yu, LV59, Profession: Sword God, Affiliation: Ling Tian City

Number 2: Skyfall, LV57, Profession: Demon Summoner Representative, Affiliation: Ling Tian City

Number 3: Cute Qi Qi, LV57, Profession: Vermillion Bird's Representative, Affiliation: Ling Tian City

Number 4: Xiao Qiu Feng: LV57, Profession: Berserker, Affiliation: Ling Tian City

Number 5: Mu Bing Yao, LV56, Profession: Assassin, Affiliation: Ling Tian City

.....

.....

Without exception, everyone in the top 10 belonged to Ling Tian City!

Moreover, this didn't include the 'Emotionless Swordsman', someone who was once sixth on the Heaven Rankings, Winter of that Year, 'China's Number 1 Archer', the terrifying Deathgod of the Dark Night, or Ling Tian!

Before, it was always the Yan Huang Alliance and Skyfall Dynasty who monopolised the top 10 spots in the Player Level Rankings.

And now, Ling Tian City had taken all of those positions.

Of course, this was because of the Chilling Crystal Chalcedony that Ling Chen had obtained from the Godchild Peak. He had taken them out before the grand opening so that they could shock everyone with the Player Level Rankings at the grand opening.

They had completely achieved their desired effect—the players who looked at the Player Level Rankings were completely dumbfounded. There was not a single player from the Yan Huang Alliance or any of the other attacking factions in the top 10.

“We’re displaying the Player Level Rankings to show all players our strength. However, as everyone knows, levels do not necessarily represent strength. As such, after the new city is fully opened, we’ll use this Arena to establish the Heaven Rankings and Earth Rankings again. I believe that only we have the right to hold the Heaven Rankings and Earth Rankings.”

“The day that the World Boundaries open is coming soon, and it is after most players have reached their second profession upgrade. Countless other countries will be eyeing our country, and once the World Boundaries are opened, battles will be inevitable. I’m confident that Ling Tian City has the right to represent Chinese players and organize them. Ling Tian City also has the power to be the gathering place for players.”

“Our goal for the International Mock Battles is number 1. With Ling Tian City, it’s impossible that we won’t reach the top 3!”

“To look down on the Mystic Moon world and dominate everything under the heavens! That’s the true aim of Ling Tian City.”

“If you have similar goals and have blood filled with passion, then join Ling Tian City.”

With their shocking strength displayed to all of the players, these incredibly arrogant words caused countless Chinese players’ blood to boil as they were filled with hope and expectation.

After the grand opening concluded, the players in the Arena did not leave. There were thousands of application points, and the masses of players rushed towards them.

“I want to join! I’m a LV51 Shield Bearer! I have a full set of Gold

grade equipment, and all of my second profession upgrade's skills are LV2!"

"Who cares if you have a full set of Gold grade equipment now? I'm a LV53 Marksman! I also have a full set of Gold grade equipment. My dad's the Chairman of the K9 Group. If you take me, I'll bring in large amounts of financial support for Ling tian City!"

"I'm the Horizontal Cloud Guild's Guildmaster, Unrestrained, and I'm willing to bring my guild to join!"

"... Although I used to be part of the Yan Huang Alliance, I didn't participate in the attack! And I've left them already, so please take me... please take me..."

The ruckus coming from the Arena could be heard from almost 3 miles away, and it took Ling Chen and the others a great deal of effort to leave the Arena and return to the Administrative District. Ling Chen rubbed his ears and let out a long breath, "We finally escaped... Meng Xin, that was a stunning performance. You were able to remain so calm despite facing so many people."

"And you were so awe-inspiring as well! You were completely like a high and mighty Lady of the City!" Xiao Qi said as she laughed.

Yun Meng Xin shook her head as she smiled, "Actually, I was quite nervous, and most of the things I said were prepared by Xiao Xue. Now that that's finally over... it's just that big brother and the others will be busy for quite a while."

Xiao Qiu Feng and Yun Feng were responsible for recruitment and applications. Because Ling Tian City's opening was so amazing and even suppressed the Royal City, people would definitely fight to join.

"Don't worry, your big brother's very capable, and I don't need to say anything about the Cold Magistrate. They've both managed entire guilds, and I'm sure they know exactly what sorts of people

they should and shouldn't take," Li Xiao Xue said as she smiled. It's just that as the beautiful Lady of the City, your name will resound throughout the world, and your face is plastered all over the media. You'll need to make preparations."

Yun Meng Xin smiled but didn't say anything. She turned to look at Su'Er, who had a blank expression on her face as she looked ahead of her, and asked, "Su Su, what's wrong?"

Su'Er blinked and came back to her senses, but she did not immediately reply to Yun Meng Xin. She took out the Heavenly Star Horsetail Whisk and drew a semicircle in front of her.

"The aura of an Emperor," Su'Er said in a small voice. She turned as she said anxiously, "I'm not sure if I detected incorrectly, but there seems to be an Emperor outside the southern gate... and... and... he gives me a fiendish feeling."

"An Emperor?" Li Xiao Xue frowned. "What do you mean?"

"Ding..."

Ling Chen and Yun Meng Xin's communication devices sounded out as the guards at the southern gate spoke, "Reporting to the Lady of the City! There... A large crowd of NPCs suddenly appeared! The person at the head..." The player gulped as he said, "Seems to be the Emperor of the Forgotten City! He wants the Lady of the City to immediately go and receive him!"

The player's voice trembled. No one would be able to remain calm after an Emperor of the virtual world appeared before them.

Chapter 625 – Loudly Cursing

As the saying went, a tall tree catches the wind, and this was all the more so for Ling Tian City, which had now surpassed even the Royal City. Before the new city was opened, Ling Chen did not anticipate much, but after seeing the performance of the new city on its very first day, it was possible that it would attract the attention of the Royal City. After all, this new player's city had completely suppressed the Forgotten City.

However, he never thought that the Forgotten City would have responded so quickly—it was only the second day Ling Tian City was open—nor did he expect that the Forgotten Emperor would personally come! Evidently, the Forgotten City had suffered greatly, and the Forgotten Emperor was furious... well, this was to be expected. Putting the economic loss aside, the Royal City of the Continent had been completely suppressed by a newly-opened player's city. This would cause the Forgotten City and the Forgotten Emperor to lose an incredible amount of face. It would be strange if he wasn't furious.

The guards' report stated that the Forgotten Emperor didn't come in after arriving. Instead, he asked the Lady of the City to receive him... before they had even met, he was trying to assert his dominance.

"The Forgotten Emperor, the figure who holds the most authority and power in the Forgotten Continent, came to see our beautiful Lady of the City. This has never happened before in virtual gaming history. However, it's a pity that he doesn't bear good intentions." Li Xiao Xue's eyes narrowed as she looked towards Ling Chen.

Yun Meng Xin thought for a moment before softly saying, "The opening of Ling Tian City has caused the number of players going to the Forgotten City to decrease by 99%. Anyone would be furious. Moreover, the White Tiger's Mayor and Vermillion Bird's Mayor

came to the grand opening and congratulated us, so as the Emperor of the Forgotten City, he definitely wouldn't sit still.

"Let's go to the southern gate. After all, this is the Emperor of the entire Forgotten Continent, and Ling Tian City has only just opened. We can't afford to offend him, and we'll try to adapt to the situation," Yun Meng Xin slowly said as she frowned.

"No need!" Ling Chen suddenly stretched out his arm, stopping Yun Meng Xin as a cold smile flashed on his face. "Ling Tian City has just opened, and it is something that we built from our mutual efforts—we didn't use any despicable methods. The fact that the Forgotten City has lost players is simply because it is inferior to Ling Tian City, so we don't need to feel guilty at all.

"The Forgotten Emperor is the Emperor of the Forgotten Continent, but even if he rules over the entire Forgotten Continent, he has no right to order us players around. Ling Tian City has just been opened, so if he wants to visit and congratulate us, we will welcome him. However, if he's here to assert his dominance..." Ling Chen coldly laughed, "Why should we receive him as a guest? Meng Xin, you need to remember that you're the Lady of the City and that your decisions represent Ling Tian City. The Forgotten Emperor has arrogantly asked for you to receive him. If you really go, won't you be acknowledging that you fear him and that Ling Tian City is inferior to the Forgotten City? Could you have forgotten what you said the goal for Ling Tian City is?"

The goal of the Ling Tian City was to look down on the Mystic Moon world and dominate everything under the heavens. Even if it was the Forgotten City, they would completely surpass it!

Yun Meng Xin looked at Ling Chen in surprise for a moment before slightly smiling with her cherry blossom-like lips. "Thank you for your reminder, Ling Tian. I know what I should do now."

"What should we do now? Should we just ignore the Forgotten

Emperor... but that's the Emperor of the Forgotten Continent's humans, and he looks pretty strong," Xiao Qi said.

"You all stay here. I'll go to meet him." Ling Chen took a step forwards as he smirked, "A Vice-Lord receiving him should be giving him plenty of face!"

It would be incorrect so say that Ling Chen was not wary of the Forgotten Emperor at all. However, his personality was unyielding and staunch. If someone showed him respect, he would show them respect. If anyone disrespected him, even if it was the emperor of heaven, he would throw a pile of dog dung on his face.

"You're going by yourself?"

"I'll be enough," Ling Chen said as he nodded. "The grand opening has just concluded, and there'll be masses of new players joining. There are countless things that we need to take care of, so it's best to leave things like taking care of outsiders to someone like me. You can all go about your own business... Dia Wu, Bing Yao, make sure you protect them."

After saying this, Ling Chen took out a Spatial Orb and crushed it, transporting him to the southern gate of the Ling Tian City.

At this moment, the southern gate was opened, and after Ling Chen walked out, he felt an incredibly heavy sense of pressure. There were 100 or so people gathered outside of the southern gate clad in all sorts of armour and with icy expressions on their faces.All of them gave off a sharp and mighty aura. Within them, there was a middle-aged man riding on a warhorse. He was dressed in a purple-gold robe, and he had sword-like eyebrows, emanating a sense of majesty. This sort of might and majesty was not something that one could consciously emit—it was the air of an Emperor that was given off with every action he did and every word he said.

However, this Emperor did not look too happy.

Ling Chen did not expect there to be so many people. Those who came with the Emperor from the Forgotten City were undoubtedly experts among experts. Ling Chen thought for a moment before he grinned wildly as he strode over and said in an excited voice, “Aiya, aiya! I heard that the esteemed Forgotten Emperor came to congratulate our Ling Tian City on our opening. We’re simply in awe, and we are extremely grateful. Come, come, come, please enter!”

Ling Chen’s excited expression and passionate voice caused the Forgotten City’s soldiers to stare in surprise. When Ling Chen walked forwards and looked at the soldiers carrying things on their backs, his eyes lit up and he smiled as he continued speaking, “Wow, look at you. You even brought gifts? You’re too kind. Those gifts look pretty heavy, and you all must be tired from carrying them. Hurry and put them down, and I’ll get some people to take them in.”

The face of the soldier in golden armour closest to Ling Chen twisted, and he suddenly had the urge to spit in his face… they were all carrying attack or escape items of the highest grade in order to protect the Forgotten Emperor against any unexpected circumstances. What gifts?! Moreover, the Forgotten Emperor was here to assert his dominance, not to give gifts.

“Gifts? Hmph, his imperial majesty coming here is already giving you immense face, and yet you want gifts? Keep dreaming!” One of the gold-armoured soldiers couldn’t help but mock. They had come here to shake Ling Tian City, so he did not speak courteously at all.

“They’re not gifts?” Ling Chen’s face, which was filled with excitement and passion, instantly became cold as he spoke in pretend-shock, “Are you joking? When the Vermillion Bird’s Mayor and the White Tiger’s Mayor came, they all brought gifts. This is just the normal human way. Your Forgotten City rules over the Vermillion Bird City and White Tiger City, and yet you don’t

know something so simple? That's way too stingy. If this spreads, you might become the greatest laughingstock under the heavens."

The aggressive soldiers stared in shock as rage began to bubble inside them. They had come to make Ling Tian City pay, and yet, before they had even started, they had been criticised by this young man! What the hell was this? Moreover, this brat was speaking so arrogantly in front of the Emperor! What gives?

However, the Forgotten Emperor did not become angry, and he looked at Ling Chen with interest as he asked, "Who are you? Where is the Lady of your city? Your Lady should be a young woman."

"My name is Ling Tian, and I'm the Vice-Lord who has this title but doesn't involve himself with the management of the city," Ling Chen stated his name and position. "As for our Lady, since the Ling Tian City was just opened, she's been quite busy. As such, she doesn't have time to receive the Forgotten Emperor, so I'm here to do that."

After Ling Chen said this, the expressions of the Forgotten City's soldiers changed. Who was the Forgotten Emperor? He had graced them with his presence, and yet Ling Tian City's Lady had no time to meet him... and only a single person had come to receive them!

How dare they! To date, who had ever dared to receive an Emperor in this way?!

"Insolent!" The heavily-armoured soldier behind the Forgotten Emperor roared, "His imperial majesty coming here is Ling Tian City's glory! Hurry up and tell the Lady of your city to receive Him! If you continue to be so disrespectful, don't blame us for taking action against you!"

"Oh? Disrespectful?" The smile on Ling Chen's face disappeared as he glanced at the soldier and calmly said, "Then let me ask, why is our Lady not receiving you being disrespectful? Why does our Lady need to personally receive you at all?"

“What nonsense! His imperial majesty is the Emperor of the Forgotten Continent, the Emperor of all humans in the Forgotten Continent…”

“That’s right, you’re completely correct. The Forgotten Emperor is the Emperor of all humans of the Forgotten Continent,” Ling Chen cut him off, not seeming to care at all as he said in a leisurely manner, “But what does that have to do with us players? We’re from another world, and we don’t belong to the Forgotten Continent. The Forgotten Emperor belongs to your Emperor, but he has nothing to do with us players, and he has no right to rule over us or control us. Comparatively speaking, our Lady’s status is much higher than the Forgotten Emperor’s. By receiving you myself, as a Vice-Lord and as someone who is worshipped by countless people, we are already giving you enough face.”

The heavily-armoured soldier’s body quivered with rage as he yelled, “What an arrogant and ignorant otherworlder! You dare to look down on his imperial majesty? Are you trying to provoke all humans of the Forgotten Continent?”

“Provoke? Hahahaha…” Ling Chen laughed coldly. Suddenly, his expression became extremely icy. “You came without invitation and immediately demanded for our Lady to receive you—who’s provoking who here? You came here with ill intentions and acted so arrogantly, holding weapons in front of Ling Tian City’s entrance—who’s provoking who here? I came to receive you, and yet you said such arrogant and mocking words—who’s provoking who here?

“Moreover, all I did was speak the truth, and yet you say that I’m provoking you. What a joke! Could it be that the way you people from the Forgotten City act is always so arrogant and despicable?” Ling Chen coldly laughed.

Despite facing the Emperor of the Forgotten Continent, his words were incredibly sharp, and he did not intend to take even half a step back.

Chapter 626 – Lady of the City

Ling Chen's sudden rebuke completely shocked all of the soldiers from the Forgotten City. They had thought that Ling Tian City's Lady and management would have been scared witless under their immense power, and they thought that they would obediently sign an unfair contract and submit to the Royal City.

Who would have thought that a tiny, weak player would act so arrogantly and domineeringly in front of them? Moreover, what he said was completely true, causing them to go red with anger, but they were unable to say anything in return... because they had indeed come here to provoke them.

"Hahahaha," The Forgotten Emperor amiably smiled. He looked at Ling Chen as he slightly nodded and replied, "Your fame is well-deserved! Your arrogant personality is just like what the Azure Dragon's Mayor told me about. No less than expected from the player who went to the Lonely Spirit Ridge by himself and obtained the War God's inheritance. This aura is not ordinary at all."

When everyone heard that Ling Chen had received the War God's inheritance, their expressions immediately changed, revealing expressions of shock, and they looked at Ling Chen completely differently from before. The War God was a legend who had never been surpassed before and was the human who was the closest to the Saint Destroyer level. Over the past thousands of years, many experts had tried to obtain the War God's inheritance through the Hall of Heroic Spirits, but none of them had ever succeeded, and yet this otherworlder in front of them had actually succeeded!

The man in white, who was standing next to the Forgotten Emperor and hadn't said anything for the entire time, slightly raised his head and calmly swept his gaze across Ling Chen before looking away, looking as peaceful as a statue.

“The Forgotten Emperor flatters me,” Ling Chen replied. He wasn’t surprised that the Forgotten Emperor knew about him. When he had obtained the War God’s power, the Azure Dragon’s Mayor had already notified the Forgotten Emperor. Because of this, the Forgotten Emperor had been quite interested in him, and he had wanted to find him after he came to the Forgotten City.”

“I’ve had an interest in you since a long time ago, and I never thought that I’d meet you under such circumstances,” The Forgotten Emperor said unhurriedly. “There’s nothing to be said regarding your personal circumstances. I came here because of Ling Tian City. Since the Lady of the City isn’t willing to come out, talking to you is the same. Since Ling Tian City is named after you, I’m sure that talking to you will be more useful than talking to that girl.”

“Oh? I wonder what sort of ideas the Forgotten Emperor has about the development of our city,” Ling Chen asked with a cold smile.

“Ling Tian City is the only city that you otherworlders possess. However, do you know all of the processes and requirements for building a city?” The Forgotten Emperor said with a serious expression. “If you otherworlders want to construct a city, you need to first obtain a City Creation Token and then apply to the Forgotten City for registration. After receiving approval, you’ll be able to create a city at the place that the Forgotten City designates. Ling Tian City has completely violated these basic principles! According to the Forgotten Continent’s laws, I have the right to take away all of the rights you otherworlders have in this city, and I can even order this city be demolished! What do you have to say about this?”

Ling Chen coldly gazed at the Forgotten Emperor, waiting for him to finish. He wanted to know just how thick the Forgotten Emperor’s skin had to be to say this so seriously and righteously.

Just as Ling Chen was about to speak, a clear and elegant voice

suddenly sounded out from behind him.

“I can answer this question for you.”

When everyone turned to look at the source of this voice, their eyes were instantly attracted to the figure, unable to look away. A young woman in her early twenties slowly walked to Ling Chen’s side. Her beauty was simply peerless, and she looked like a goddess who was untainted by the world, making everyone think the same thing...

A goddess has descended!

All of the Forgotten City’s soldiers who were present were incredibly strong; however, all of them stared with their eyes and mouths wide open, looking soulless. Even the Forgotten Emperor stared for a while before replying, “You should be the Lady of the City. 15 minutes ago, I heard that the Lady of the Ling Tian City was as beautiful as a goddess. It seems that this is true.”

“Meng Xin, why did you come here?” Ling Chen asked in surprise. Before he went to meet the Forgotten Emperor, he told Yun Meng Xin to not come and just go about her own business.

Yun Meng Xin charmingly smiled, looking like a beautiful tree peony blossoming in the snow. Her smile could make anything seem dim in comparison. “Since I’ve become the Lady of Ling Tian City, I should take on the responsibilities that I ought to. I can’t forever hide behind you. Su Su just said that the events today could cause disaster for Ling Tian City, so as the Lady of the City I have a duty to come here.”

Ling Chen looked at her deeply and tapped his nose as he smiled and replied, “Alright, let me see what you have planned then.”

Ling Chen glanced at the Forgotten Emperor and took 2 steps back, his intention clear... since the Lady of the City’s here, she will talk to you herself. There’s nothing else for me to do.

“The Forgotten Emperor flatters me.” Only now did Yun Meng

Xin respond to the Forgotten Emperor's praise before she slowly said, "As for the problem that the Forgotten Emperor raised, you'll be able to find the answer within Section 263 of the Forgotten Continent's Code. If players want to construct a city within the territory of the humans in the Forgotten Continent, the process would be as you described. However, Ling Tian City was not built on human territory—instead, the land belongs to the Fairies. The Forgotten Continent Chronicles have countless records demonstrating this, so I'm sure the Forgotten Emperor knows about this. Because the land belongs to the Fairy Clan, according to Section 263, if we want to build a city here, we only need to obtain a City Creation Token and obtain the consent of the Fairy Clan's Chief. We do not need the approval of the Forgotten City."

"If the Forgotten Emperor has any doubts, you can read Section 263 of the Forgotten Continent's Code," Yun Meng Xin said with a calm and cold voice.

These words caused the Forgotten Emperor's face to redden with anger. How could he not know all this? While they were in court, the Left Chancellor had even mentioned this. However, he simply didn't expect otherworlders to know about the Forgotten Continent's laws, and he thought that he would be able to scare Ling Tian City into submission. Who would have thought that this beautiful woman would have given him a gentle slap in the face.

Admit it? The Forgotten Emperor not knowing the Forgotten Continent's laws would be an utter disgrace.

Don't admit it? The laws were clearly written in the Forgotten Continent's Code, and anyone with eyes would be able to read them. Not only would he not be able to extricate himself from this situation, he would be called a shameless liar.

However, the Forgotten Emperor was indeed the Emperor. Without incredibly thick skin, how could one be the Emperor? He waved his hand as he said in a serious manner, "I'm even clearer about this than you. However, the situation can be viewed either

way. Since you went through the pains of constructing this city, I did not plan to take this issue up with you. However, I did come here with the intention to bring you to account." The Forgotten Emperor's expression darkened as he said with a hint of fury, "The Forgotten City is the humans' Royal City—this is true for both the humans of the Forgotten Continent and for you otherworlders! Yesterday, the Forgotten City was freely opened to you otherworlders, but your Ling Tian City completely ruined this and caused massive losses to the Forgotten City! Do you not feel guilty about this?"

"Guilty? Why should we feel guilty?" Facing the Forgotten Emperor's cold and sharp gaze, Yun Meng Xin maintained her calm and elegant expression, a brilliant smile on her face that could stun anyone. "It's true that large numbers of players left the Forgotten City for Ling Tian City. This is because Ling Tian City sells better items at a lower price."

"We have Forging and Entertainment systems that are more advanced than those of the Forgotten City's, and we also have more beautiful and comfortable residences. Moreover, the air here is much purer than that of the Forgotten City's, and we can also upgrade professions... we surpass the Forgotten City in almost every aspect. It's Ling Tian City's glory to be able to supply such luxuries to players at a cheap price, and as for the Forgotten City losing players, that's something out of our control. I would like to, in turn, ask the Forgotten Emperor—if you could only buy dirt in the Forgotten City but gold in Ling Tian City, what would you choose?

"As for the losses suffered by the Forgotten City, as the Lady of Ling Tian City, I can only give you my apologies. However, survival of the fittest is one of the laws of nature, and is one of the laws that push a Continent to improvement. Even the Royal City is bound by such principles. As such, although you have my condolences, I do not feel any guilt, only pride."

As the Emperor of the Forgotten Continent, the Forgotten Emperor gave off quite an imposing aura. However, a weak girl like Yun Meng Xin was not suppressed by his aura and did not give in at all. The cool and elegant airs she gave off caused even these experts to respect her. Her words cut to the bone and showed no weakness at all. Ling Chen silently looked at Yun Meng Xin from behind her, marvelling inwardly.

This was only her second day as the Lady of the City, and perhaps it was only today that she realised she was the ruler of this city. When she found her place, her talent and abilities started to be displayed... perhaps in the future she would become a qualified... no, a perfect Empress of players.

Chapter 627 – Measure For Measure

“Is that so?” The Forgotten Emperor gave a contemptuous smile as he said with a cold voice, “Then can you explain where all of your advantages came from? Everyone knows that Ling Tian City was built because the ancient Fairy Clan and Dwarf Clan, who had hidden away for a long time, suddenly appeared and joined Ling Tian City. Haha… the Fairy Clan and Dwarf Clan were both super powers of the ancient world. The Fairy Clan’s strength greatly exceeds that of humans, and the Dwarf Clan’s wisdom and talent is not something that humans can compare to. With their help Ling Tian City’s development is something no one can match.

“However, the Fairy Clan and Dwarf Clan were both great friends of the humans of the Forgotten Continent in the past. It’s quite evident why they would help you otherworlders after reappearing again.” A hint of rage appeared in the Forgotten Emperor’s voice, “Because you tricked the Fairy Clan and Dwarf Clan into believing that you were humans of the Forgotten Continent, which was why they unconditionally helped you! Otherwise, why would such noble existences help you otherworlders when you possess such little strength and have no connection to them?”

The Forgotten Emperor became angrier as he spoke, and he looked as if he was rebuking a shameless liar who had deceived the hearts of the Fairies and Dwarves. All of the soldiers looked furious as well. To them, what the Forgotten Emperor said was definitely the truth—otherwise, why would the Fairies and Dwarves, who had possessed such good relations with the humans of the Forgotten Continent, desert the Royal City and help these otherworlders?

Ling Chen smirked and almost laughed out loud. Yun Meng Xin raised her beautiful eyebrows, also wanting to laugh. Just as she was about to reply, a clear voice sounded from above, “Emperor of the humans, I think you’re worrying too much. We Fairies most

certainly have the ability to distinguish between you."

"We are also the same." A deep and resounding voice sounded out, "We Dwarves know how to differentiate between favours and grudges, and we have our morals. Helping these otherworlders is what we want—no, it's our glory to. More accurately speaking, we're helping each other.

Hearing these voices, Yun Meng Xin and Ling Chen simultaneously turned around and said in surprise, "Chief Greenwood, Chief Dilo, why are you here?"

The 2 voices belonged to Greenwood and Dita. Greenwood was wearing green clothes, and he slowly descended from above as warmly smiled, "When these people came I was already here. Because there are incredibly strong people in their ranks and they seemed to have hostile intentions, I came here just in case."

Greenwood was a Fairy as well as one of Ling Tian City's strongest experts, so he was naturally one of the strongest shields of the city. When he felt a threat from these people of course he would stay close in case he was needed.

"I also happened to pass by," Chief Dilo smiled. "I couldn't help but jump out when I heard that."

"Very well," Yun Meng Xin smiled, "it would be perfect for you to explain."

"Fairy? Dwarf?" The Forgotten Emperor stared at Greenwood and Dilo. When Greenwood approached he could clearly feel the surrounding air becoming warmer and purer, and even his vision cleared. It was stated in the records that only the most powerful Fairies could cleanse the environment around them. Dilo, on the other hand, was quite stout with dark skin and muscular limbs. Combined with his wise-looking face, he looked exactly like the Dwarves described in the records!

This was the Forgotten Emperor's first time meeting a Fairy and

a Dwarf, and he immediately guessed what they were.

“Greenwood, the current Chief of the Fairies,” Greenwood calmly spoke.

“Dilo, the current Chief of the Dwarves,” Dilo followed.

No matter if it was Greenwood or Dilo, their expressions were incredibly calm when facing the Forgotten Emperor, as if they were facing a normal human. This was indeed how they felt—in their eyes, this Emperor was the same as any other human, and he didn’t give them any pressure.

The man in white next to the Forgotten Emperor opened his eyes, his gaze resting on Greenwood’s body for 3 seconds before lowering his head and speaking in a voice that only the Forgotten Emperor could hear, “Mysterious God.”

These 2 words caused the Forgotten Emperor’s eyelids to jump, and his aura seemed to die down a little. The Mysterious God grade was the highest point humans had ever reached, and there were no more than 5 humans in the Forgotten Continent who had reached the Mysterious God grade. Any one of them could sweep across the lands unhindered, completely invincible.

The first Fairy he had encountered at Ling Tian City was actually Mysterious God grade, completely shocking the Forgotten Emperor.

“You are the Fairy Clan’s Chief?” The Forgotten Emperor looked at Greenwood as his heart quivered. While the Fairy Clan’s Chief stood there, he seemed like an incredibly peaceful ancient tree, giving off a mysterious aura. Under his gaze, the Forgotten Emperor felt as if he could completely see through him. His Emperor’s aura was unable to compete with that aura, and his Emperor’s might seemed to be wrapped in something warm and was erased.

The Emperor of humans and the Emperor of Fairies were on

totally different levels!

This sort of feeling completely shocked the Forgotten Emperor, and it made him feel extremely uncomfortable. He struggled to maintain his airs of an Emperor as he said seriously, “Who would have thought that the Fairy Clan and Dwarf Clan recorded in the Chronicles hadn’t truly disappeared. Being able to meet the Fairy Clan and Dwarf Clan is my honour. If I knew earlier that your Clans had reappeared, I would have immediately come to visit instead of only coming now. After all, the Fairies and Dwarves were best friends with us humans in ancient times. However, I have a few questions that I would like to ask the 2 Chiefs.”

“We already know what you want to ask,” Greenwood calmly said, his gaze as still as water. “I want to tell you that we Fairies can clearly tell the difference between humans of the Forgotten Continent and otherworlders. We joined Ling Tian City because our otherworlder friends saved our Clan, allowing us to escape and return to the Forgotten Continent by dispelling the calamity of our Clan. As such, no matter if it’s to repay them or for our future prospects, we decided to stay in Ling Tian City and make it our new home, doing our best to strengthen it. Moreover, this place belongs to the Fairy Clan, and these otherworlders have our consent to build their city here, so there are no conflicts with the Forgotten Continent’s laws.”

The Forgotten Emperor stared in surprise before saying emotionally, “Chief Greenwood, even if those otherworlders coincidentally saved you, you should know that since ancient times the Fairy Clan had been best friends with the humans! And now you’ve helped these otherworlders, and their Ling Tian City has caused detrimental impacts to the humans’ Royal City… isn’t this violating the wishes of your ancestors and harming the relations between our people?”

Greenwood calmly smiled before he said, “The Forgotten Emperor’s words are not quite correct. Back then, our Clan hid

away because we felt guilty that we were not able to save the Dwarf Clan. The other reason was that we wholeheartedly treated the humans as our friends, but the humans' actions caused our ancestors to completely lose hope in them and fall into despair. The 'friendship' that we had no longer existed at that point. I'm sure you, as the Emperor of the humans, should understand all of this."

The Forgotten Emperor was speechless.

"All of that is in the past, and there's no need to bring all of that up again thousands of years later. The current Fairy Clan is a new Clan, and what we want to do now depends only on what we want to do. What we do has nothing to do with the Fairies from thousands of years ago."

"Us Dwarves are the same," Chief Dilo continued. "Back then when our Dwarf Clan was going through troubling times, the humans, who we viewed as friends, chose to stay silent... finally, in order to protect the Dwarf Clan's lineage, we could only give up on everything and chose to separate ourselves from the rest of the world, making it impossible for anyone to find us. 10,000 years later we also almost went extinct, but it was these otherworlders who saved our Clan. This city is the new home that we've built with these otherworlders, so why shouldn't we invest everything in it?"

While Greenwood's words were as calm as a breeze, Dilo's words were much more passionate. Their allegiance towards Ling Tian City could not be shaken.

The Forgotten Emperor did not expect this at all, causing him to stare in shock, unable to say anything.

He had thought that the Dwarf Clan and Fairy Clan had been tricked into helping Ling Tian City, otherwise why would they help these mere players? He had even wanted to bring these 2 Clans to the Forgotten City, using their power and wisdom to bring

the Forgotten City to new heights.

However, he suddenly realised how laughable his thinking had been. Not only had they not been deceived, but they were also filled with gratitude towards the players and treated Ling Tian City as their home! Their words expressed how determined they were to stay.

The Fairy Clan was kind, gentle, and loved peace, while the Dwarf Clan was kind, stubborn, and had intense personalities. It was essentially impossible for them to betray these otherworlders.

Chapter 628 – Guardian of the Ling Tian City

The Forgotten Emperor's face became more and more unsightly. The things that he was going to accuse Ling Tian City of now became things that slapped him in the face. When he saw how calm Ling Chen and Yun Meng Xin looked with a slight hint of mockery in their eyes, he felt like a clown when he looked at Greenwood and Dilo.

"Alright... indeed, we don't have the right to interfere with the decisions of the Fairy Clan and Dwarf Clan. I was just worried that you had been deceived. Since you're doing this willingly, we can rest at ease and won't have to worry." The Forgotten Emperor spoke quite stiffly, and everyone could hear the jealousy and reluctance in his voice. The power of the Fairies and the wisdom of the Dwarves were enough to drive the human Emperor crazy.

"However, there's something concerning the lives of millions of people that you've neglected!" The Forgotten Emperor raised his hand, an expression of anger on his face, "Ling Tian City's scale is extremely large, so large that it can be compared to the other 4 main cities. Section 6 of the Forgotten Continent's Code requires that when a human city reaches a certain size, it must have a City Lifeline. It is not to be open before it has a City Lifeline nor are people allowed to enter it! This is clearly written in the Forgotten Continent's Code. However, your Ling Tian City doesn't have a City Lifeline! Without a City Lifeline, an Elemental Storm could break out at any moment, costing countless people their lives. Ling Tian City should be closed and everyone within it should be relocated!"

This was the last 'crime' that the Forgotten Emperor could accuse them of. However, anyone who knew even a bit about the Fairy Clan would be able to easily rebut this.

Yun Meng Xin smiled as she calmly replied, “The larger a city is, the more people will enter it. The more Mages there are, the more active the Elemental Essence within the city will be. After a long period of time, the Elemental Essence can cause Elemental Storms, which City Lifelines are used to suppress. This is the case for all human cities within the Forgotten continent. However, this is different for us here. This is because this is the territory of the Fairy Clan, and the city is close to the Fairy Forest.

“The Fairies’ Nature energy is calm and mild, and no matter how berserk the Elemental Essence is, it’ll become calm under the influence of the Nature energy from the Fairy Forest, preventing Elemental Storms. This is something that everyone who knows the Fairies understands. This is also recorded in the Forgotten Continent’s Chronicles. In other words, Ling Tian City will never experience an Elemental Storm, so we don’t need a City Lifeline.”

“Then what about a Guardian? Section 11 of the Forgotten Continent’s Code requires that a city that is larger than a certain size requires a Guardian who can protect it against disasters, and it needs to be at least Heaven’s End grade! Without a sufficiently-powerful Guardian, how can you keep this city standing, and how can you allow its residents to live peacefully?” The Forgotten Emperor asked. By now, he was grasping at straws.

There was indeed a law within the Forgotten Continent’s Code that required cities above a certain size to have a powerful Guardian. There were countless powerful beasts, demons, and devils in the Forgotten Continent, and if a large city didn’t have a powerful Guardian, countless residents would die if calamity struck. The Guardians of the 4 main cities and the Royal City were appointed by the Moon God Clan. The Azure Dragon City’s Guardian was the Azure Dragon, and the Vermillion Bird City’s Guardian was the deceased Vermillion Bird.

However, this was only a necessity for the Forgotten Continent’s cities! There had never been such a requirement for player’s cities.

Asking players to find a Heaven's End grade being to protect a player's city was almost impossible.

An exasperated look appeared on Yun Meng Xin's face, and just as she was about to speak, a thundering voice came from above.

"Who... said... Ling... Tian... City... had... no... Guardian!"

This voice sounded like an extremely large bell ringing right next to one's ears, causing everyone's organs to tremble and making them feel incredibly uneasy. At the same time, a pressure as heavy as a mountain descended from above, making it difficult for everyone to breathe.

"Who is it? Who's talking?!"

Sensing a powerful enemy, the Forgotten City's soldiers all looked around, feeling bewildered. They lifted their shields and raised their weapons, forming a protective circle around the Forgotten Emperor. The peaceful man in white also opened his eyes, staring at the ground far away.

The low voice caused Ling Chen to pause in surprise because it sounded quite familiar. His eyes stared... could this voice be... no way...

Rumble...

The ground shook and began to shake more and more as if it was bubbling. Suddenly, a long crevice appeared on the ground, and a mountain broke through it, rising higher and higher.

"What... What is that?!"

"Protect the Emperor!!"

This sudden abnormality caused everyone to gape in shock, staring at the strange mountain rising from the ground. When the mountain rose up nearly 50 metres, everyone's pupils expanded and contracted many times.

The mountain was actually moving, and rocks dropped off it as it

swayed as did some of the trees growing on it. The mountain became taller and taller, turning into a gigantic body that slowly stood up as everyone stared, dumbfounded.

“Lord guardian god! It’s lord guardian god!” Chief Dilo cheered happily, raising both of his hands as his body trembled with excitement.

A giant, which seemed to be made out of a mountain, appeared before everyone. It was covered with rocks and stones, and every part of its body, including its head, limbs, body, and ‘muscles’, were all formed from rocks. The only exception was the gigantic eye at the centre of its head. It was 100 metres wide horizontally, but this would not have been much if not for the face that it stood so tall vertically, looking absolutely terrifying. The Forgotten City’s soldiers tilted their heads as far back as possible in order to fully look at it. There were cries of shock from Ling Tian City, and everyone within stared at the rocky giant.

Everyone’s mouths were wide open, and they were unable to close them. This was definitely the largest creature that they had ever seen in their lives, and it was bigger than anything they could imagine. Comparatively, they were smaller than even its pinky finger. When facing this rocky giant, just seeing how big it was could cause someone to have difficulty breathing, let alone the pressure it was giving off, completely shocking the wits out of them.

“Mountain Giant!” Ling Chen yelled out its name as an expression of shock surfaced on his face, his mind almost exploding... why would this creature, which was sleeping at the Nameless Ridge, appear here?

“Isn’t this the Mountain Giant who was protecting the Dwarves?” Yun Meng Xin asked with a soft voice, her face extremely pale. Even if she was 10 times as brave, she would still feel scared when facing such a large creature.

“Mm,” Ling Chen nodded, “but I don’t know why it appeared here. However, it’s definitely not an enemy.”

Chief Dilo excitedly took a few steps forward as he yelled as loudly as he could, “Lord guardian god, why are you here? Are you here to see us?”

“Hahahaha,” the Mountain Giant gently laughed. Although it was quite gentle, its voice was so loud and booming that it felt like there were hammers smashing on everyone’s eardrums. “I’m incredibly glad that you’ve rejoined the world and escaped disaster, so my greatest wish has been fulfilled. I was planning on sleeping there for a long time and protecting the last remnants of the Titan’s existence, but after being with the Dwarves for over 10,000 years, I couldn’t let you go and followed you all here. Having a large body impeded my progress, and it took me a few months to move here underground. I’ve been watching you all from underground ever since I arrived.

“It seems like these humans are complaining that there is no Guardian for Ling Tian City. In that case, how about I become the Guardian of Ling Tian City? As long as the earth exists, I will not die. I will bury all those who wish to harm Ling Tian City.”

The Mountain Giant’s words reached the Forgotten Emperor and the soldiers’ ears as well as everyone in Ling Tian City, causing everyone’s vision and minds to tremble.

Such a large and terrifying giant wanted to be Ling Tian City’s Guardian?!

A player’s city was going to have a Guardian that could rival those of main cities?!

All of the players were once again deeply shocked.

“That’s great! This is a great honour for Ling Tian City.” Chief Dilo’s face glowed red with excitement. However, his expression froze as he hurriedly turned to Ling Chen and Yun Meng Xin, “Ah,

you should be the ones to make a decision…”

Yun Meng Xin turned to Ling Chen, seeking his opinion. Since Ling Chen had known it for a while and had even fought about it, he unhesitatingly nodded.

Yun Meng Xin understood and raised her head as she said, “As the Lady of Ling Tian City, I give you the title of Guardian of Ling Tian City and ask you to defend Ling Tian City when it faces danger. I will announce this to the whole world within 3 days!”

“Hahahaha!” The Mountain Giant laughed and suddenly squatted down. A yellow light flashed when he turned into a mountain and sank back down into the earth amid rumbling.

When everything became quiet again, the place where the Mountain Giant had appeared was restored to its former state. Even the long crevice was completely gone, leaving not even a trace that it had been there.

“It is a Heaven’s End grade being, but because of its ability to control the earth, not even 3 Mysterious God grade beings would be able to contend with it,” The man in white said to the Forgotten Emperor.

Forgotten Emperor: “……”

“Looks like there’s no need for the Forgotten Emperor to worry about us not having a Guardian,” Yun Meng Xin said. “It seems like the Forgotten Emperor cares about Ling Tian City deeply and has given many suggestions. However, it seems like the Forgotten Emperor was worrying unnecessarily. I wonder what other suggestions you have.”

The Forgotten Emperor’s face was extremely unsightly. Just the Mysterious God grade Fairy and the Heaven’s End grade Mountain Giant was enough to make him fear Ling Tian City. He felt like he had eaten 100 dead flies when he heard Yun Meng Xin’s words.He dryly laughed and replied, “Looks like I was worrying

unnecessarily. In that case, I'll take my leave now... let's go."

Feeling incredibly angry and humiliated, the Forgotten Emperor did not want to stay for even an extra second, so he directly turned to leave. Yun Meng Xin's eyes glimmered as she asked, "Since the Forgotten Emperor has come all this way, don't you want to take a look around the city?"

"No need," The Forgotten Emperor's face was dark as he coldly replied, "When I want to take a look, I'll come again. Also, there's something that you should remember—do everything in moderation. After all, this is the Forgotten Continent!"

After saying this, the Forgotten Emperor flicked his hand and a teleportation channel appeared beneath the feet of the people from the Forgotten City. A white light flashed as they disappeared.

They had come in an overbearing and aggressive manner, but they had left in shame and humiliation.

Chapter 629 – The Ling Tian City's Revenge

When Greenwood saw the Forgotten Emperor and his entourage leave in shame, he closed his eyes as he sighed and said, "Jealousy is the root of all sins. Even the Emperor of the humans is not immune from it."

He could tell that if it wasn't for the might that he and the Mountain Giant possessed, the furious Forgotten Emperor wouldn't have left so easily.

"Ling Tian, we're going to have to change the development plan for Ling Tian City. Currently, Ling Tian City has affected the Forgotten City greatly, so it was no surprise that the Forgotten Emperor personally came. If Ling Tian City continues to develop like this, the Forgotten City definitely won't stay silent. The Forgotten Emperor's last sentence was correct – this is the Forgotten Continent. Ling Tian City is only a player's city that has not fully stabilised yet and doesn't have the right to fight back against the Royal City," Yun Meng Xin said worriedly.

After the Forgotten Emperor left, Ling Chen's gaze became cold. He looked towards where the Forgotten Emperor had been and slowly shook his head, "Actually, Xiao Xue mentioned to me early in the morning today about slowing down the development of Ling Tian City. She is worried that the Forgotten City will retaliate. It's simply too abnormal for a player's city to surpass the system's Royal City, and it's not something that should happen. It's possible that this could negatively affect the China Region. At the time I agreed, but now…"

Ling Chen coldly laughed, "Since the Forgotten Emperor personally came to provoke us and try to get us to slow down through threats, we'll have to be even more extravagant!

"Meng Xin, tell Xiao Xue to open everything within 5 days and that all of our enterprises are to surpass the Forgotten City's

counterparts as their basic goals. Keep the Hidden Professions, but tell the 7 Elders to also do normal profession upgrades, which give players an extra 50 HP and 50 MP. This can be done through diluting some Fairy Fountain Water. Also, release lots of quests for players in the city. Make the quests easier than those from the Royal City, but make sure that they're still challenging and exciting while giving much better rewards. Release special and hidden quests now and then as well.

"Also, the plan to expand Ling Tian City must be immediately carried out. We want to surpass the Forgotten City's scale as soon as possible! Our current short-term goal is for players to forget the Forgotten City's existence," Ling Chen spoke so calmly that everyone couldn't help but stare. "Even if it's the Forgotten Continent's human Emperor, he needs to pay a price for threatening Ling Tian City."

Ling Chen's words caused Yun Meng Xin, Greenwood, and Dilo to all stare in shock.

While Ling Tian City had just opened, the Forgotten City was the Royal City of the humans and had thousands of years of history. Could Ling Tian City truly compete with the Forgotten City?

The answer, of course, was yes!

This was because the Royal City was only targeted towards the humans of the Forgotten Continent. To players, it was just the Royal City of the game – they did not hold any allegiance to it or have any fond memories of it. After all, they had only known about it for less than a year. What they wanted was simply to upgrade their professions, buy better equipment, and obtain more EXP. They would go to whoever could give them these things. It had nothing to do with which city had a longer history.

As such, if Ling Tian City truly did as Ling Chen had just said, the Forgotten City would be the first Royal City surpassed by a player's city in virtual world history. With the help of the Fairies and

Dwarves, this was completely possible.

“Alright!” Yun Meng Xin nodded, “We’ll do as you say.”

Anyone who heard this would feel a bit uncertain. After all, if the Forgotten City was forced into a corner, they might retaliate in desperation. However, since Ling Chen had said this, no matter if it was Yun Meng Xin, Greenwood, or Dilo, none of them felt that this idea was implausible.

.....

Ling Tian City and its beautiful Lady instantly became the discussion of the entire world and the headlines of many media organizations. Although it was a player’s city, it had completely turned upside-down everyone’s perceptions of a player’s city. Now, Ling Tian City was no longer just a city but also a milestone in virtual gaming history.

The beautiful lady’s name was known by almost everyone in the world. Putting aside her status as the Lady of the City, her stunningly beautiful looks were enough to make her world-famous. Upon seeing her face, countless people couldn’t believe that such beauty could exist in the world. Her beauty was shown in almost every corner of the world, and more and more people marvelled at how a woman could be so beautiful. In just a few days, her fan base grew to be larger than even those of first-rate celebrities.

However, revealing her appearance in public also brought some negative impacts. Of course, those negative impacts were not towards the Ling Tian City. It was said that countless lovers in China broke up and that countless men screamed Yun Meng Xin’s name day and night after the grand opening. There were also countless men rushing to Beijing from various countries, wanting to see Yun Meng Xin with their own eyes... However, no one had succeeded yet. Now, Yun Meng Xin was the most commonly-discussed topic among men. It was said that if the beautiful Lady

found a boyfriend, countless Chinese men would commit suicide.

There were now countless players who wanted to join Ling Tian City. This was especially after players personally saw Ling Tian City's Guardian – once the news spread even more players wanted to join.

Moreover, Ling Tian City's development did not slow at all. Instead, many new facilities and events were opened – it was as if they wanted to surpass the Royal City in every way. No matter if they were Profession-related things, shopping, dining, entertainment, relaxation, Alliance-related things, or housing... everything completely eclipsed the Forgotten City. Now, anyone who went to the Forgotten City to upgrade their profession or buy things was viewed as an idiot.

The explosively popular real estate had also just been released. The Dwarves' constructions were all beautiful and elegant, and they surpassed anything that the humans had ever made. Apart from the ones that were reserved, all of the houses were immediately snatched up by players, and the prices of the ones in better locations were sold for more than 1 billion gold. Despite this, houses were still desperately fought over by the bosses and leaders of guilds, which eventually resulted in battles between guilds. Some people, despite having the money, didn't have the opportunity to buy the house of their dreams, and they could only howl in pain...

There were more and more guilds moving to and joining Ling Tian City. Although they had to pass through very strict requirements, Ling Tian City's Alliance District was completely filled in just 2 weeks with more than 30 million players. At this point, the Yan Huang Alliance couldn't even be compared to it.

With so many impressive guilds joining Ling Tian City, the Skyfall Dynasty, who was in charge of all these guilds, was bursting with pride. Even the lowest-ranked players in the Skyfall Dynasty were viewed with admiration wherever they went.

Although the 3 Heavenly Kings worked early in the morning to late at night, they were incredibly happy. As the guild that had participated in the defence of the city, they were naturally treated much better than those who had joined afterwards. Thinking back to how they had almost protested against joining the Ling Tian City, they almost smacked themselves... they must have been kicked in the head by a donkey and then had a door smashed into their faces.

Of course, not all players could enjoy everything that the Ling Tian City had. Even now, those who were part of the guilds that had participated in the attacks against the new city were unable to buy anything within Ling Tian City. Moreover, they were easily recognisable... those who did not have a full set of Gold grade equipment were the evildoers who had attacked Ling Tian City! Whenever people saw these players, they looked at them with contempt and disgust... you were so greedy as to attack the city? Serves you right! That's karma for you! What goes around comes around!

Before, these players, who belonged to various powerful guilds, were all high and mighty. Now, they felt completely inferior to everyone around them... including those belonging to the Yan Huang Alliance. Adding on to the disparity in their equipment, they were now at the lowest rung of Chinese players. Their guilds were now far, far weaker than other normal guilds.

The consequences of this was evident. Players started to withdraw from these guilds en masse, and there were more and more of them. When the players who had left bought a full set of Gold grade equipment and began proudly walking around, even those who were extremely loyal couldn't help but feel shaken and start to leave. Even if the bosses of the guilds wanted to, they wouldn't be able to stop them from leaving.

With so many of their players leaving, these once world-famous, large guilds were on the verge of collapse. The bosses and leaders

frowned day and night, regretting their greed to their bones. Recently, they had repeatedly gone to Ling Tian City to lower their heads to Yun Meng Xin and beg for forgiveness. However, before they could even see Yun Meng Xin, they had been rudely chased away.

From the very first day of its opening, Ling Tian City had silently taken its cruel revenge against these guilds. Without mobilising even a single soldier, they had forced these guilds to the verge of collapse.

However, with Ling Chen's personality, how could that be all there was to his revenge? After the new city was able to stably stand on its feet, the Dark Night finally moved out, mercilessly assassinating the high-ranking players of the Yan Huang Alliance and other guilds that had participated in the attack.

This was the first time the entire Dark Night had operated together. Players once again witnessed how terrifying the Dark Night was through this large-scale assassination operation.

Most of the high-ranking players in large guilds were experts among experts, and whenever they went out, they would be surrounded by many other experts as well. It could be said that assassinating them was extremely difficult.

However, if the assassins were from the Dark Night...

In just a week, every one of the high-ranking players in the 30 or so guilds had been assassinated at least 10 times. None of them had been able to escape a single time. Although they were constantly surrounded by other experts and always had their equipment and defences ready, as soon as they walked out of their guild's territory, there would always be a deathgod's sickle at their throats. Most of the time, they didn't even know how they had died. The guards around them were unable to react in time at all, and they could only see a black figure flash past and the target's corpse falling to the ground.

All of the high-ranking players in those guilds were struck with fear. From the second day of the Dark Night's assassinations, they started to live in deep fear, turtling up within their guilds' headquarters. Whenever they had to leave their headquarters, death would always descend upon them quickly. The one who suffered the most was the Black Flames Alliance's Black Flames Wild Gale. The Alliance Master of the Black Flames Alliance had once been on the Earth Rankings, but he had been killed more than 30 times over the past 7 days, and he was now a pitiful LV20 player. The set of equipment that he had worked so hard to obtain had been completely dropped... from that day onwards, he stayed within his guild's territory, refusing to come out.

The Dark Night's revenge caused the people within those guilds to become even more terrified, and more and more people began to leave these guilds for Ling Tian City.

Now, even if the leaders and bosses of these guilds were begged by someone on their knees, they definitely wouldn't have repeated the decision to attack Ling Tian City. In the end, the Golden Age Alliance's Mo Gu Lin couldn't take it anymore and brought all of the executives of the alliance to Ling Tian City, begging to see Yun Meng Xin and offering to apologise and provide compensation to Ling Tian City.

After begging in front of the city gates for more than an hour, Yun Meng Xin finally replied: the Golden Age Alliance was to compensate the Ling Tian City with one-off payment of 12 billion gold, and it has to give 20% of its earnings in the virtual world to Ling Tian City each year. When Ling Tian City required it, it would have the right to command the Golden Age Alliance once every year! If the Golden Age Alliance agreed to these terms, then Ling Tian City would forgive the Golden Age Alliance and stop sending the Dark Night after them. They would also get rid of the restrictions, allowing the Golden Age Alliance to join Ling Tian City... this was non negotiable.

Yun Meng Xin's response was brilliant. Although it effectively gave Ling Tian City control over the Golden Age Alliance, the Golden Age Alliance was ecstatic.

Mo Gu Lin hadn't expected things to go so smoothly, and the entire Golden Age Alliance was excited to agree. Although they had to pay a large amount of compensation, give a tribute every year, and lose much face, they could at least avoid complete destruction.

The Golden Age Alliance immediately agreed, and they provided the compensation the very next day. Once the restrictions were cancelled, the Golden Age Alliance's million players happily entered Ling Tian City, buying new equipment immediately. Although they had surrendered under humiliating terms, they were able to revive their guild in a single day, making them incredibly grateful towards Yun Meng Xin.

With the Golden Age Alliance setting the precedent, the other guilds who had attacked also came to Ling Tian City, expressing their willingness to provide compensation, tribute, etc... Yun Meng Xin 'compassionately' accepted, setting different terms for different guilds based on their size. After they complied, she cancelled their restrictions and the assassinations on them.

Just like that, the guilds became delirious with joy, while Ling Tian City made many unbelievable deals.

After all, if the situation had persisted for those guilds, they would have definitely crumbled sooner or later. However, even if this happened, there would be no benefit for Ling Tian City at all. Instead, it was possible that they could retaliate in desperation. Not only had Ling Tian City received massive amounts of compensation, but they could use also these guilds as they wished once per year. It had also reduced the number of guilds that would retaliate against them, while also developing a reputation of benevolence.

However, none of this affected the Yan Huang Alliance. The Dark

Night did not carry out assassinations against the Yan Huang Alliance, nor did Ling Tian City remove the restrictions against the Yan Huang Alliance. It was as if everyone had forgotten about the Yan Huang Alliance. Moreover, with Long Tian Yun's personality, it was impossible for him to lower his head and ask for forgiveness.

As Ling Tian City developed more and more, the Yan Huang Alliance's overall power drastically dropped. Even the Yan Huang Alliance at its peak would not at all be a threat to the current Ling Tian City.

The Yan Huang Alliance fell silent, and Long Tian Yun had not appeared at all. No one knew what this person was thinking or plotting.

Chapter 630 – Dia Wu's Arrival

Ling Tian City's fame had skyrocketed, but Ling Tian had become quite low-profile, rarely appearing in public. The name 'Ling Tian City' inevitably caused players to think of him, but evidently the beautiful Lady of the City held a far greater allure.

Ever since Shadissika had arrived in the real world, Ling Chen's family ate in bliss every single day because of her incredibly shocking and amazing cooking. They almost swallowed their tongues in every meal. Tian Tian's monstrous appetite became even larger, and she begged Shadissika to teach her how to cook such delicious food every day. Not only Tian Tian, but even Qi Yue would come to every meal, not to mention Chao Ying and Chao Xi who used various excuses to join them... because comparatively speaking, the food they made or bought tasted simply disgusting.

10 or so days after Shadissika joined the game as a player, she finally left the Novice Village and came to Ling Tian City. She stuck onto Ling Chen tightly, going wherever he went, and she never allowing him to leave her sight. Even when Ling Chen was spending some alone time with Xuanyuan Dia Wu, she would silently stay beside them as a third wheel, making Ling Chen feel quite frustrated.

However, he enjoyed being together with Shadissika. He would take her and Tian Tian around to play and occasionally train together... with Xi Ling's incredible mass-killing ability, their progress in just 2 hours was far superior compared to other players who would need to spend days to get the same results. As such, although they hadn't spent much time training and Tian Tian was continuously leeching EXP, Ling Chen's level still rose quickly. Soon, he had reached LV57 and was quite close to hitting LV60. Tian Tian, on the other hand, did not have the EXP debuff from the Lunar Scourge, so she was now only LV50, entering the top 50 on the Player Level Rankings.

Su'Er's cooldown time for her Heaven's Secrets abilities was coming, so Ling Chen knew that the peaceful times would soon be over.

One day.

"Ling Chen, play games with me!"

Shadissika grabbed Ling Chen and placed a wireless game controller in front of him. Ling Chen was currently holding a story book, looking for stories that he could tell Leng'Er. As soon as he heard 'games', he stood up with a 'whoosh' and said in a serious tone, "Even though I want to play with Sha Sha, I suddenly remembered that I have something important to do, so I need to go right away... Tian Tian, come and play games with Sha Sha!"

"Eh... ah? I-I-I... I'm going to the toilet!" Tian Tian, who had just walked out of the bedroom, quickly ran into the bathroom and slammed the door shut.

Play games with Shadissika? What a joke!

Before Shadissika had come here, she had never played video games before, so during the first 3 minutes she was incredibly unskilled and lost miserably. However, 3 minutes later she started to improve, and 10 minutes later... Tian Tian was unable to win even once. As such, the expert, Ling Chen, was sent in, but he was completely annihilated. Afterwards, no matter if it was Tian Tian or Ling Chen, neither of them ever won again.... they couldn't even retaliate.

She was a natural-born monster at playing games!

She had terrifying skills in cooking, and she had completely destroyed Tian Tian and Ling Chen her first time playing video games... Ling Chen simply couldn't understand how this girl, who he had picked up from the game, could be so ridiculously overpowered.

Just as Ling Chen was preparing to run, a gentle voice suddenly

sounded out from outside, “Tian Ya, are you inside?”

Upon hearing this voice, Ling Chen’s body trembled as if his heart had been gently bumped by something soft. He almost rushed out at full speed as he said, “I’m in! I’m in!”

After rushing out, Ling Chen immediately saw a beautiful figure by the bamboo forest. She was silently standing there, creating the most beautiful scene within the heavens and the earth, and even the jade-green bamboo around her seemed to become dim. The cool breeze caused her clothes to flutter, creating a dazzling scene.

Although they had spent so much time together in the virtual world together, that was only a virtual game, and what they saw and touched were merely virtual bodies. Even their voices were artificially transmitted. At that moment, Xuanyuan Dia Wu had finally seen Ling Chen in the flesh after 13 years, and despite spending so much time with him in the game, she couldn’t hold back her tears.

Seeing his body and his expression just an arm’s length away from her, memories that had engraved themselves within her heart chaotically flooded into her mind. Countless thoughts of longing and passion burst forth as Xuanyuan Dia Wu rushed towards Ling Chen. Although she was incredibly hurried, she still looked just as beautiful and intoxicating as a goddess dancing.

She crashed into Ling Chen’s embrace, and the instant she felt that warm embrace, Xuanyuan Dia Wu felt a sense of bliss that made her feel as if she wished for nothing more in this lifetime. All of the despair and pain, as well as her heart that had died for over a decade, were completely healed, and they became almost negligible.

Ling Chen tightly hugged the woman in his embrace, feeling her existence. In his life, the person whom he owed the most was Xuanyuan Dia Wu, and he felt like he would never be able to pay her back. Now that she had returned to his side, the wounds on his

heart completely closed, and his heart was so jubilant that it almost started burning. Ling Chen closed his eyes as he subconsciously murmured, “Dia Wu… Dia Wu…”

The last time he had hugged her was 13 years ago under the moon in the sky. Back then, she was still a young girl. Now, Xuanyuan Dia Wu had become a goddess whose beauty could topple nations, but the connection between their souls was just like it had been back then.

Xuanyuan Dia Wu slowly raised her head, her beautiful face stained with tears. She smiled as she cried, and she cried as she smiled, looking at Ling Chen in a daze, “This time, I will be where you are, and we’ll never be separated.”

“Even if you want to leave, I won’t let you go,” Ling Chen said as he smiled, tightly hugging Xuanyuan Dia Wu’s delicate figure.

Chao Ying and Chao Xi were already there when Xuanyuan Dia Wu had arrived, and they watched on from the distance with tears in their eyes. They had long since known about Ling Chen’s past, and they knew how much he loved Xuanyuan Dia Wu. They knew why he had refused to give in and die despite suffering so much back then. They knew why he had desperately tried to kill Instructor Hell to leave. They knew why he had gone crazy and charged into the Long family’s residence all those years ago… nor would they forget how the world seemed to collapse for Ling Chen when he heard that Xuanyuan Dia Wu had died…

Afterwards, they did not dare to mention Xuanyuan Dia Wu’s name in front of Ling Chen because it brought a stabbing pain in his heart.

When they saw these lovers, who should have been separated by death, embrace each other, they were moved to tears.

“They are indeed an ideal couple; a match made in heaven that can bring envy from anyone.” Qi Yue came to the door, a smile on her face as she looked at the 2 of them.

“Mm, that’s right.” Beside her, Shadissika nodded her head, “Such a good big brother like Ling Chen and such a good big sister like Dia Wu deserve happiness. If anyone dares to harm them, even the heavens will not forgive their sins.”

Qi Yue: “……”

“Hehe, this is great – we have another pretty big sister now.” A delighted smile appeared on Tian Tian’s face. After spending some time with Xuanyuan Dia Wu in the virtual world, Tian Tian came to likely her immensely, and she even found a sense of peace and warmth from her that she had felt from Shui Ruo.

Ling Chen and Xuanyuan Dia Wu had been reunited for about a month. However, Xuanyuan Dia Wu had only just arrived here in the real world – not because she wasn’t eager to come to his side, but after deciding to come to Ling Chen’s side, she would never be able to leave him. As such, she had to take care of some things on her heart before coming here. She returned to Beijing and met her father, Xuanyuan Dao… after all, he was her father. Afterwards, she determinedly left. The Xuanyuan Dia Wu from back then was dead, and the current Xuanyuan Dia Wu only belonged to Ling Chen.

However, there were few perfect things in this world. Xuanyuan Dia Wu’s arrival caused Ling Chen to feel incredibly happy, but after he calmed down, he discovered something that soon caused him a headache… Xuanyuan Dia Wu liked Tian Tian a lot, and anyone would like Sha Sha. Moreover, Xuanyuan Dia Wu was also on quite good terms with Chao Ying and Chao Xi. However, as for Qi Yue…

With her demoness-level looks and airs as well as her charm that could seduce men in an instant… any woman would feel negative towards such a woman staying by her man’s side. This was so even for Xuanyuan Dia Wu, who had reunited with Ling Chen after facing death and did not mind him having other women by his side.

After all, even Li Xiao Xue felt the same way when she first met Qi Yue. When Xuanyuan Dia Wu saw Qi Yue, the warm and joyous atmosphere solidified and turned cold...

Following this, the 2 women smiled, amicably introduced themselves to each other, and started talking warmly like sisters... but from the cold atmosphere in that moment, it would be strange if they actually felt a sense of closeness!

In order to learn about how Shui Ruo really died, Ling Chen could only allow Qi Yue to stay in the real world. However, he desperately hoped that she would return to the virtual world and not come out anymore because the longer she stayed in the real world... the more likely it was that something would happen!

After all, no matter how strong a man's self-control was, there was always a limit!!!

.....

The next day, Su'Er's cooldown time for using the Heaven's Secrets power finally reset. She logged on into the Mystic Moon world quite early, and she went to a peaceful area. She raised her head, looking up at the sky as her lips slightly moved, and drew a semi-circle in the air with the Heavenly Star Horsetail Whisk.

In the air, a thin cloud slightly trembled and slowly dispersed as if it was blown by wind. In the air above Su'Er, 3 words appeared:

Underworld Blood Lake!

Chapter 631 – Fairy Tree

“Hmm, these 3 words should be referring to a specific place, and they sound like quite a scary place.” Seeing Ling Chen’s reaction, Su’Er hesitantly asked, “Big brother Ling Tian, have you been there before?”

“No,” Ling Chen shook his head, “but I’ve heard of this place before, and I more or less know where it is.”

“Really? That’s great.” Su’Er let out a small breath and smiled.

Although Ling Chen knew where the Underworld Blood Lake was, he frowned and didn’t seem happy. Back then, when he had bought the Seven Leaved Grass, Psychic Flower, and Underworld God Mysterious Blood Metal from Qian Gun Gun, he had also encountered the name ‘Underworld Blood Lake’. Because it related to the 3 requirements to revive the Demon Emperor, Qi Yue had told him about that place.

The Underworld Blood Lake was situated in the innermost region of the Underworld, and it was one of the Underworld’s 3 forbidden areas. Unless the Underworld King personally allowed it, no creature, either living or dead, could go near it. The Underworld Blood Lake’s existence preceded that of the Underworld itself, and countless remains were buried there, filling the Underworld with the energy of countless souls and spirits. After 10,000 years, not even the Underworld King knew how many bodies had been buried there and how much energy had been accumulated. It was evident just how terrifying such a place was.

“Then… big brother Ling Tian, are you going to leave to find that ‘Underworld Blood Lake’?” Su’Er sadly asked while looking up.

“Mm,” Ling Chen nodded.

“Will you be gone for a long time again?” Su’Er asked in a small voice.

“I don’t know. Maybe I’ll be gone for a short time, and maybe I’ll be gone for a very long time… but I promise I won’t turn off my communication device again, so you’ll be able to contact me whenever you want. Plus, I have Spatial Orbs, so I’ll be able to come back whenever I want,” Ling Chen said as he smiled. However, he knew that finding this Orb would be more difficult than the ones in the past… because it was the Underworld, a place that even the 3 Moon Goddesses didn’t dare to casually enter. Moreover, the Underworld Blood Lake was in the innermost region of the Underworld, and it was even a forbidden area. If he wanted to reach that place, he would have to pass through the entire Underworld… it might be even more difficult than climbing to the summit of the Godchild Peak.

After finding out where the next Lunar Scourge Orb was, Ling Chen didn’t want to waste any time. He didn’t tell everyone that he was going to leave, and he instead went to where the Fairy Clan was and found the little Fairy Cai’Er.

“Cai’Er, can you take me to the Fairy Realm?” Ling Chen asked. After the Fairy Clan had moved out of the Fairy Realm in order to prevent other creatures from entering, Granny WItherwood had set up a Fairy Barrier. Only Fairies, or those accompanied by Fairies, could pass through this barrier.

“What does big brother want to do there?” Cai’Er asked curiously.

“I want to see Shui Ruo…” Ling Chen said in a daze. It had been a long time since he had seen Shui Ruo, and her voice and smile were things that he always dreamed about. However, after putting Shui Ruo in the Fairy Fountain, he hadn’t seen her… it wasn’t that he didn’t want to, but that he didn’t dare to. This was because seeing Shui Ruo’s lifeless form would make him feel an agonising pain in his heart.

At this moment, however, he couldn’t resist his desire to see her. At the same time, he needed Shui Ruo to give him the willpower to

pass through the dangerous Underworld.

After returning to the Fairy Forest and passing through the Bewildering Formation and the Fairy Barrier, Ling Chen entered the Fairy Realm. As his heart madly thumped, he floated above the Fairy Fountain, looking down with trembling eyes. Finally, he saw the figure that he dreamed about every night.

She didn't look like she was dead, but she looked like she was peacefully sleeping. And even though she was 'sleeping', she still looked just as beautiful. Lying there, she looked like a princess of the sea who had been cursed to a deep sleep, waiting for her prince to wake her up.

Ling Chen silently stared at her until he completely spaced out, and his eyes seemed to forget how to blink. Just like that, he continued to gaze at her. Cai'Er floated beside him, her gaze alternating between looking at him and the sleeping girl in the Fairy Fountain, and she did not make any noises. It was just that when she looked at Ling Chen, she felt a sense of sorrow that she had never felt before.

While above the Fairy Fountain, Ling Chen couldn't feel time passing, and after a very long time, he finally closed his misty eyes...

Ruo Ruo, wait for me, I'll wake you up soon... wait for me...

As he closed his eyes and turned around, a tear fell from his eyes, silently falling and landing within the still Fairy Fountain, causing a small ripple.

"Cai'Er, let's go."

Just as Ling Chen spoke and before Cai'Er could reply, he felt an abnormal airflow around him as a jade-green light suddenly shot out from the Fairy Fountain into the sky.

"Ahh!! What... What's going on? Why did it suddenly let out light?" The sudden appearance of the beam of light frightened

Cai'Er, causing her to cry out in shock.

If even Cai'Er didn't know what was happening, Ling Chen was even more so in the dark. As Ling Chen and Cai'Er stared in shock, the originally still Fairy Fountain suddenly started rippling, and an unnatural sound came from beneath the Fairy Fountain as if there was something moving.

"Could there be something living under the Fairy Fountain?" Ling Chen asked in surprise. The rippling of the water became more and more intense, making it impossible for him to see what was under the water and obscuring Shui Ruo from his sight.

"No... No way, how could there be something under the Fairy Fountain... Ahhh!! What's going on?" Cai'Er was much more alarmed than Ling Chen because the Fairy Fountain was the most important and holy thing to the Fairy Clan.

With a 'pop', a jade-green tender shoot broke through the water, appearing within Ling Chen's and Cai'Er's vision, causing their jaws to drop.

"What is that?" Cai'Er yelled as she pointed at the young shoot.

How am I meant to know?! Ling Chen inwardly yelled. He frowned as he looked at the abnormal Fairy Fountain, and his gaze locked onto the young shoot that had just broke through the water... but this was just the beginning.

After the shoot broke through the water, it grew at an unbelievable rate. It grew from being just a few centimetres long, to more than 10 centimetres long, then half a metre, 1 metre, 2 metres... as it grew, it started to sprout branches where tender leaves began to grow. There were only a few leaves at the beginning, but soon they became quite densely packed. Following this, the trunk took shape, becoming thicker and thicker. As the green tree grew, the beam of green light also became denser and wider.

Ling Chen and Cai'Er's jaws completely dropped, watching the tree grow taller and taller... Ling Chen had seen this sort of scene in movies before, but seeing such a thing happening just 50 metres in front of him caused him to become completely dumbfounded.

Ling Tian City.

All of the Fairies seemed to simultaneously feel something, and they all looked back towards the Fairy Realm. The younger Fairies seemed quite confused, while the bodies of the older Fairies trembled, feeling that mysterious aura of Nature and seeing the jade-green light in the sky.

"This... This... This... Could it be..."

Granny Witherwood, who never appeared in front of humans, stared towards the Fairy Realm, tears gathering in her eyes. Greenwood rushed over, excitedly yelling, "Mother, this feeling... could it be..."

"Let's go!!"

Granny Witherwood raised her walking stick and a green light flashed as she teleported back to the Fairy Fountain with Greenwood.

By the time Granny Witherwood and Greenwood had returned to the Fairy Fountain, the jade-green tree had finally stopped growing. It was 1 metre thick and about 10 metres tall. The abundant and exuberant leaves covered most of the Fairy Fountain, preventing almost any light from getting past. The jade-green light disappeared, but the tree trunk and branches gave off a dreamy jade-green glow. Green motes of light would also float up from the branches and leaves, surrounding the green tree and floating above the Fairy Fountain, giving off a beautiful and dreamy feeling.

The waters of the Fairy Fountain stilled, and Shui Ruo was still peacefully sleeping underneath and had not been moved at all.

This allowed Ling Chen to let out a sigh of relief, and he started to look up and down this gigantic tree in shock. He looked towards Cai'Er, and found that there was a jade-green light around her body exactly like that of the jade green tree's. Moreover, Cai'Er's expression was extremely strange. She stared at the jade-green tree with a hazy look in her eyes.

"Fairy... Tree... it's really... the Fairy Tree!!"

Granny Witherwood's walking stick fell to the ground as she let out an emotional cry, and she knelt to the ground, tears pouring out of her eyes. Beside her, Greenwood's fists were tightly clenched as his body shook, his eyes fixed on the large jade-green tree. His gaze was extremely emotional, as if he had seen the god of nature descend.

"Fairy Tree?" Ling Chen looked at the large tree, feeling even more confused. Seeing Greenwood and Granny Witherwood's reactions, the Fairy Tree should be quite important to the Fairy Clan – at least as important as the Fairy Fountain. It seemed that the Fairy Clan had been waiting for the Fairy Tree to appear all this time... but why did this tree suddenly grow?

Could it be because of him?

Chapter 632 – Cai'Er Awakens

"Ling Tian, why are you here? What happened here?" Greenwood came over to Ling Chen as he hurriedly asked.

"I came here to see my little sister, but I didn't do anything. Just as we were about to leave, this tree suddenly grew out, and I don't know why either," Ling Chen truthfully replied. Standing so close to Greenwood, he could clearly feel how intense Greenwood's emotions were, and he asked, "What is this Fairy Tree?"

"The Fairy Tree is the tree of our Fairy Clan's origins, and it is the tree of life!" An aged and emotional voice sounded out from behind him as Granny Witherwood slowly walked over, her teary eyes staring at the Fairy Tree, "I never thought that in my old age that I would not only be able to see my clan released, but also see the reborn Fairy Tree. I can truly die without regrets now."

"The tree of the Fairy Clan's origins? The tree of life?"

"That's right." Greenwood nodded as he raised his head, looking at the light on the Fairy Tree as he said in awe, "No one knows the Fairy Tree's original name, but in the ancient times when there were still Gods and Demons, it was a godly tree filled with the power of Nature. It grew in this Fairy Fountain, and the Fairy Forest was born because of it. As it grew, its Nature energy became denser and denser, forming a spirit and giving birth to the first Nature Spirit... the being that our Fairy Clan worships, the Nature Goddess."

Granny Witherwood continued, speaking in a voice that was hoarse but as heavy as a mountain, "She didn't have any fighting power. Instead, her power was one of holiness, nature, purity, benevolence, and life. Although she was birthed by the Fairy Tree, in our hearts she's a being of utmost holiness. This is because she, with the Fairy Tree's power, created the first Fairy... which is how our Fairy Clan came to be. Without the Nature Goddess, none of

the Fairies would exist. In essence, the Nature Goddess is a Fairy, but she is also a Nature Spirit. As such, she's also called the Progenitor of our Fairy Clan."

"So it's like that..." Ling Chen lightly nodded. He had heard the Fairies mention the Nature Goddess before, and he could feel that their worship towards the Nature Goddess surpassed that of the Moon God Clan. However, he had not found any records of the 'Nature Goddess' in the Forgotten Continent Chronicles. It turned out that she was not a 'God', but she was instead a 'Spirit' like the Lucky Cat. It was just that one was a Nature Spirit, while the other was a Treasure Spirit. However, she was a true goddess in the hearts of the Fairies.

"Does that mean that the Fairy Tree disappeared afterwards?" Ling Chen asked.

"That's right, it disappeared a long, long time ago... no, it entered into a deep sleep together with the Nature Goddess... until today." Granny Witherwood's eyes were filled with hot tears, and her stooped body seemed to try to straighten in devoutness as she looked at the Fairy Tree... she had been able to witness the scene that countless of her ancestors had desired to see.

"That was about 10,000 years ago. Back then, the Forgotten Continent had just gone through a calamity called the Shura's Devastation. Although the disaster was over, the entire Forgotten Continent was almost paralysed, and even the strongest clans, the Moon God Clan and the Void Dragon Clan, were greatly injured. At that time, the dormant Demon Beast Clan suddenly appeared, bringing disaster to the Forgotten Continent that still had not recovered from the Shura's Devastation. The Demon Emperor was incredibly powerful, and he was not any weaker than any of the 3 Moon Goddesses. The 3 Moon Goddesses had been greatly weakened from the battle with the Shura, countless Moon God Representatives had died, and the Void Dragon Clan had sealed themselves away after the battle with the Shura.

“As such, the Moon Goddesses sought the help of the holy beast Golden Crow, which had greatest destructive power that countered that of the Demon Beast Clan’s. They also found the Fairy Realm and asked the Nature Goddess to bring the Fairies to defend against this threat. The benevolent Nature Goddess naturally would not refuse, and she brought all of the Fairies to fight with the Moon God Clan and Golden Crow against the Demon Beast Clan. Back then, there were tens of millions of demon beasts, and they were incredibly powerful.

“After a horrific battle, the Demon Beast Clan was finally destroyed, and the Demon Emperor was killed by the Golden Crow’s Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns. However, the Golden Crow never appeared again, and it was unknown whether it was still alive. The Moon God Clan had many casualties, and my Fairy Clan’s casualties were even worse… but even though countless had died, we were not resentful at all because these lives had bought the peace and security of the Forgotten Continent. However, during that battle the Nature Goddess was assaulted by countless demonic auras, and a month after the battle, she was unable to maintain her ‘Spirit’ form anymore and returned to the Fairy Tree. A month later, the Fairy Tree started to wither until it died… leaving only a withered seed in the Fairy Fountain.”

This was a secret of the Fairy Clan, and yet they were telling Ling Chen unreservedly. This showed just how much they trusted him. Ling Chen silently listened, then slowly nodded, “So it’s like that… that means the seed has been in the Fairy Fountain this entire time, but it has never sprouted? And the Nature Goddess has never appeared?”

“That’s right,” Granny Witherwood sadly said, “Do you know why the Fairy Clan, which was flourishing, almost went extinct? It’s because the Fairy Clan has always had low reproduction, but when the Nature Goddess was alive, our reproduction levels were not any less than the human’s. Everything was because the Nature

Goddess and Fairy Tree fell into a deep slumber. They are the origin of our Fairy Clan's power and life, and without the Fairy Tree's power, our Fairy Clan will become weaker and weaker with every generation, and it will become more and more difficult for each generation to give birth. Now, there are only a mere 2,000 Fairies left."

"In that case, since the Fairy Tree has been reborn, does that mean Fairies will become stronger and will be able to give birth to the next generation more easily?" Ling Chen asked.

"That's absolutely correct!" A joyous smile appeared on Greenwood's face. He spread out his arms and faced the Fairy Tree, "This is the aura and power of the Fairy Tree as described in the records. I can feel all of the cells in my body jumping and rejoicing. My Fairy power is also trembling in excitement as if it's a tender shoot about to grow in spring... this is great, my Fairy Clan is going to experience a revival!"

It was possible to increase the population by mating with humans by using their reproductivity to increase their numbers. However, Fairies born from unions with humans would no longer by pure-blooded Fairies. As such, the Fairy Clan would not make such a decision unless they had no other choice. Now, the Fairy Tree has miraculously reappeared, so the Fairies no longer had to go through with such a plan. The danger of becoming extinct was now gone.

"This is why we've been desperately protecting the Fairy Fountain to prevent it from being tainted by anything. This is because the Fairy Tree's seed was within the Fairy Fountain, and every generation of our ancestors has been hoping for it to grow. The Fairy Fountain is the last remaining pure water in the world, so every generation of Fairies needs to protect it to the death and cannot let any outsiders to come into contact with it."

"Ling Tian, did you really not do anything with Cai'Er here?" Greenwood asked seriously. The Fairy Fountain wouldn't have

appeared for no reason, and he knew that something must have happened.

Ling Chen thought about it, but he shook his head, “After arriving here with Cai’Er, I only looked down at Shui Ruo from above, and Cai’Er was by my side the entire time. We didn’t go anywhere else or touch anything, and we barely even spoke. Just as we were about to leave, a green light shot out from the water, and the Fairy Tree suddenly started to grow.”

Ling Chen thought about everything that had happened after he had come here. From when he had arrived to when he was leaving, his thoughts had been solely focused on Shui Ruo. He indeed had not done anything else, and he had barely talked. Oh… there was that when he looked away from Shui Ruo, a tear fell into the Fairy Fountain… but the Fairy Tree’s growth surely had nothing to do with his tear, right?

“… Then why would the Fairy Tree suddenly grow? Could it be that something happened here before all of us came?” Greenwood muttered to himself.

“Hurry and look at Cai’Er – there seems to be something odd about her,” Ling Chen said. From when the Fairy Tree had broken out of the water, Cai’Er’s body had started to flash with a pure, jade-green light. She seemed to be soulless as she stared at the Fairy Tree, her body hovering in the air but not moving at all.

Greenwood and Granny Witherwood saw just how strange Cai’Er looked, but they did not reveal expressions of shock. Granny Witherwood slowly spoke, “Don’t worry, the light on Cai’Er’s body is because she’s too close to the Fairy Tree and has been filled with Fairy power. In other words, her Fairy power is being awoken and evolved by the Fairy Tree, and she will become more powerful and pure. Any Fairy in front of the Fairy Tree will have this sort of reaction. Haha, it’s been 10,000 years, and the Fairy Tere has finally reappeared. Cai’Er is lucky enough to be the first Fairy to be bathed by the Fairy Tree’s power… hm?”

Before she had finished speaking, Granny Witherwood suddenly paused as a look of surprise appeared on her face, and the same was for Greenwood.

This was because the light around Cai'Er's body became even larger and brighter, forming a green halo of light that was around 5 to 6 metres wide, and her Fairy power also became even more powerful. This incredibly dense feeling of Fairy power caused Greenwood and Granny Witherwood to feel a suffocating feeling.

"What's going on?" The incredible power radiating from Cai'Er caused even the Mysterious God grade Greenwood to take a step back as he said in shock, "Even if her power should increase under the Fairy Tree, it shouldn't be to such an extent... this power almost exceeds mine!"

Ling Chen was even closer to Cai'Er, and he was blown back 10 or so metres by the gust of Fairy power emanating out from her. Hearing Greenwood's words, he felt utterly shocked: she was almost as powerful as Greenwood? Although Cai'Er wasn't weak before, she was only a LV40 Celestial grade Fairy. Greenwood was a LV100 Mysterious God grade Chief!!

Chapter 633 – A New Companion

Although Granny Witherwood and Greenwood were in shock, what happened next caused them to become even more dumbfounded.

In front of the Fairy Tree, a jade-green image slowly appeared. As this image became clearer, they could tell that it was that of a woman. Her body was tall and slim, and she was wearing a long, jade-green dress. Her lengthy green hair floated behind her, and the green motes of light surrounding the Fairy Tree were attracted to her, dancing around her.

Under the green light, it was difficult to see her facial features, but everyone felt a sense of holiness and purity from her, tugging at their heartstrings.

“N-Nature Goddess!!” Granny Witherwood and Greenwood simultaneously cried out.

Green clothes, green hair, and a pure aura that made the Fairies feel intoxicated... within their records, only the Nature Goddess could give off such a feeling!

Cai’Er’s eyes regained their clarity, and she blinked as she stared at the woman in front of her, asking with a hazy look, “Who are you, big sister? Was it you who was talking to me just then? How do you know my name and so many things about me?"

The woman’s image looked at Cai’Er as if she hadn’t noticed anyone else’s presence, and she spoke with a voice as gentle as the wind, “Because I am you, and you are me.”

“I am you, and you are me?” Cai’Er repeated this, looking quite confused.

“You are the new me, and I am the old you. Do you understand?” The woman in green gently smiled.

Cai’Er shook her head, still looking quite perplexed. With her

pure and simple nature, she couldn't understand such deep and complex words. However, Granny Witherwood and Greenwood lapsed into deep shock after hearing this exchange.

"No matter, the current you won't understand." The woman in green continued to speak softly, "When you've grown up, you'll naturally understand. I thought that I would never be able to appear again, which is why you were born, but I thought that you would never be awakened. However, fate is something that no one can predict. After being afflicted by the Demon Beast Curse for 10,000 years, the curse has finally been nullified. The Fairy Tree has been reborn, and your power, which was made dormant by the curse, has been awakened. Your dormant spirit will one day completely awaken."

It was impossible for Cai'Er to understand these words, but Granny Witherwood and Greenwood knew exactly what she was talking about.

Curse... The Demon Beast Curse! So, the Nature Goddess had disappeared and the Fairy Tree had withered and didn't grow for 10,000 years because of a curse from the Demon Beast Clan! If the curse was not nullified, even until the Fairy Clan perished, the Fairy Tree would not have grown again.

However, why would the curse suddenly be nullified today? Could it be that after 10,000 years, the Demon Beast Curse had finally become ineffective?

And Cai'Er... she was born from the Fairy Fountain, and she had an extremely high affinity with Nature. Could she be...

"Cai'Er, although your Nature power has formally awakened, you're still too young and can't use that power to change much in the Fairy Clan. My remnant spirit from back then suddenly awoke, and it will soon disappear. However, I saw something that I normally would not be able to see – soon, a calamity will descend on the Mystic Moon world. This calamity will be even worse than

the Shura's Devastation and the battle with the Demon Beast Clan. When the time comes, countless lives will perish and tens of thousands of clans will be annihilated..."

The woman in green suddenly saying such things caused Greenwood and Granny Witherwood to stare in shock and feel a chill within their hearts. It was said that when a person died, they would be free from the heaven's bindings and would be able to see heaven-defying scenes. What's more, the person saying this was the person they worshipped most – the Nature Goddess! The Nature Goddess would never lie about such things.

However, a calamity worse than the Shura's Devastation and the battle with the Demon Beast Clan was about to descend not only on the Forgotten Continent, but the entire Mystic Moon... if that was true, how terrifying would that be? Could it be that the sky was going to fall and that the world was going to explode...?

"... The Fairy Clan will also be caught up in this calamity. There's only one thing that can be done to save the Fairy Clan from this calamity." The woman in green looked away from Cai'Er, and her gaze rested on Ling Chen, "And that... is to forever follow this human who nullified the Demon Beast Curse."

Cai'Er, Granny Witherwood, and Greenwood all stared at Ling Chen, "Ling Tian, it was you who nullified the curse?"

Ling Chen froze in shock as he hazily shook his head... I nullified the curse? Are you joking? How come I didn't know? I didn't do anything after coming here... eh? That tear? Are you saying that tear broke the Demon Beast Curse that persisted for more than 10,000 years? Are you kidding me? Plus, I really didn't touch anything!

Alright, that's not the most important part. This woman in green says that they can avoid the calamity by following me? You're joking, right?

"Eh? Forever follow big brother? So be with him forever?" Of

course Cai'Er understood this part, and her eyes lit up as she said in a soft voice, "Of course I want to go out and play with big brother. It's so boring staying in the same place every day, but daddy and granny don't let me go out, and big brother isn't willing to take me out to play. Even if I want to, they definitely won't agree."

The woman in green smiled and stretched out her right arm. An orb of jade-green light appeared and flew towards Cai'Er, "Goodbye, Cai'Er. When you grow up, you'll realise that I am you. Remember my words and make sure you follow him."

After speaking, the green image disappeared like a wisp of smoke. The orb of light touched Cai'Er's body and then shot towards Ling Chen almost 10 times faster than before and covered his body, creating a jade-green, glowing connection between him and Cai'Er.

"This is?" Ling Chen stared at the green light in shock, feeling at a loss as to what to do. At this moment, a system announcement sounded out.

"Ding... under the influence of an unknown power, the Nature Spirit 'Cai'Er' has formed a 'Nature Contract' with you and has become your companion and pet. The Nature Contract has coercive properties, and it cannot be cancelled by either side within 3 years, and it also has the same characteristics as a master-pet relationship. Would you like to give 'Nature Spirit' Cai'Er a new name?"

Ling Chen: "#$%..."

Without any prior indication or asking for his permission, he had suddenly gained a new pet... and this new pet and companion was the little Fairy Cai'Er!

Although it felt quite weird having this Fairy girl become his pet, it wasn't something that Ling Chen couldn't accept. After all, he already had Leng'Er, who was also a humanoid pet. Plus, Xi Ling could take human form, and Snow Cherry was a Moon God

Representative before. Moreover, it wasn't bad to have an extra pet... although he would definitely have to take care of this little Fairy more than she took care of him. However, what made Ling Chen feel quite frustrated was that... he hadn't even been asked about his thoughts! He had been forcefully given this pet, and he couldn't even cancel this relationship! He felt as if he was a defenceless woman who was forced upon by a tyrant king!

He had always been the dominant one, and being forced into something like this made him feel quite displeased. However, Cai'Er was indeed Cai'Er, and even though she was his 'pet', he definitely couldn't treat her as a pet. Otherwise, he might have to become her caretaker!

"Nature Contract!" Granny Witherwood and Greenwood evidently understood the meaning behind those words, and the light indicated that this was no ordinary contract. It was a contract where Ling Chen was the master, and Cai'Er was the pet. After seeing this, their gazes became incredibly complicated.

"... No," Ling Chen replied to the system announcement. Following this, Cai'Er's stats appeared before him:

[Cai'Er]: Type: Nature Spirit, Level: LV45, Grade: Mysterious God, Owner: Ling Tian. The second daughter of the current Chief of the Fairy Clan. She is incredibly pure and innocent, and she has a pure heart, great talent, and immense curiosity. Out of the entire Clan, she has the highest affinity with Nature, and is this generation's "Maiden of Nature". As such, she is seen as the Fairy Clan's hope. Under the baptism of the Fairy Tree's power, another spirit within her as been awoken.

Stats: HP: 55,000, MP: 55,0000, Physical Attack Damage: 550, Magic Attack Power: 11,000, Physical Defence: 500, Movement Speed: 160. Elemental Resistances: Water: 90%, Fire: 90%, Wind: 90%, Lightning: 90%, Earth: 90%, Light: 200%, Darkness: -100%.

Passive Abilities

- Can fly at low altitudes, and her flying speed is equivalent to her Movement Speed.
- [Nature's Protection]: Recovers 90% HP and 90% MP every second, immunity to all abnormal statuses apart from [Poison] and immunity to all debuffs.
- [Nature's Gift]: When using 'Arrow' type attacks, HIT+360%, Arrow Speed+120%, Range+90%. When using healing and support Magic, effectiveness+50%.
- [Nature's Heart]: A special ability obtained by Cai'Er after becoming a pet. Her master and fellow pets' HP and MP are increased by 60%.

Skills:

[Nature's Arrow]: Current Level: LV10, max level. A Light-element attack that condenses Nature energy into an arrow and attacks a single target within 50 metres, causing 500% Magic Attack Power and a 5% chance of instant death for Darkness-type targets. Costs 3 MP, no Cooldown Time.

[Nature's Light]: Current Level: LV5, max level. Uses her benevolent heart to condense Nature energy and radiate pure Nature light 2 metres around her, restoring all targets' HP by (Magic Attack Power x 3), and causing 300% Light damage to all Darkness-type monsters nearby. Costs 5 MP, Cooldown time: 1 second.

Chapter 634 – Nature's Song

[Nature's Songs]: Cai'Er uses her nature power and her spirit to sing a song. Her sweet songs contain the hopes and desires of Cai'Er's pure heart, and they have an inexplicable and mysterious power that can pass through all creatures' spirits and affect their minds, beliefs, willpower, and even bodies. Some Nature's Songs can be sung at will, while others can be only sung while in certain emotional states. Currently available Nature's Songs: [Song of Healing], [Song of Passion], [Song of Redemption], [Song of Tranquility], [Song of Hope], [Song of Miracles], and [Song of Despair].

[Song of Healing – Drizzle At The Light Of Dawn]: Can be sung under any emotional state. While singing, all allies recover 20% HP and 20% MP every second. All debuffs are nullified and allies will be immune to any further debuffs. Costs 100 MP every second, and it can be cast and ended at will.

[Song of Passion – A Brave Heart]: Can be sung under any emotional state. While singing, all allies' Physical Attack Power, Magic Attack Power, and HIT are increased by 30%. Costs 100 MP every second, and it can be cast and ended at will.

[Song of Redemption – Pure Heaven]: Can be sung under any emotional state. While singing, it greatly reduces the enemy's hatred and battle spirit, and it can even cause them to stop fighting. Costs 200 MP per second, and it can be cast and ended at will.

[Song of Tranquility – Clear Dream In A Peaceful Night]: Can be sung under any emotional state. While singing, it causes the enemy to feel sleepy until they fall into a [Sleep] state. After the targets have fallen asleep, unless the song is ended or the targets are attacked, they will not wake up. Once attacked, they will immediately wake up, and they will not be affected by [Clear Dream In A Peaceful Night] for a long time. Costs 500 MP per

second, and it can be cast and ended at will.

[Song of Hope – Rose On The Other Shore]: Can be sung when feeling joyful or excited. While singing, all allies' Luck+20, and 3 stats are increased by 100%. All enemies' Luck-20, and 3 stats are decreased by 50%. Costs 1200 MP per second, and if the requisite emotions are no longer present, the effects will immediately cease.

[Song of Miracles – Undying Stars]: Can be sung when feeling extremely hopeful and sincere. While singing, all allies become immune to any type of damage. Costs 24,000 MP per second, and if the requisite emotions are no longer present, the effects will immediately cease.

[Song of Despair – Shattered Heart]: Forbidden Nature's Song. Can be sung when extremely sad, feeling despair, or furious. Unknown effects, and if the requisite emotions are no longer present, the effects will immediately cease.

The first time Ling Chen had entered the Fairy Realm, the first Fairy he had met was Cai'Er. Back then, he had received some of Cai'Er's information through Xiao Hui. At that time, Cai'Er was LV43, and she was Celestial grade. She already possessed powerful Nature energy, and even if she became a pet, she should be Celestial grade. To normal players, possessing a Celestial grade pet would be cause for great rejoicing, but to Ling Chen, who possessed Heavens' End grade and Mysterious God grade pets, Celestial grade was not much anymore.

As such, he didn't have high expectations when looking at Cai'Er's stats. However, when he saw that Cai'Er's grade was 'Mysterious God', he was completely dumbfounded. When he saw her passive abilities, he was even more shocked. After looking through her Nature's Songs, his jaw almost dropped to the ground.

This was the awakening that the woman in green had talked about?!

Cai'Er's ridiculous power could only be expressed in 3 words:

Oh my goodness!

Cai'Er's stats were not at all inferior to Snow Cherry's, who was also Mysterious God grade. Her passive ability that increased her master and all other pets' HP and MP by 60% almost caused Ling Chen to cry out on the spot, and he had instantly thought that this was the most overpowered aspect about Cai'Er... if there was anything even more powerful, it would simply be too heaven-defying. However, after seeing her Nature's Songs, he knew that this new little Cai'Er was truly heaven-defying!

Cai'Er's strengths were similar to Xiao Hui's – they were both support-types! However, the way they supported was different. Xiao Hui could increase his skills and provide him with information while searching for treasure and give him other warnings. On the other hand, Cai'Er gave healing, buffs to allies, and debuffs to enemies. What's more, the effects were all AOE, so the more people there were, the more effective her buffs and debuffs would be. Her supporting ability was no less effective than Xiao Hui's. Moreover, while Xiao Hui had no attack power at all, Cai'Er at least had some forms of attacking. The [Nature's Arrow] wasn't an extremely powerful attacking skill, but at least Cai'Er could attack.

"What a strange feeling." Cai'Er looked at her hands and her body, then spun in a circle as she flew towards Ling Chen, "Big brother, can I really go out and play with you like that big sister said?"

"That's right!" Granny Witherwood walked over, a look of deep emotion on her face, "There's a Nature Contract between you and him. With this contract, you'll need to stay right by his side for the next 3 years. Within these 3 years, wherever he goes, you need to go as well. Even if you don't want to, you'll still need to go with him."

"Really?" Hearing this, Cai'Er became quite excited as she happily danced around, "This is great, great, great! Big brother will

finally take me out to play, great, great…"

Cai'Er's reaction made Granny Witherwood and Greenwood want to both laugh and cry. They knew that Cai'Er was filled with curiosity and desire towards the outside world, and that she wanted to go out to play every day. However, the Fairy Clan had only just returned to the Forgotten Continent, and there were far too many things that they did not know about it. Adding on the fact that there were very few Fairies left and Cai'Er possessed a special status, they wouldn't risk allowing any harm to come to Cai'Er. As such, they wouldn't allow her to leave the Fairy Forest and Ling Tian City. However, because of these changes, she could now finally realise her dream.

"Ling Tian, tell me truthfully how you broke the Demon Beast Curse. Over all these years, our clan didn't even know about the curse, otherwise we would have done all we could to nullify it," Granny Witherwood said emotionally as she looked at Ling Chen.

Ling Chen once again shook his head as he said earnestly, "I really don't know! Even I'm confused about this. After I came here, I only looked down at the Fairy Fountain and didn't do anything. Cai'Er was by my side the whole time, and she can confirm this."

"Mhmm!" Little Cai'Er immediately nodded and stretched out her finger and pointed, "Big brother isn't lying. He was just looking down and didn't move at all. I was looking at him the whole time, and he really didn't do anything."

"Then why…" Granny Witherwood was completely confused. She was completely sure that the image just then was the Nature Goddess, and she definitely wouldn't lie. Granny Witherwood once again looked at the Fairy Tree and said excitedly, "Forget it, the reason for this isn't important. The Fairy Tree being reborn is something my clan has been looking forward to for 10,000 years! Ling Tian, even if you don't know what happened, since the Nature Goddess said it was you, there's no doubt about it. Perhaps one of your actions unknowingly nullified the curse, and so you've

once again rescued our Fairy Clan!”

“You’re indeed our Fairy Clan’s great benefactor. Our Fairy Clan will forever remember what you’ve done for us,” Greenwood said as he smiled at Ling Chen. Every one of his words were filled with immense gratitude.

Ling Chen could only smile helplessly, “I feel very embarrassed to hear you say that. However, does that mean Cai’Er is…”

Greenwood gave the excited Cai’Er a deep look as he sent a voice transmission to Ling Chen, “When you first entered the Fairy Realm, you probably knew that she wasn’t my daughter, but she instead has a special identity. She wasn’t born by any of the Fairies. The year I became the Chief, a small lotus flower grew in the Fairy Fountain. The lotus flower blossomed in a month, and it had rainbow-coloured petals. When the petals completely opened up, we found Cai’Er sleeping within it.”

Ling Chen: “……”

“Because Cai’Er was born within that rainbow-coloured lotus flower, we called her ‘Cai’Er’ [TLN: ‘Cai’ means colour]. After she was born, she possessed immense talent and great affinity with Nature. We thought that she was a Spirit born from the Fairy Fountain’s energy, so we weren’t surprised to see her talent and incredibly pure power. We even viewed her as the hope that the heavens gave to us, and as the Chief, I decided to take her as my daughter.” Speaking to there, Greenwood let out a long breath and his voice slightly trembled, “Only today did I realise that she’s… the new Nature Goddess!”

This was something that everyone had inferred from the woman in green’s words.

Ling Chen fell silent for a while before looking over at Cai’Er and saying to Greenwood in a soft voice, “If Cai’Er really is the new Nature Goddess, will there be any impacts on the Fairy Clan if I bring her away?”

Greenwood shook his head and smiled, “You’re our Fairy Clan’s benefactor, and we won’t mind what you do if you take away. Moreover, this is something decided on by the Nature Goddess herself. We also can’t just ignore what she said right before disappearing. After all, the Nature Goddess has a pure heart, and she would never lie. Perhaps the scene she saw wasn’t just an illusion, but a prediction of the future. If that truly happened…

Greenwood did not say anything else and stared at Ling Chen. The Nature Goddess said that if the calamity happened, the Fairy Clan would only survive if Cai’Er followed Ling Chen… Greenwood didn’t know how to interpret this – he definitely didn’t believe that Ling Chen could dispel this calamity because how could a mere player dispel a calamity that was worse than the Shura’s Devastation and the battle with the Demon Beast Clan?

However, he did not dare to doubt the Nature Goddess’ words.

“Cai’Er, you need to be good and listen to big brother when you follow him, alright?” Granny Witherwood said in a warm tone to Cai’Er.

Cai’Er vigorously nodded and gave a pure smile, “Okay, granny. I’ll definitely be good.”

No one knew if the woman in green’s words would come true in the future. However, Ling Chen needing to take Cai’Er wherever he went became an unchangeable reality.

Chapter 635 – 2 Pieces of Heaven's End Grade Equipment

News of the Fairy Tree being reborn was soon spread to all of the Fairies, causing the entire Fairy Clan to burst into a frenzy, and more than half of them cried tears of joy. The rebirth of the Fairy Tree not only meant that they were no longer at risk of going extinct, but it also meant that their power would become even stronger and even purer and that their lifespans would be longer.

Just as Ling Chen and Cai'Er returned to Ling Tian City, Shadissika hurriedly ran over and grabbed Ling Chen's hand, refusing to let go. "Ling Chen, where did you go? I couldn't find you anywhere."

Ling Chen held Shadissika's hand and smiled before he brought her to the Administrative District and told Yun Meng Xin and the others that he was going to leave. They fell silent for a moment, and although they didn't want him to go, none of them tried to make him stay. This was because they knew that staying in the Ling Tian City for the past month for him was already quite rare. In order to complete the thing that was 'more important than his own life', he had most likely been incredibly impatient for the past month.

"Leave Ling Tian City to us and go do what you need to do. Don't worry about us here," Yun Meng Xin calmly said as she looked at him.

"Do your best, big brother Ling Tian! Finish it soon and come back soon!" Xiao Qi was quite reluctant to see him go.

"Big brother Ling Tian..." Su'Er took a small step towards him and a look of hesitation flashed on her snow-white face as she swallowed the words she was about to say. Instead she said, "You'll definitely succeed."

“Do you need me to help?” Xuanyuan Dia Wu asked anxiously.

“No need,” Ling Chen shook his head. “Only I can do this.”

“Mm.” Xuanyuan Dia Wu did not persist, and she gently nodded her head. She had heard from Yun Meng Xin and the others that Ling Chen seemed to be looking for something important in the virtual world, but no one knew what it was. Since he didn’t say, she wouldn’t ask.

Ling Chen squatted down and put his hand on Shadissika’s shoulder as he said with a smile, “Sha Sha, I need to leave for a while, so make sure you listen to the big sisters, okay?”

“Eh? Leave? Aren’t you taking me?” Shadissika was quite surprised, but she heard that he was leaving without her, she became quite anxious.

During this period of time, Shadissika had stuck tightly to Ling Chen and almost never left his side. As such, Ling Chen wasn’t surprised that she would react like this. He shook his head and comforted her with a soft voice, “I can’t bring Sha Sha this time. It’s not because I don’t like Sha Sha, but it is because this is very important to me, and only I can do it. If I bring Sha Sha, I might not be able to do it anymore. As such... Sha Sha needs to be good and wait here for me, and when I’m back I’ll take Sha Sha out to play, okay?”

Shadissika raised her face, looking incredibly wronged as she looked at Ling Chen. She then looked down and fell silent for a while as if she was thinking about something. Finally, she reluctantly nodded, “Mm, I’ll listen to Ling Chen. When you’re not here, I’ll play with the big sisters.”

Just as Ling Chen was saying goodbye to everyone and preparing to leave, a stout and short figure hurriedly ran over while yelling out from the distance, “Brother Ling Tian! Wait, brother Ling Tian!”

Ling Chen put down the Spatial Orb that he was just about to crush and turned to see a Dwarf running towards him with sweat all over his face, “Elder Dita, what is it?”

“I finally… caught up… whew…” The Dwarves did not have any fighting power nor did they have the constitution of the Fairies. When Elder Dita arrived before Ling Chen, he was huffing and puffing, and he was only able to speak after resting for a short while. “I heard Greenwood say that you were going to leave and that you might not come back in a while. I thought that you’ll be going to a dangerous place… we were planning to use the Chilling Crystal Chalcedony to create a full set of equipment for you, but it looks like we don’t have the time. Luckily, the armour and weapon were completed during this month, and I’m sure they’ll be of use to you.

As Elder Dita spoke, a crystal armour giving off a chilling aura and a knife with an equally cold aura appeared in his hands. As soon as the 2 pieces of equipment appeared, the temperature in the entire hall fell by a few degrees, and everyone felt a trace of coldness flood through their bodies and souls, and they couldn’t help but shiver.

“What mighty airs!” Ling Chen said subconsciously. For equipment to give off such airs, they were definitely exceptionally powerful!

“Wow! What a pretty armour and knife! Are they made from ice?” Xiao Qi yelled out. No matter if it was the armour or the knife, they both looked as if they were carved from translucent crystals.

For the Dwarves, who have great forging abilities, to spend a whole month on these 2 pieces of equipment with the Chilling Crystal Chalcedony as the raw materials, they definitely were not ordinary equipment. Everyone impatiently looked at their stats:

[Chilling Crystal Battle Armour]: Type: Full Body Armour, Grade:

Heaven's End, Equipment Requirements: Any profession above LV60. A powerful battle armour forged by the Dwarves with Chilling Crystal Chalcedony, giving off a chilling aura. It has powerful water resistances and almost perfect physical defence.

Stats: Defence+1080, HP+900, Strength+50, Constitution+65, Spirit+50, Water Resistance+40%, immunity to Freeze, Silence, and Slow debuffs. When receiving damage, there is a 10% chance to completely negate the damage and a 5% chance to fully reflect the damage.

Additional Skills:

[Chilling Crystal Absolute Defence]: Greatly increases the Chilling Crystal Battle Armour's Defence for a certain period of time, and it greatly reduces all Physical Damage received. Effects: Chilling Crystal Battle Armour's Defence + 160%, lasting for 100 seconds. Costs 60 MP, Cooldown time: 10 minutes.

[Chilling Crystal Hell]: Releases the boundless freezing air within the Chilling Crystal Battle Armour to send the surrounding enemies into a cold, icy hell. Effects: All targets within 10 metres have a 60% chance to be [Frozen] for 5 seconds, and they will lose 20,000 HP per second while Frozen. Costs 60 MP, Cooldown time: 10 minutes.

[Chilling Star]: Type: Knife, Grade: Heaven's End, Equipment Requirements: Any profession above LV60. An ice-type Knife forged by the Dwarves using the Chilling Crystal Chalcedony. It is small and light, and it gives off a bone-piercing cold aura. When fighting with enemies, it can cause enemies to be slowly devoured by the cold, but when holding it, the user will not feel any coldness.

Stats: Physical Attack Power+1000, Strength+50, Constitution+10, Agility+120, Critical Chance+25%, Pierce Chance+5%, Attack Speed+20, has a 5% chance to apply a 3 second [Frozen] status when attacking.

Bonus Stats: Parry Level: 3, when attacking an enemy at close range, the enemy will be affected by the cold aura.

Additional Skills:

[Icy Elegance]: Releases the chilling aura within the Chilling Star, turning all attacks into Ice-type attacks and greatly increasing the chances of attacks applying a [Frozen] status. Can be turned on and off at will.

[Chilling Star Cosmos]: Completely releases the chilling energy within the Chilling Crystal Chalcedony, releasing icy light that flies towards enemies like meteors. The light releases massive damage upon touching enemies, and it instantly releases a thick layer of ice, freezing enemies completely. Effects: Launches a single target attack within 30 metres, dealing 1000% damage after hitting the target and applying a [Frozen] status for 5 seconds. Costs 150 MP, Cooldown time: 300 seconds.

“Wow!!” The girls cried out. These were both Heaven’s End grade equipment!

Even Ling Chen was completely shocked… to all players, 2 pieces of Heaven’s End grade equipment was simply heaven-defying equipment! Even Ling Chen, who already had excellent equipment, only had 2 pieces of Heaven’s End grade equipment so far. One was the Twilight Spear from the Mountain Giant, and the other was the Evil God’s Mask from Xiao Feng Chen. And right now, Dita had actually given him 2 pieces of LV60 Heaven’s End grade equipment!

Just then, Ling Chen had slightly doubted the Dwarves’ talent – why did it take them a whole month to forge 2 pieces of equipment? Now that he that they were both Heaven’s End grade equipment, he couldn’t help but marvel… to be able to create 2 pieces of Heaven’s End grade equipment in merely a month, who else would be able to do it apart from the Dwarves?

Ling Chen equipped the [Chilling Crystal Battle Armour] and

took off the [Titan's Embrace], and he held the [Chilling Star] in his hands. When others approached, they would feel a bone-piercing coldness, but in his hands, he didn't feel cold at all. This was the first Knife Ling Chen had used in the Mystic Moon world, and it was the weapon he was most proficient with. Back at 'Hell', he had been extremely proficient with killing people using knives, and he had taken countless lives using them.

"Thank you, Elder Dita," Ling Chen said with gratitude. He understood that even for the Dwarves with Chilling Crystal Chalcedony, taking them a month to complete 2 pieces of Heaven's End grade equipment must have required great amounts of time and effort.

"Compared to what you've given us, this is nothing," Elder Dita said sincerely.

Ling Chen came a bit closer to Elder Dita as he asked in a softer voice, "Then the Underworld God Cannon... how has progress been going?"

Elder Dita's expression became slightly grim as he said in shame, "Our ancestors' wisdom makes us blush with shame. Although we have the blueprint, the Underworld God Mysterious Blood Metal, the White Tiger's Heart, the Vermillion Bird's Heart, and energy cores that people don't even dare to dream of, we're still investigating the profoundness of the Underworld God Cannon... perhaps if we see the real Underworld God Cannon, we'll be able to greatly deepen our understanding. However, this is evidently impossible... as such, we just need more time. I'm sure that since our ancestors were able to build it, so will we."

"Mm, do your best," Ling Chen replied in a low voice. He didn't say anything like 'don't worry' or 'take your time', but he instead said 'do your best'. This is because he remembered the dangerous look in the Forgotten Emperor's eyes when he had left.

Moreover, Ling Tian City's continuous development will

definitely enrage the Forgotten City even more. If the Forgotten City truly retaliated, how could a player's city defend against a Royal City?

The reason Ling Chen had acted so arrogantly in response to the Forgotten Emperor's threats was because of the blueprint he had given to the Dwarves...

The Underworld God Cannon!

Even Qi Yue had called it a 'God-killing Cannon', and it was an ultimate weapon that even the Moon God Clan feared!

Chapter 636 – World Of The Dead

Ghastly Grounds.

If Ling Chen continued towards the east, he would reach the Lonely Spirit Ridge where he had first met Xi Ling. If he kept going even further east, he would reach the Nameless Ridge where he had found the Dwarves. He had come to this dangerous region many times, and each time he came, he felt quite rueful.

The Ghastly Grounds was where Xiao Hui had found the Underworld Entrance.

After leaving Ling Tian City, Ling Chen had directly come to this place. Since he had made this decision, unless something incredibly important happened at Ling Tian City, he wouldn't be returning before he found the next Orb... moreover, if he truly entered the Underworld of the legends, he wasn't sure if he would even be able to leave as he wished.

However, the prerequisite was that he could enter.

The first time he had met Qian Gun Gun, he had been told that the Underworld was a world of the dead, and that humans were unable to enter... though Qian Gun Gun was an exception.

Not too long later, Ling Chen came to the place he remembered, and after clearing a large crowd of Zombies, the dark and flat ground beneath his feet suddenly slid open as a black hole appeared in the ground.

That's right, this was the entrance!

Ling Chen did not hesitate and walked forwards and then stepped into the entrance. He walked down a flight of steep steps, and soon he had descended completely into the ground.

"Ding... you have entered the 'Ghastly Passageway'. At the end of the Ghastly Passageway is the Underworld Door connecting to the Underworld. The Underworld is a world of the dead, and any

living creature that goes there will quickly lose their lives. At the same time, those with an aura of life will not be able to open the Underworld Door. Please proceed with caution."

Ling Chen: "....."

After entering the passageway, it was completely dark in front of him without even a glimmer of light. Ling Chen came prepared, and he took out a small luminous pearl he had bought from the Item Shop, the white light it emitted allowing him to see roughly 5 metres around him.

This was a narrow and long passageway. It was 2 or 3 metres tall, and it was less than 2 metres wide. Ling Chen summoned Xiao Hui and slowly advanced. The further in he walked, the more turbid the air became, and the heavy and suffocating feeling in his chest increased.

This suffocating feeling... could it be...

-300, -300, -300...

Looking at the red damage figures continuously rising above his head, Ling Chen frowned. He had continuously lost HP at the Ghastly Grounds because of the miasma, but that was only 50 HP per second. In here, it had increased to 300 HP per second!

Qian Gun Gun had said that the miasma from the Ghastly Grounds leaked from the Underworld Door. If it was already so terrifying outside the Underworld Door, just how bad would it be within the Underworld itself...

Ling Chen immediately cast away this thought and resolutely continued to advance. Because of Cai'Er's powerful healing abilities, he would be able to easily withstand this sort of HP loss. However, Cai'Er was a Light-type creature, and this was a place of death, and it was a Darkness-type environment, which countered Cai'Er. As such, he didn't dare to summon Cai'Er in this sort of place because she might be in even greater danger than him.

-450, -450... -500, -500...

“Awoo!”

As he advanced, Ling Chen’s HP fell even faster, causing him to occasionally drink some Dew of Dawn. At this moment, Xiao Hui, who was scouting ahead, barked and stopped walking. Ling Chen also paused and then walked slowly until he reached Xiao Hui’s side. With the luminous pearl, he was able to see a tightly-closed, large, dark door.

[Underworld Door]: A door to the Underworld in one of the various places in the Forgotten Continent. The places it appears in always have a dense deathly aura, miasma, and low-level Undead. Only medium to high level Undead can pass through the Underworld Door. When medium to high level Undead come close to the Underworld Door, the Underworld Door will automatically open. If new Undead beings enter the Underworld Door, they will be sent to a safe region in the Underworld.

Underworld Door... only medium to high level Undead could pass through... that meant that living beings couldn’t open the Underworld Door!

Ling Chen took a step forwards towards the Underworld Door and stretched out his hand, pressing it against the cold stone door. Because he was so close to the Underworld Door, a powerful suffocating feeling swept towards him, making him feel incredibly uncomfortable, and his HP loss rose to 1500 HP per second. However, no matter how hard he pushed the door, it would not budge or react at all.

Ling Chen quickly took a few steps back and drank a drop of Dew of Dawn before he took a few deep breaths and was finally able to breathe properly again. He silently looked at the tightly-closed Underworld Door, wondering how he could enter... putting aside passing through the Underworld and reaching the Underworld Blood Lake, this Underworld Door was already a major issue.

Now, Ling Chen desperately hoped that Qian Gun Gun would suddenly pop out from there... as a living person, Qian Gun Gun could freely enter and exit the Underworld – he definitely had some sort of special method! If he could find Qian Gun Gun, he would buy that method no matter how great a price he had to pay. However, meeting Qian Gun Gun depended on luck, and he couldn't just meet him whenever he wanted to.

Qi Yue had refused to leave Ling Chen's house, so he couldn't contact her immediately. Otherwise, perhaps she would know of a method to enter...

"Ding... your pet 'Leng'Er' is requesting to leave the Pet Space. Do you accept?"

Leng'Er? Why did she want to come out? Wait, that's right! Leng'Er was an Undead creature, so perhaps she would be comfortable in such an environment.

Ling Chen did not refuse and summoned Leng'Er.

After Leng'Er appeared, she did not turn to face Ling Chen, but she instead stared at the Underworld Door. She liked dark environments, and a faint black light danced within her abnormally dark eyes. Every time Ling Chen saw her eyes, he would feel as if he was looking at a boundlessly dark night. After a while, the half-spirit girl finally moved, and she tightly hugged the doll in her arms as she looked forwards and spoke in a gentle and hazy voice, "What... a strange... feeling..."

The instant Leng'Er appeared, the suffocating feeling and the HP loss that Ling Chen was experiencing suddenly disappeared. Even Xiao Hui stopped losing HP every second. As he wondered what was going on, a system announcement sounded out:

"Ding... because of unknown reasons, when your pet 'Leng'Er' is summoned, all negative effects from the environment to you and your pets will be nullified. Because you are in an Undead region, please keep your pet Leng'Er summoned.

Summoning Leng'Er could give him immunity to the negative effects from the Undead environment? Leng'Er had such an ability?

While shocked, Ling Chen was about to say something to Leng'Er when a sound came from in front of them...

Rumble...

This rumbling evidently came from the Underworld Door in front of them. As Ling Chen watched on in shock, the tightly-closed Underworld Door slowly opened... soon, it was fully open, revealing a dark, foggy world.

"Ding... because of the influence from your pet 'Leng'Er', the Underworld Door has been opened. While Leng'Er is summoned, you will not be negatively affected by the Undead aura, and you can safely enter the Underworld. However, the Underworld is the world of the Undead, and living creatures will be in grave danger. Please proceed with caution."

It was open! The Underworld Door that he was just worrying about was open!

Looking at the stone door, Ling Chen was so excited that he felt like picking up Leng'Er and giving her a big kiss. It turned out that Leng'Er being an Undead creature had such a useful aspect.

However, until the Underworld Door was open, Leng'Er's gaze was fixed forwards, and when the dark world behind it was revealed, her dark pupils started to tremble. It was as if her body was attracted by something, and she slowly floated over.

"Leng'Er?" Ling Chen took a step forwards as he called out.

Hearing Ling Chen's voice, Leng'Er stopped and lightly turned to face him, her eyes looking quite hazy, "Master... I feel a familiar and warm feeling... I want to... go inside."

Leng'Er was a special type of Undead creature, so perhaps the Underworld was the best place for her and was something that

attracted her... Ling Chen held Leng'Er's small hand and said, "Let's go inside together then."

After speaking, he breathed in and stepped through the Underworld Door, a large and small body vanishing within the boundless darkness.

After passing through the Underworld Door, Ling Chen felt like he had been in the completely dark world for an extremely long time, and he closed his eyes. When he felt his surroundings settle, he opened his eyes and found that he was no longer in that completely dark world, and there was instead some faint light.

"Ding... you have entered the special region 'Underworld'. Since you are the first player to enter the 'Underworld', Fame+900."

The ground was black, and the sky was completely grey and seemed extremely low, giving off a feeling of suppression. The entire world was dim and silent to the point that Ling Chen could almost hear his own heartbeat. Beside him, Leng'Er stared with her lips parted as if she was shocked at what she saw. Ling Chen turned and looked at his surroundings. To the north, there were a few small mountains; to the south, there were rocks and stones; to the west... there were rows of damaged houses... looking like a ruined village.

The system announcement told Ling Chen that when first entering the Underworld, he would be sent to a safe region. Ling Chen had no idea where in the Underworld this place was, or how he could reach the Underworld Blood Lake.

He also discovered a big problem... he and Leng'Er had been sent here by the Underworld Door, but there were no transportation channels or other Underworld Doors here... how would he leave this place?

Chapter 637 – The Location Of The Underworld Blood Lake

Ling Chen took out the Forgotten Continent's map and looked over it, but he couldn't find anything related to the Underworld. As such, he could only look around himself and walk towards the run-down houses.

It looked like a ransacked village. There were tens of houses, and all of them were damaged and in need of repairs. The walls were jet black, and many of the walls were falling off. Weeds grew on the roofs, and most of the windows and doors were rotten. The small village was completely silent, and from the distance, light could only be see in 3 or 4 of these houses.

Tap... Tap... Tap...

Because it was so quiet, Ling Chen's footsteps sounded extremely clear. After he took a few steps, he suddenly stopped because he realised the walking sounds weren't just coming from himself.

Tap... Tap... Tap...

Ahead of him, a dark figure appeared within his field of vision. Because it was too dark, Ling Chen was unable to see the person's facial features or what the person was wearing. He could only see that the person had a crooked back, had their head tilted to one side, and walked extremely slowly. Each step was so heavy that it seemed contain all of his body weight. Ling Chen frowned as he gripped the Chilling Star in his hand, walking towards the figure.

When they were about 10 metres apart, Ling Chen was finally able to see the figure clearly... it was indeed a person. He wasn't short, but because of how hunched he was, he looked like he had some sort of illness. His footsteps were slow and heavy, and every step seemed to take all of his strength. He looked like an old man who barely had any strength. The clothes he was wearing made

him look worse than a beggar, and there was no place on them that was clean or undamaged... they were no longer clothes, but rather rags that were barely held together. His face was also incredibly ashen, and it was so wrinkled that it looked like the exterior of a hundred-year-old tree. His eyes were wide open, but they had no life in them. He stared forwards, not even looking at Ling Chen who was so close to him.

Even after passing each other, the person did not even look at Ling Chen. Ling Chen stopped walking and turned to look at the person.

Was that a resident of the Underworld? Or... an Undead? He was quite similar to the Zombies in the Ghastly Grounds.

Moreover, Undead were very sensitive to the aura of life and hated it, but this person did not react at all... could it be that the deathly aura that Leng'Er gave off covered his aura of life?

That was the only explanation.

Ahead of Ling Chen was a dimly-lit room. There was a broken sign that had 2 crudely written words: Underworld Goods.

Eh? Underworld Goods? Could this be...

Ling Chen thought about it before he made up his mind and walked to the door, carefully stepping inside.

Although he was entering a room, he did not feel any warmth. Instead, he felt a cold, eerie air. The room was less than 10 square metres, and it was just as dirty and messy as it was outside. The counter was made from rotting wood, and there was a small candle with a small, flickering flame on the counter. The Undead could not see anything in absolute darkness, but they feared and hated light, so they only used a little bit of light to help them see.

Behind the counter was an old man with an incredibly dark face and a body as thin as a skeleton's.

"What... do... you... want... to... buy..."

When he saw Ling Chen enter, the old man's dead fish eyes flickered as he spoke in a voice that was as unpleasant as sandpaper grating against something.

After speaking, the old man suddenly raised his head as a Zombie-like face appeared in Ling Chen's sight. "What a dense deathly aura. This sort of deathly aura needs to have accumulated for more than thousands of years... or even ten thousand years. You... are most likely a high-level Undead, right? As a high-level Undead, why are you not at the Royal City? Why are you instead at a low-level place like this?"

This elderly Undead had a terrifying appearance and his voice was horrible to listen to, but his words made sense, and it seemed like his mind was like that of a normal human's. Ling Chen quickly thought of a response as he walked to the counter and said, "Hello, I just came here, and I'm not sure what you're talking about. Where are we right now?"

"You just came? So that's why." The elderly Undead's hoarse voice sounded out, "No wonder why you're dressed so strangely. This is the Underworld, a place where dead creatures are gathered. Right now, you're in a low-level village that doesn't even have a name."

"Where dead creatures are gathered? Does that mean that after people die, they'll come here?" Ling Chen asked.

"No," The elderly Undead said as he moved his withered lips, "after living creatures die, they leave behind corpses. If corpses gather large amounts of deathly aura, they can be reanimated as Undead. Low-level Undead are like the Zombies in those deathly environments, and they only have the ability to move and have very basic thinking. They do not have the right to enter the Underworld because the Underworld Door will not open for them."

"If the deathly aura is incredibly dense, or if they've developed in

those environments for a long time, or if the corpse still has large amounts of energy left after becoming an Undead, they might develop more advanced thinking to the point that they have the same intelligence as living creatures. High-level Undead's minds are exactly as if they were alive, and if they are strong enough, they can perhaps awaken some of the memories remaining in their bodies about their previous lives. Just like you... you have the deathly aura of a high-level Undead. As such, you have high-level intelligence. The way you walk and speak are evidence of this."

The elderly Undead's words caused a chill in Ling Chen's heart. He naturally knew about Zombies – they were the most common form of Undead. The Ghastly Grounds, which was right in front of the Underworld Door, was filled with Zombies. This was because the deathly aura was extremely strong, making it common for Undead to spawn there. The elder Undead's words made Ling Chen surprised him, so he asked, "According to your words, if high-level Undead have intellect rivalling that when they were alive, wouldn't that just be like they hadn't died? And if they can access their memories... wouldn't that mean they had been revived? Like a second life?"

The elderly Undead rolled his eyes as he spoke in his hoarse voice, "You're too naïve. The intelligence I'm talking about is limited to within the Underworld. This is because the Underworld has the densest deathly aura in the world and is a heaven for the Undead. In here, the deathly aura within the Undead is at its most active state, allowing the Undead to have a clear mind... otherwise, apart from very few apex-level Undead, even high level Undead's minds will be scattered when they leave the Underworld, turning into mere Zombies. As for regaining their memories from when they were alive, less than 10 have accomplished this over the past 10,000 years... that's about 1 in every 1,000 years."

"... So it's like that." Ling Chen nodded. This made much more sense. If the Undead could remember what had happened during

their lives, it would be akin to reviving – that would simply be too heaven-defying.

“You’re a high-level Undead, yet you were not sent to the Royal City but to here. Looks like your body was attracted by the Underworld Door’s deathly aura, and you came here through the Underworld Door. After coming here, you slowly developed consciousness,” The elderly Undead said stiffly.

“That’s right, I remember that I somehow passed through a place called the Underworld Door. When I came to, I was near here,” Ling Chen said.

“Half of the new Undead in the Underworld were attracted by the 900 Underworld Doors scattered throughout the Forgotten Continent, and the other half were found by the 900 Underworld King Representatives. If they find any Undead that are at least medium-level, they are brought back to the Underworld. If they find any high-level Undead, they are directly taken to the Royal City.”

“What sort of place is the Royal City?” Ling Chen asked.

“The Underworld Royal City is the place with the most high-level Undead, and it is where the magnificent Underworld King lives. With your deathly aura, you definitely have the right to enter the Underworld Royal City. If you want to go there, perhaps this map will help you.”

The elderly Undead stretched out a withered hand and took out a burned paper scroll, throwing it to Ling Chen.

[Underworld Map]: A map that roughly lays out the Underworld’s regions and localities. It is worth using as a reference.

Although it was a ‘map’, it was incredibly crude. There were many lines messily drawn over each other, creating what looked like a main road. Twisted and messy words were written on

various places on the map, labelling some of the place's names.

However, it was still a map in the end, and receiving a map that he could use 'as a reference' filled Ling Chen with delight. What made him even more surprised and happy was that this map also had a positioning function, which told Ling Chen that he was at the most north-eastern point in the Underworld, while the Underworld Royal City was about 500 kilometres away at the exact center.

The size of the Underworld naturally couldn't be compared to the Forgotten Continent, but it was still much larger than Ling Chen had expected.

The Underworld Royal City was at the centre of the Underworld, and it was where many high-level Undead gathered. When Ling Chen was looking around the Underworld Royal City, his pupils suddenly contracted.

Right above the Underworld Royal City on the map were 3 words written so small that they were almost imperceptible. Ling Chen brought the map closer to his eyes and read each of the words...

Underworld... Blood... Lake...

"Underworld Blood Lake!" Ling Chen couldn't help but call out... that place was why he had come here!

"That's an incredibly terrifying place to us Undead," The elderly Undead said expressionlessly, "and it's one of the 3 Forbidden Areas of the Underworld. Over the past 10,000 years, countless high-level Undead were submerged in there; however, their power remaining in there. As such, that place is the place in the Underworld with the most deathly aura and the most energy. Only those who have the Lord Underworld King's permission can enter. Anyone else will be destroyed and also thrown into the Underworld Blood Lake. This is because at least 3 of the Underworld King's 8 Generals stand guard there. Even if one passes through the entrance, one will need to pass through a fire

purgatory and an ice purgatory to reach the Underworld Blood Lake. It's said that there's a powerful Undead Guardian Beast that Lord Underworld King brought back many years ago sleeping there... all in all, forget that place and never go near it."

Chapter 638 – Heading To The Underworld Royal City

Ling Chen could only nod in response to what the elderly Undead had just said, but he remembered where the Underworld Blood Lake was. He then looked through the things that were being sold in the shop… this was one of the most remote and run-down places in the Underworld, so Ling Chen didn't have high expectations. However, he was incredibly shocked from just a single glance.

[Underworld Coffee Bean]: A coffee bean harvested from a coffee tree that was grown surrounded by deathly aura. It is incredibly bitter, and it can stimulate the consumer's hidden potential through this bitterness. Effects: After consuming, -100 HP for 30 seconds and then gives 50 SP after 30 seconds. Effects cannot be stacked, and it needs to be completely swallowed in order to take effect. Price: 8 for 1 Underworld Coin. Stock: 86,000. If bought in kilograms, a 15% discount is available.

[Underworld Stone]: A stone that has absorbed large amounts of deathly aura due to existing in an environment filled with deathly aura for a long time. Can add a [Darkness] attribute to equipment. Price: 1 for 2 Underworld Coins. Stock: 65,560. If bought in tonnes, a 15% discount is available.

[Darkness Bat Egg]: Can hatch a Grade 5 Darkness Bat pet. Darkness Bats are creatures that are commonly found in remote regions of the Underworld. Although they are not Undead creatures, they like places with darkness and deathly aura, and they have Darkness attacks. After growing, they have Vampirism abilities and the ability to apply abnormal statuses. Price: 1 for 10 Underworld Coins. Stock: 9800.

[Soul-Splitting Thorn]: Created by cutting and refining a normal thorn that grew in an environment filled with deathly aura. It contains a berserk deathly aura, and it can be used for long-range

attacks. However, it is useless against Undead targets. Upon hitting a living creature, it will quickly devour its aura of life, instantly causing 5000 Basic Darkness Damage. Price: 1 for 20 Underworld Coins. Stock: 28,000. If bought in baskets, a 15% discount is available.

This incredibly shoddy shop only sold 4 things, but all 4 things were enough to cause Ling Chen to stare in shock. A coffee bean that could increase SP by 50! Such an item in the Forgotten Continent would be completely heaven-defying, yet it was being sold in kilograms! Stones that could give permanent attributes were sold in tonnes! Grade 5 pet... they were only a single grade below Celestial grade and would be extremely rare in the China Region, but they were being sold en masse here!

There were even weapons that could instantly deal 5,000 damage, but what was most terrifying was that there were no prerequisites to using them! With this item, even a LV1 newbie would be able to insta-kill any player below LV50. This would completely destroy the balance of the game, and it shouldn't even exist!

The things sold in the Underworld simply were not on the same level as the items sold on the surface of the Forgotten Continent.

However, this currency... Underworld Coins?

"What are these Underworld Coins?" Ling Chen raised his head and asked.

"You can earn Underworld Coins through labour. If you don't want to work, you can also take them from low-level Undead... for example, those low-level Walkers in the wilderness. As long as you have enough strength, you can legally steal and kill within the Underworld. The strong preying on the weak is the natural order here," The elderly Undead said with a stiff face.

After Ling Tian City was built, the amount of gold that flooded in every day was an astronomical figure. Naturally, Ling Chen was

ridiculously rich. However, it seemed like no matter how much gold he had, he wouldn't be able to spend any of it in the Underworld because they used Underworld Coins here!

Ling Chen did not have a single Underworld Coin, so after looking around, he left the shop and walked around in this incredibly small village. The feeling of desolation and ruin was even eerier than that of a grave in the human world. He walked past a few Undead, but they were all like the first Undead he had met, and they did not even look at him as they unconsciously ambled forwards.

This was most likely the norm for the Underworld's villages. Undead were Undead. Low-level Undead did not have human intelligence, so it was unlikely that they would live like humans.

After taking out the crude map and glancing it over again, Ling Chen summoned Xiao Hui and confirmed the direction before he summoned Snow Cherry and started to fly towards the Underworld Blood Lake and the Underworld Royal City.

After flying less than 3 kilometres, grey fog suddenly appeared ahead, greatly reducing the visibility. Ling Chen decreased Snow Cherry's flying speed as he looked below, and he saw figures slowly moving through the grey fog.

[Walker]: Type: Undead, Level: LV50, HP: 7000. The lowest type of humanoid Undead. It has powerful Attack Power due to the death energy it possesses, but because of its low intellect, its judgment is extremely poor.

Passive Skills: Extremely high Attack Power and Defence, negate 70% of Darkness-element attacks.

Attack Style: Swings its arm to heavily hit its target. Once hit, deals large amounts of damage and has a certain chance to apply a [Poison] status.

Weaknesses: Fears Fire element and Light element attack, and

has extremely slow Movement Speed.

Within the grey fog, there were dark figures walking extremely slowly. Their skin was a shocking black colour, and they were wearing incredibly tattered clothing. Most of their bodies had rotted away, and some even had eyeballs hanging out of their sockets. They were walking so slow that they would only take a step around once every 2 seconds. These were evidently the 'Walkers' that the elderly Undead had referred to, and they were quite similar to the Zombies outside the Underworld Door. Although they were the lowest-level type of humanoid Undead in the Underworld, they were much higher level and much stronger than the Zombies outside.

Ling Chen thought for a moment before he and Snow Cherry shot down like a rocket. He gripped Chilling Star in his right hand and the Twilight Spear in his left hand, sending out 2 Boundless Desolations.

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang...

As the upgraded version of Ling Tian Burst, Boundless Desolation not only dealt more damage, but it also now had a range of 10 metres and had more powerful shockwaves. With a Boundless Desolation on his left and right, the 2 arcs of energy mercilessly swept out, causing 10 or so of the Walkers to horribly scream without even seeing what had hit them as they fell to the ground.

Ding...

Ling Chen seemed to hear something metallic fall to the ground. He came to the sides of the Walkers that had fallen, and after looking for a while, he found 2 cold, grey coins that were similar to gold coins.

[Underworld Coin]: The currency used in the Underworld. It is unknown what material it is made of.

After killing 13 Walkers in an instant, he had obtained 2

Underworld Coins. With Ling Chen's 28 Luck, this drop rate was absurdly low. However, Ling Chen did not feel that this was too little because the prices in the shop in the village were incredibly low: a single Underworld Coin could buy 8 Underworld Coffee Beans, which amounted to 400 SP in total! These 2 Underworld Coins in Ling Chen's hands were worth 800 SP! This was a figure that could cause almost all players to go crazy.

It was just that from the Underworld Coffee Bean's description, they seemed to be very, very bitter. However, in order to obtain that 50 SP, bearing with that bitterness seemed worth it.

That was what he had initially thought.

Some time after when he tried the Underworld Coffee Bean, he finally understood... that was why the 'cheap' Underworld Coffee Bean gave so much SP for free!!

With the War God profession's newly upgraded skills as well as his 2 pieces of LV60 Heaven's End grade equipment, Ling Chen's overall strength greatly increased. He could even easily insta-kill normal monsters that were 10 levels higher than him, let alone these Walkers which were lower level than him. After casually clearing out a few waves of the Walkers and collecting 10 or so Underworld Coins, Ling Chen became quite bored and returned to the air, continuing towards the Underworld Royal City. He wanted to quickly reach the Underworld Blood Lake and find the Orb – after all, that was his goal in coming to the Underworld.

Leng'Er silently floated ahead of Ling Chen, her small feet lightly touching Snow Cherry's back. After entering the Underworld, Leng'Er had been incredibly calm and silent, not saying anything at all. She continuously stared ahead as if she was looking for something. Evidently, this had to do with the Underworld – after all, Leng'Er was a type of special Undead, so she probably felt like she had returned to where she belonged.

After flying for 10 or so kilometres, everything Ling Chen had

seen could be described as eerie, desolate, and murky. The entire Underworld seemed to permanently have a feeling of oppression and darkness, which seemed to be what the Undead liked. At this moment, Leng'Er, who had been silent the entire time, came over and looked at Ling Chen as she spoke slowly in her tender voice, "Master, story."

Ling Chen instantly felt a headache coming... telling stories, then even more stories... after being with Leng'Er for such a long time, he told Leng'Er a few stories every day as long as he was in the game. Leng'Er had obviously turned this into a routine, and her favourability towards him gradually increased. As such, he had told her almost all of the Grimms' Fairy Tales, Andersen's Fairy Tales, Mars Gravity's Fairy Tales, Mars Gravity Stories, Mars Gravity Complete Works... etc. How could he have so many stories to tell her?!

Hmm... wait! There were still some fable stories!

"Mm, alright!" Ling Chen immediately warmly and lovingly smiled. "I'll tell Leng'Er a fable today then."

"A... fable?" Leng'Er, who had never heard of fables before, repeated the word in confusion.

Ling Chen said in a serious tone, "Fables are a type of story used to explain a principle. Not only are they fun to listen to, but they can also teach Leng'Er all sorts of things. Hmm... the first one is called 'Guarding a tree stump, waiting for rabbits'!"

Leng'Er blinked, eagerly listening.

Ling Chen calmed himself down and started telling the story, "A long time ago, there was an uncle farmer. One day, he was ploughing his fields when he suddenly saw a rabbit run over and crash into a tree stump, killing itself. The farmer picked up the dead rabbit and happily went home. From then onwards, the farmer stopped doing tiresome farm-work and instead sat at the tree stump every day, hoping that more rabbits would run into it

and kill themselves. In the end, he was rewarded with hemorrhoids after waiting 88 days.”

Chapter 639 – Underworld Blood Lake (1)

Leng'Er: "……"

"Mm this story tells us that we shouldn't sit for too long at the same place, otherwise we might develop hemorrhoids," Ling Chen said earnestly.

"What… are haemorrhoids?" Leng'Er asked with a confused look.

"Haemorrhoids are… hmm… ah… they're not good. Leng'Er will know after she grows up," Ling Chen said helplessly while scratching his head. "Alright, forget about that one. I'll tell you a different fable. This one's called… The Old Man Who Moved A Mountain!

"The story goes like this: there was a man named Yu Gong. There were 2 large mountains in front of his house, making it so that his house never had any sunlight. As such, he started moving rocks every day to move those 2 mountains away. An old man called Zhi Sou laughed at him and said, 'You idiot, these 2 mountains are too big. You'll never be able to finish moving them.' In response, Yu Gong said, 'After I die, there's still my son, and after my son, there's still my grandson. I'll have an innumerable number of descendants, who will one day move the 2 mountains away.' This matter was spread quite far away until the Emperor of Heaven heard it. The Emperor of Heaven was very touched, so he sent Sola Aoi, Sakura Ria, Yui Hatano, Hime Kamiya, Maria Ozawa, Azusa Yamamoto, Yui Seto… and other 'goddesses' to help Yu Gong give birth to descendants… the next day, the old man Zhi Sou also started to move rocks…"

Leng'Er: "??????"

"This fable tells us that no matter what we do, we should be determined and resolute. Only by being determined will we have victory and hope, as well as the love of goddesses," Ling Chen said

in a deep tone.

Leng'Er still looked incredibly confused, and she said in a small voice, "Those goddesses... all have such strange names... why did they help Yu Gong have descendants?"

"Err... this... that..." Ling Chen sighed. It seemed that this fable was still too deep and wasn't understandable by kids. It seemed that he couldn't keep reading that book of fable stories. Wait, that book of fable stories seemed to be called... 'Adult Fables'. He should probably throw it away as soon as he got home.

"Leng'Er will also need to grow up to understand that one," Ling Chen said in a complicated tone.

"Fable stories aren't fun at all." Leng'Er shook her head in dissatisfaction. "I don't want to listen to fables anymore. Can master tell me a better story?"

A better story... A better story... Ling Chen gripped his hair as he gnashed his teeth. He had spent his younger years in a dim world, and he didn't know many stories. He had already told her all the ones he knew about. The book he read most recently was the 'Adult Fables', and he had enjoyed it immensely. However, now that he thought about it, it wasn't very suitable for kids.

Ling Chen's eyes suddenly lit up as he smiled at Leng'Er. "Alright, I won't tell Leng'Er anymore fable stories then. How about an 'epic'?"

"An... epic?"

"That's right. They're usually quite long, and they take a few days to be told. They're much better than stories that are told very quickly," Ling Chen said confidently as he patted his chest. "This story is called 'Romance of the Three Kingdoms'. I'm sure Leng'Er will like this story."

In his younger years, Ling Chen did not have any close relatives, and all of the stories that Ling Chen knew were from Xuanyuan

Dia Wu. The Romance of the Three Kingdoms was the first epic that Xuanyuan Dia Wu had told Ling Chen. Although she was quite young at the time, she was incredibly intelligent and had a shocking memory. She told the entirety of the Romance of the Three Kingdoms to Ling Chen perfectly. That story, full of its ups and downs, moving moments, and intense scenes and grandeur, was firmly imprinted in Ling Chen's mind, and he could now even remember every character and event.

It would take him quite a long period of time to tell Leng'Er the entire story.

Leng'Er lightly nodded and came closer to Ling Chen. Her snow-white hands were hugging the doll in front of her chest, and her face rested against the doll as she silently listened to Ling Chen talk.

"This is how the story began. A long time ago, there was a dynasty called the Eastern Han Dynasty. At the end of the Eastern Han Dynasty, there was a useless emperor called Emperor Ling of Han, who caused the Yellow Turban Rebellion, sending the country into chaos..."

1 day passed...

2 days passed...

3 days passed...

The distance between the place Ling Chen was first transported to in the Underworld and the Underworld Royal City was 500 to 600 kilometres. With Snow Cherry's Movement Speed and the fact that they could avoid all of the Undead on the ground, they should have arrived within 2 days. However, because the light in the Underworld was quite dim and the ground was covered by a grey fog, it made it difficult to navigate and greatly reduced their speed. Moreover, after Ling Chen started telling Leng'Er the story of the Romance of the Three Kingdoms, she was completely hooked, and she would ask him to continue telling her the story whenever he

logged on. If he stopped for even a bit, she would pout, looking incredibly wronged… as such, Ling Chen would spend almost all of his time telling the story to her. Often, he would lose himself in the storytelling, and when he came back to his senses and called out Xiao Hui to point out the way, he would find out that they had been off by 90 degrees or so and sometimes have to completely turn around!

Under these circumstances, Ling Chen finally reached the Underworld's central region after 3 days, and he went closer and closer to the Underworld Royal City.

As Ling Chen flew from the north-east to the centre of the Underworld, Ling Chen felt that the more towards the south-west they flew, they hotter it became. In the north-east, the air was quite cold and sinister, but here the air felt slightly hot. What made Ling Chen quite confused was that Undead didn't normally like 'hot' environments. Ling Chen looked towards the west and found that the sky towards the west was covered with a faint red glow. Although it was mostly covered by the deathly grey aura of the Underworld, Ling Chen's eyes were perceptive enough to pick up on it.

However, the confusion within Ling Chen's heart did not affect his storytelling. "After Zhao Zi Long battled ruthlessly in the Battle of Changban, he successfully broke through the encirclement with fatty Liu. When he reached the bridge, he ran into Zhang Yi De, who yelled out, 'Zi Long, hurry and go! Leave the rest to me'… after Zhao Zi Long safely left, Zhang Yi De mightily stood in front of the bridge, facing Cao Cao's million-man army by himself. When Cao Cao's army came to the bridge, Zhang Yi De wielded his viper halberd as he roared, 'Yan Country's Zhang Fei is here. Who dares to come and fight to the death?' His voice was as loud as thunder, causing the wooden bridge to crumble and the water to flow the opposite way. Cao Cao was so scared that he turned and ran, while Xiahou Jie was so scared that he fell off his horse and

died. The million-man army subsequently turned around and fled in terror…”

Ling Chen’s narrative paused there because he saw a gigantic figure giving off immense pressure through the grey fog.

The Underworld Royal City!

Ling Chen’s mind instantly felt refreshed. After travelling for 2 and a half days, he had finally reached the central city of the Underworld. Reaching this place meant that he was incredibly close to his final destination: The Underworld Blood Lake!

“And then… And then…” Leng’Er, who was left at a cliff-hanger, wasn’t happy that Ling Chen had suddenly stopped, and she shook his arm as she tried to get him to continue.

Now that they were so close to the Underworld Royal City, Ling Chen was no longer in the mood to tell Leng’Er stories, so he casually finished, “Then… Then because Zhang Yi De purposefully destroyed public property, he was restrained by the public security bureau. Mm, that’s the end of the Romance of the Three Kingdoms. It was good, right? Ahhh… Leng’Er, look, there’s a city over there!”

Leng’Er’s eyes instantly started becoming red.

Ling Chen hurriedly waved his hands as he tried to salvage the situation, “Don’t be angry, Leng’Er, don’t be angry. I was just joking just then… there’s still a lot left of the story, and the ending definitely wasn’t like that. I’ll keep telling Leng’Er the story tomorrow, okay? We need to do something important today.”

However, Leng’Er was quite obedient and well-behaved. She didn’t continue nagging Ling Chen to tell her the story, but she instead turned and looked towards the Underworld Royal City. While silent, her dark eyes started to become hazy.

She felt that within her half-spirit body something started to jump and beat.

The Underworld Royal City was the Underworld's central city, similar to the Forgotten Continent's Forgotten City. However, although it was the central city, the Underworld Royal City was also quite rundown and didn't have the splendour of a capital city. Instead, it only gave a feeling of gloominess and suppression. Standing quite far away from the entrance, Ling Chen saw Undead Warriors standing guard. The Underworld was a secret place in the Mystic Moon world, and it wasn't somewhere players could casually go. He had only been able to easily enter because of Leng'Er.

Since he had come, he should at least take a look around the Underworld Royal City – perhaps he could receive some sort of hidden quest and get something that he couldn't obtain in the outside world. However, the Underworld Royal City was where the high-level Undead gathered. They all had powerful Undead energy and intelligence that was no less inferior than normal humans. Ling Chen was a player, and while his aura of life would not be detected in low-level places, this was the Royal City filled with high-level Undead, so Ling Chen wasn't completely confident that he wouldn't be discovered.

Once it was discovered that he was a living human, the consequences were easily imaginable.

After thinking about it for a while, Ling Chen ultimately decided to pass on entering the Underworld Royal City and took to the skies once again, flying towards the Underworld Blood Lake... his goal was to go to the Underworld Blood Lake to find an Orb, not to adventure around. It was better safe than sorry.

The Underworld Blood Lake was north of the Underworld Royal City, and it was less than 10 kilometres away from the Underworld Royal City's northern gate. However, Ling Chen had no idea just what the Underworld Blood Lake looked like. As such, Ling Chen could only fly slowly and look down, searching for the Underworld Blood Lake.

As he flew further and further from the Underworld Royal City, there were less and less Undead. After about 15 minutes, a single high-level Undead Warrior unhurriedly walked past below Ling Chen. Ling Chen's eyebrows jumped as he quickly descended and landed in front of the Undead Warrior, giving him a big fright. The Undead Warrior subconsciously leapt back, and at that moment, Ling Chen's eyes flashed, activating a [Deity Curse].

"Ding... the Libra Orb's effects have been activated, [Deity Curse]'s cooldown time has been reset."

Chapter 640 – Underworld Blood Lake (2)

The shock and fear in the Undead Warrior's eyes turned into a stunned look and then became one of excitement and passion. The intensity of its emotions rivalled those of a human's, and he looked up at Ling Chen as if he was a god. "Oh heavens, what have I seen? There are still such mighty Undead in the Underworld! Your majesty surpasses even the great Underworld King!"

"Then can you tell me where the Underworld Blood Lake is?" Ling Chen calmly asked. The Feng Chen Curses worked on all humanoids whether they were alive or dead.

"Underworld Blood Lake... it's about 2 kilometres north from here. I just came from the Underworld Blood Lake, and I was going back to the Underworld Royal City to complete the task that Lord Violet Darkness gave me," the Undead Warrior said without hesitation.

"So you're one of the warriors who guard the Underworld Blood Lake?" Ling Chen asked as he looked at his appearance.

"Indeed. This is a glorious yet dull task because no one dares to trespass into the Underworld Blood Lake, nor has anyone ever succeeded. With just the 3 Underworld Gods standing guard, the Underworld Blood Lake is a place where no one can enter. With the 3 Underworld Gods, we're just decorations."

"3 Underworld Gods?" Ling Chen frowned. He remembered that the elderly Undead in the small village had said that the Underworld King had 8 Generals, so he asked, "Are they 3 out of the 8 Generals?"

"That's right! They are the 8 Underworld Gods, whose Underworld power is inferior to only that of Lord Underworld King's, and they are his most powerful Generals. The 8 Underworld Gods take turns guarding the entrance to the Underworld Blood Lake, and there are always at least 3 standing

guard," the Underworld Warrior said with an expression of worship.

8 Underworld Gods... Undead that were only weaker than the Underworld King. According to what Qi Yue had said before, the Underworld King was the same grade as the 3 Moon Goddesses, who were Saint Destroyer Grade, and he was at the peak of the Saint Destroyer Grade. If those 8 Underworld Gods were only weaker than the Underworld King, they were definitely just as terrifying, and they wouldn't be lower than Heaven's End grade... in fact, it was possible that they were Mysterious God grade or higher!

With 3 of the 8 Underworld Gods guarding the entrance to the Underworld Blood Lake, wanting to break through by force was simply a pipe dream!

"Apart from the 3 Underworld Gods, are there any other obstructions in the way of reaching the Underworld Blood Lake?" Ling Chen stealthily unleashed his second [Deity Curse] as he asked.

If it was any other Undead asking these questions, this Undead Warrior would have been filled with suspicion. However, facing a 'god', it evidently did not hold itself back as it unhesitatingly answered, "The Underworld Blood Lake is in the innermost region of the Underworld, and after going down from the entrance, one will need to pass through the horrifying Path of Shadows, Path of Darkness, and the even more terrifying Ice Purgatory and Flames Purgatory."

"Path of Shadows... Path of Darkness... Ice Purgatory... Flames Purgatory..." Ling Chen committed those names to memory and quickly asked, "What's inside all of this?"

"Err I haven't been inside before, but I've often heard Lord Violet Darkness say that the Path of Shadows is a soul-reaping formation laid down by the Lord Underworld King himself. After entering

the Path of Shadows, no matter if it's living creatures or the Undead, massive amounts of their life force and magic power will be sucked away every second, and passing through the Path of Shadows takes a few hours. Because the soul-reaping formation was laid down by Lord Underworld King himself, even high-level Undead will not be able to pass even 1% before dying. It is completely dark in the Path of Darkness, and there are many vampiric Undead in there. Once one enters, one will be torn into shreds by the vampiric Undead without having even a chance to struggle.

Comparatively speaking, the Ice Purgatory and Flames Purgatory are the truly terrifying places. I've heard that the Ice Purgatory is incredibly cold, but the temperature is not the worst thing – there are 3 giant Undead beasts raised by Lord Underworld King, and it's said that they've been there for thousands of years. Every one of them are incredibly powerful, and they've completely blocked off the exit of the Ice Purgatory. It's said that only by killing all 3 of the giant Undead monsters will one be able to exit. The Flames Purgatory has flames that we Undead fear, and there's a being that's even more terrifying than the 3 Undead monsters in the Ice Purgatory. Back then when Lord Violet Darkness talked about it, even he seemed scared...

"As such, even without the 3 Underworld Gods standing guard there, it's impossible to reach the Underworld Blood lake. There's only one way to reach the Underworld Blood Lake, and that is to receive the approval of the Lord Underworld King and be sent there through the spatial tunnel that only he can open. However, those who can gain the Lord Underworld King's favour and be sent to the Underworld Blood Lake to absorb the ancestors' power might not even appear once in a thousand years."

Ling Chen frowned. From what this Undead Warrior had said, reaching the Underworld Blood Lake would be as difficult as scaling the heavens!

However, since he had come here, he had to try to charge through even if it was as difficult as scaling the heavens!

The [Deity Curse] was about to end, so without saying anything Ling Chen immediately used [Vanishing Shadow] and disappeared from before the Undead Warrior. The Undead Warrior, who was no longer under the effects of the [Deity Curse], looked around in front of him, feeling incredibly confused and wondering if he was just hallucinating.

Ling Chen passed 2 kilometres to the north, and a dark, altar-like structure appeared in front of him. There seemed to be a strange, dark red light flickering on the altar, and there were many figures around it.

Ling Chen stopped advancing and frowned as he looked ahead... that should be where the Underworld Blood Lake was!

After descending from the sky, Ling Chen called back Snow Cherry and walked softly as he gradually approached. With 3 powerful Underworld Gods standing guard, it would be incredibly easy to be noticed from the air.

Ling Chen was an expert among experts at concealing his presence. As he stealthily advanced, he gradually came within 100 metres of the altar and stopped. He hid behind a large rock and poked his head out, looking towards the altar.

The altar wasn't very large, and its perimeter was about 30 to 40 meters long. There were 30 Undead Warriors wearing old and rusty armour standing in a circle around it, looking in different directions with serious expressions. There were also 3 tall men wearing large capes standing around the altar. As soon as Ling Chen's gaze fell on them, he felt an incredible pressure from them.

With Ling Chen's current strength, Celestial grade Bosses were no longer able to threaten him, and even normal Heaven's End Grade Bosses couldn't make him feel much pressure. Yet, each of these 3 people made Ling Chen's heart feel heavy, making it

difficult for him to breathe. There were very few beings in the Mystic Moon world that could make him feel such a way… the ones he had met in the past were the War Demon Beast, Darkness Demon Beast, Ice Demon Beast, Vermillion Bird…

In other words, all 3 of these men were Mysterious God grade! Any one of them was an existence that Ling Chen couldn't hope to defeat!

These 3 men were evidently 3 out of the 8 Underworld Gods!

Just the Path of Shadows, Path of Darkness, Ice Purgatory, and Flames Purgatory were enough to make reaching the Underworld Blood Lake as difficult as scaling the heavens, yet the Underworld King had ordered 3 of the 8 Underworld Gods to take turns standing guard. It was evident just how important the Underworld Blood Lake was, and he simply wouldn't allow anything to happen to it. Although nobody had ever trespassed into the Underworld Blood Lake, these 3 Underworld Gods didn't seem complacent at all. They stood at equal distances from each other, giving off vicious airs. Although Ling Chen was tens of metres away from them, his entire body felt cold, and his breathing became ragged.

Ling Chen silently summoned Xiao Hui and obtained information from far away.

[Red Darkness]: Type: Undead, Level: ???, Grade: Mysterious God, HP: ???. One of the 8 Underworld Gods, unable to obtain any other information.

[Violet Darkness]: Type: Undead, Level: ???, Grade: Mysterious God, HP: ???. One of the 8 Underworld Gods, unable to obtain any other information.

[Black Darkness]: Type: Undead, Level: ???, Grade: Mysterious God, HP: ???. One of the 8 Underworld Gods, unable to obtain any other information.

The 3 Underworld Gods' levels were too high, and with Xiao

Hui's Eye of the Holy Spirit, Ling Chen only found out their names and grades. Just like Ling Chen had expected, all 3 of them were Mysterious God grade!

Wanting to charge through 3 Mysterious God grade Underworld Gods was simply a pipe dream. Since he couldn't force his way through, he had to use some tricks, such as...

Ling Chen suppressed his aura and soundlessly advanced until he was about 50 metres away from the platform. After stabilising his emotions, he turned to the altar and looked at the 3 silent Underworld Gods as his eyes flashed, casting a [Irreconcilable Hatred Curse] towards them.

Back at the East Ocean Continent when Ling Chen was only around LV30, even the low-tier Feng Chen Curses were effective on the Cherry Blossom God Representative. Ling Chen was now much more powerful, and he released an intermediate-tier Feng Chen Curse on the unsuspecting Underworld Gods, so there was no reason for it to fail.

Ling Chen was not disappointed, and a second later, the silent Underworld Gods opened their eyes and turned around, looking at each other with burning gazes.

"Black Darkness, what are you looking at? You dare to look at me? I'll kill you!"

"You'll kill me? I'll kill you! Even 3,000 years ago I wanted to send you to the 18th layer of hell!"

"Red Darkness, you bastard! You dare to wear a red cape? I'll kill you today!"

Bang!!

The originally-silent Underworld Gods suddenly started to roar at each other, and a cold and berserk gust of wind started to blow as their terrifying killing intent billowed out. The Undead Warriors, who had no idea what was happening, stared in horror,

looking at the Underworld Gods who had been incredibly peaceful just a second ago and were now threatening to kill each other.

“Today, either you or I will die!”

Roars of rage sounded out as the eyes of the 3 Underworld Gods became blood-red and rushed towards each other as they emitted murderous airs… they were completely under the influence of the Irreconcilable Hatred Curse, but they had not completely lost their rationality. They were merely incredibly vengeful towards each other, but they wouldn’t forget their duty to protect the Underworld Blood Lake. With their Mysterious God grade power, they would inevitably damage the entrance to the Underworld Blood Lake if they started fighting here. As such, they rose into the air and shot like 3 arrows towards the distance, the air from their ascension knocking the Undead Warriors to the ground. Following this, thunder-like booms sounded out from the distance.

The Undead Warriors on the ground stared into the distance, all of them in a daze. None of them noticed a transparent figure stealthily creeping towards the entrance they were supposed to be guarding.

The 3 Underworld Gods were too powerful, and Ling Chen wasn’t completely confident that even he could pass unnoticed with Vanishing Shadow. However, he was certain he could get past these Undead Warriors. He swaggered onto the altar until he reached the centre, and then he saw a hole that was about 1 metre wide. Without even thinking about it, he jumped in.

Chapter 641 – Path of Shadows

It was as if Ling Chen had jumped into a bottomless, dark chasm. As he quickly fell, the light completely disappeared. The sound of wind passing by howled in his ears, and Ling Chen activated the [Feng Chen Technique], slowing down his descent. Gradually, he stopped falling until he was hovering in the air.

Ling Chen took out a luminous pearl, using the faint light to look around the dark space, and found that he was simply in a dark hole. Ling Chen summoned Snow Cherry and Xiao Hui, and then he slowly descended onto Snow Cherry's back.

If everything was as he expected, this should be the starting point to the Underworld Blood Lake!

Regardless, since he had come here, there was no turning back. No matter what was ahead, he had to break through!

The Underworld Blood Lake was at the lowest point in the Underworld, and it was far below the surface. Although Ling Chen already knew this, the depth caused him to be quite surprised. After descending for 15 minutes, he still could not see the bottom. Although his descent wasn't very fast, he must have descended at least 3 kilometres. This was almost as deep as the Pacific Ocean, which made him incredibly shocked.

At this moment, Xiao Hui, who had been silent the entire time, barked in warning. Ling Chen immediately gave the order to stop descending, and he detected that they were nearly at the bottom from the change in airflow. However, Xiao Hui's bark wasn't warning him that they had nearly reached the bottom, but rather that there was something dangerous down there!

Just as Ling Chen stopped, information was transmitted into his mind from Xiao Hui's Eye of the Holy Spirit:

[Underworld Soul-Reaping Formation]: A devouring formation

laid down by the Underworld King within the [Path of Shadows] to prevent anyone from reaching the Forbidden Area, the Underworld Blood Lake. It has an incredibly powerful soul-reaping effect, and once living creatures or Undead go within the formation, their life force and magic power will be consumed until there's nothing left.

Soul-Reaping Formation... this was the one that the Undead Warrior had told him about! This meant that below was the Path of Shadows that he had to pass through in order to reach the Underworld Blood Lake!

According to the Undead Warrior, the Path of Shadows was incredibly long, and it would take a few hours at a normal speed. Moreover, this Soul-Reaping Formation covered the entire Path of Shadows, which meant that he would have to stay within the Soul-Reaping Formation for a few hours!

Ling Chen took out the luminous pearl and used the faint white light to look below him. There was an entrance flickering with a strange grey light... 3 words were scrawled above the entrance: Path of Shadows.

Without hesitating, Ling Chen quickly descended. As he reached the grey entrance, his feet finally landed on the cold, hard, and dark floor. He put his arms around Leng'Er in front of him as he rode on Snow Cherry and stepped into the Path of Shadows.

Sss...

The instant Snow Cherry's paw stepped into the Path of Shadows Ling Chen felt an incredibly strong suction from below, which brought with it a bone-chilling coldness and eeriness, causing Ling Chen to shudder.

-10,000, -10,000.

-10,000, -10,000.

The red and blue figures above his head gave Ling Chen a great

shock. The red figure represented his HP being lost, while the blue figure represented his MP being lost.

Every second, the Soul-Reaping Formation stole 10,000 HP and MP from him!

With Cai'Er's [Nature's Heart], Ling Chen and all of his pets' HP and MP were increased by 60%, and Ling Chen currently had 32,270HP. To players, this was Boss-level HP, but he would only last a mere 3 seconds in the Path of Shadows!

At this rate, even with the Dew of Dawn, which was the most powerful potion he had, as well as the Fairy's Blessing Earrings, he wouldn't be able to keep up with the loss!

Ling Chen hurriedly retreated from the Path of Shadows, stopping the drain to his HP and MP. After looking at his HP and MP, both of which had been greatly decreased, he felt at his wit's end. 10,000 per second meant 600,000 per minute, 36 million per hour, and a few hours... let alone a player who was not even LV60, even a LV60 Mysterious God grade Boss would not be able to survive.

When facing this [Underworld Soul-Reaping Formation], it doesn't matter how powerful one was. There was only one way to pass through the [Underworld Soul-Reaping Formation], which was to recover one's HP faster than the formation could absorb. The MP loss didn't matter, but it was impossible for players to recover more than 10,000 HP per second. After all, Ling Chen had never encountered a potion that had more powerful effects than the Dew of Dawn.

Ling Chen tightly frowned and looked at Leng'Er when he suddenly thought of something... from this [Underworld Soul-Reaping Formation]'s description, no matter if it was living creatures or Undead, their HP and MP would be forcibly absorbed. However, when they had entered, only he had been affected, while Leng'Er had been completely fine! This was because if Leng'er was

affected by the [Underworld Soul-Reaping Formation], the 'damage' she took would be transferred to Ling Chen because of their Soul Sacrifice Contract, meaning he would lose twice as much HP and MP. However, he had only lost HP and MP once per second.

Could it have to do with Leng'Er's body's constitution?

This thought flashed in his mind as Ling Chen suddenly knocked on his forehead! Goddamit! How could he have forgotten the little Fairy who he had just obtained!

"Cai'Er, hurry and come out!"

A white light flashed as a small Fairy girl appeared before him. She beat her wings as she stretched. "Wowww! I'm finally out! It was so boring in that strange place! Luckily Xi Ling was there to play with me..." Following that, the little Fairy suddenly became angry as she looked at Ling Chen in displeasure, her lips pouting. "Big brother! It's so unfair! Why haven't you called me out to play for such a long time! You take Leng'Er out to play and tell Leng'Er stories every day! You're so biased! Hmph... aiya! What is this place? Why's it so dark and smelly?"

Ling Chen's mouth twitched as he helplessly said, "Because this place is the Underworld and contains the power of death and darkness, which is completely at odds with your element and power. I was sure you would hate this place and could be harmed by the environment, so I didn't want to call you out."

"Underworld?" Cai'Er sniffed around her and tapped a finger against her mouth as she said in a small voice, "I think I've heard granny talk about this place before. Granny said that it's an incredibly scary place, and she said that it'd be incredibly easy for us to die if us Fairies came here... ugh, apart from being very dark and smelly, it doesn't seem that scary."

"That's because we have Leng'Er protecting us, so the deathly aura isn't able to harm us," Ling Chen explained before he pointed

ahead of them. “Cai’Er, the path in front of us is very dangerous, and it will quickly devour our life force, so I need you to continuously use [Nature’s Light] to recover HP for me and Xiao Hui. Can you do that?”

“Ah? Oh, got it!” Cai”Er immediately nodded and added, “Can I sing? I like singing more.”

Cai’Er was referring to [Song of Healing – Drizzle At The Light Of Dawn], which recovered 20% HP and 20% MP every second. This skill, which recovered not only HP but MP as well, would have been super powerful under normal circumstances. However, in the face of the [Underworld Soul-Reaping Formation], it simply wasn’t enough.

“If you want to sing, you can sing while you use [Nature’s Light],” Ling Chen said. It should be possible for Cai’Er to use normal skills while she sang.

“Okay, okay!” Cai’Er, who had been incredibly bored in the Pet Space, eagerly nodded. She closed her eyes as she started to sing with her sweet and cute voice.

“The sky is blue, the wind is blowing. The beautiful flowers are blossoming~

“Dew is falling, the tree’s shade is swaying, receiving the early morning’s beautiful sunlight~

“The birds in the trees are singing, the bugs in the grass are stretching~

“We’ve spread the wings of the dawn and are being bathed in the Nature Goddess’ light…”

When Ling Chen had first met Cai’Er, she had been happily singing. As Cai’Er sang, her voice sounded just as beautiful and refreshing. At the same time, he felt as if his body was basking in sunlight, and he felt incredibly warm and pleasant.

As Cai’Er sang, she spread out her hands as a pure white light,

with a tinge of green, fell around her.

+64,350, +8507, +8507.

+8507, +8507.

+64,350, +8507, +8507.

.....

The white light from [Nature's Light], combined with the [Song of Healing], quickly restored Ling Chen's HP as 2 red and a blue figure appeared above Ling Chen's head. The [Nature's Light] restored HP equivalent to 3 times Cai'Er's Magic Attack Power and added on her [Nature's Blessing] Passive Ability,boosting all healing abilities by 50%. Adding on the [Fairy's Blessing], which gave an increased 30% recovery, with Cai'Er's current 11,000 Magic Attack Power, the recovery from [Nature's Light] was simply shocking, healing Ling Chen for twice his maximum HP!

Moreover, the [Nature's Light]'s cooldown time was incredibly short, only 1 second! This meant that Cai'Er could use [Nature's Light] every 2 seconds! Cai'Er's own recovery rate was already absurd, recovering 90% HP and 90% MP every second. With that sort of recovery, unless she lost more than 90% of her health in an instant, she would instantly return to full health in the next second, and she had almost unlimited MP. Although the [Underworld Soul-Reaping Formation] was quite terrifying, it didn't matter at all to her because of her incredible recovery.

Ling Chen was delighted and didn't have to worry anymore. He brought Cai'Er onto Snow Cherry's back and charged forwards into the [Underworld Soul-Reaping Formation].

-10,000, -10,000, +64350, +8507, +8507.

-10,000, -10,000, +8507, +8507.

-10,000, -10,000, +64350, +8507, +8507.

-10,000, -10,000, +8507, +8507...

The cold suction force came from below, stealing Ling Chen, Cai'Er, and Xiao Hui's HP and MP. Different-coloured figures rose above Ling Chen's head chaotically, but with Cai'Er's singing, they were continuously bathed in pure light of Nature, and his HP remained almost full the entire time. Even the bone-piercing coldness and eeriness was greatly decreased.

Currently, without any skills, Snow Cherry's Movement Speed when mounted was 425. 3 hours later, with a bark from Xiao Hui, they arrived at the exit of the Path of Shadows.

With Cai'Er's incredibly powerful healing abilities, this terrifying soul-reaping path was just a normal path to Ling Chen, and they had passed through it easily. He had almost fallen asleep with the little Fairy in his arms. Holding the luminous pearl up, Ling Chen slowly stepped out of the Path of Shadows, and the suction force below them disappeared. In front of him was another dark entrance where 3 words were scrawled.

Path of Shadows!

According to the Undead Warrior, this was where countless vampiric Undead were residing!

Chapter 642 – Path of Darkness

If there was just a large crowd of vampiric Undead, Ling Chen wouldn't have to be worried. With his powerful attacks, survival skills, and peerless battle sense, what he was least worried about was obstruction from monsters… even max level normal monsters would be no problem for him. Even if he couldn't beat them, he'd just use a Broken Shadow to get past them. Getting past monsters was much easier than getting past things like the Underworld Soul-Reaping Formation.

This was what Ling Chen thought as he equipped his weapons and entered the Path of Darkness.

The place indeed lived up to its name – the instant Ling Chen entered, the dark region became even darker until it became an almost solid wall of blackness. It was also incredibly silent here, and there wasn't even a trace of sound… however, this silence only lasted for half a second when countless dangerous auras approached accompanied by the sounds of things rushing at him. At the same time, tens of pieces of information flooded into Ling Chen's mind from Xiao Hui…

[Demon Bats]: Type: Undead, Level: LV62, HP: 11,000. A type of terrifying bat that loves darkness and deathly aura. They are quite small, but they are as fast as lightning and have a berserk thirst for blood. They target both living creatures and Undead for blood.

Passive Abilities: Incredibly fast and have high Evasion, Darkness Resistance: 80%.

Attack Skills:

[Vampiric Fang]: Uses its sharp and icy fangs to bite its target, dealing damage while also recovering that amount of damage.

[Demon Soundwave]: Unleashes a terrifying soundwave, dealing damage to all targets within 5 metres. Deals a small amount of

damage but has a 15% chance of causing a 3 second stun.

Weaknesses: Light Resistance: -100%, Fire Resistance: -50%, has a weak life force, and when hit by an Arrow-type attack, the chance of dealing a Critical Hit is doubled.

[Undead Slicer]: Type: Undead, Level: LV65, HP: 21,050. Uses a gigantic darkness scythe and hovers around in dark regions. Its hobby is to cut a complete body into countless fragments.

Passive Abilities: Negates 60% of Physical Attack Damage, Darkness Resistance: 80%.

Attack Skills:

[Soul-Crushing Crucifix]: Uses the darkness scythe to instantly attack a target vertically and horizontally, dealing a massive amount of damage, and it has a 15% to deal a Critical Hit.

Weaknesses: Light Resistance: -100%, Fire Resistance: -50%, Attack Speed is fairly slow.

[Soul-Devouring Imp]: ……

[Headless Horseman]: ……

30 or so types of Undead's information appeared in Ling Chen's mind, and he had almost no time to process this information because those dangerous auras were now just inches away from him. He swung the Twilight Spear and Chilling Star, quickly sending out 2 [Boundless Desolation].

Bang bang bang bang bang…

2 massive arcs of energy swept out from Ling Chen, and from the number of impacts that there were, it was almost impossible for Ling Chen to tell how many targets those 2 attacks had hit. However, what he could confirm was that after Ling Tian Burst was upgraded into Boundless Desolation, he had never hit so many targets with it before.

When launching the 2 Boundless Desolations towards opposite

directions, the 2 arcs completely cleared out the space to Ling Chen's left and right. However, it didn't include above him. After attacking with the Boundless Desolations, cold auras slammed into his body before Ling Chen could attack again, bringing about piercing pain.

-1980, -2042, -1999, -1874, -2002…

10 or so damage figures rose above Ling Chen's head, causing his HP to instantly fall by around half. At the same time, Cai'Er cried out beside him. Within the darkness, the large red figures were incredibly eye-catching. Because Xiao Hui did not draw any aggro from monsters, he was not attacked. Ling Chen did not hesitate and waved his right hand, activating [Moon Shadow]. The instant the silver light shone out, everything around him was fixed in place.

With the light from Moon Shadow, Ling Chen was able to see everything around him. In the next second, all of the hairs on his body stood on end.

In front of him were countless Undead monsters that looked like they were being blown away by his Boundless Desolations, while 10 metres away the sheer number of dark figures looked like there was a massive wave coming towards him. They were shaped in all sorts of ways, and they all had savage expressions, giving off bloodthirsty auras. They were pressed incredibly close to each other without even a gap between them. At a glance, he simply couldn't see where this sea of monsters ended. In the air, there was a massive, dark blanket of Demon Bats – they were simply innumerable. Just right above Ling Chen's head, there were tens of Demon Bats poised to dive at him, their mouths wide open.

Cai'Er cried out in fear and hid behind Ling Chen with a 'whoosh', her small face completely pale. Cold sweat broke out on Ling Chen's forehead. He was completely certain that a normal player would have wet their pants from such a sight.

He knew that there would be many vampiric Undead here... but this was too goddamn much!! Ling Chen had never seen so many monsters gathered so closely together in his life.

Moon Shadow's effects were about to end, and the instant it ended, the Demon Bats above him were enough to end his life. His attacks could clear out everything to his sides, but then he would be vulnerable from above. If he defended those coming from above, then he would be overwhelmed from the sides. This was so even for the War God profession's ultimate skill, [Eight Direction Annihilation].

"Xi Ling!!"

Just as Moon Shadow was about to vanish, Ling Chen summoned Xi Ling. This was because Xi Ling was too susceptible to dying, so Ling Chen didn't want to summon her in an environment that he knew nothing about. If he had summoned Xi Ling in the Path of Shadows before, the HP the formation absorbed every second would be enough to insta-kill Xi Ling. Even if Cai'Er's healing abilities were 100 times more powerful, it would be useless. However, facing these incredibly densely-packed monsters, Xi Ling would be perfect for dealing with them.

A red light flashed, and the instant Xi Ling appeared, Moon Shadow's effects ended. Waves of crimson flames descended as a bird's cry sounded out. No matter if it was the vampiric Undead on the ground or the Demon Bats in the air, all of them were enveloped by the Heaven-Burning Flames.

-482,400, -482,400, -482,400...

Xi Ling's flames were already monstrous enough, and adding on the fact that they were the weakness of the Undead, the flames dealt 6 figure damage figures to the Undead monsters. They were enough to kill the LV60 monsters 10 times over. All monsters within 50 metres were instantly cleared out, and countless Underworld Coins fell from the Demon Bats, noisily falling onto

the ground. Xiao Hui rushed up and busily collected them.

“Wow! Xi Ling’s so strong!” Cai’Er poked her head out from behind Ling Chen and looked at Xi Ling in the air before she cried out, “Ahhh!! They’re coming again!!”

The area that Xi Ling’s Heaven-Burning Flames covered became a vacuum. However, another dark mass of vampiric Undead charged over in just the blink of an eye. This was especially for the Demon bats – they were truly as fast as lightning and travelled 50 metres in just the blink of an eye, biting towards Ling Chen and Xi Ling.

If Xi Ling’s Heaven-Burning Flames could be continuously released, there would be no danger to them at all even if there were twice as many monsters. However, Xi Ling’s Heaven-Burning Flames had a 5 second cooldown time. The other AOE skills also had relatively long cooldown times: Vermillion Judgment had a cooldown time of 30 seconds, while Burning Fire Array had a cooldown time of 2 hours. Normal flames could only cover an area of 10 metres… this sort of AOE wasn’t small at all, but considering how many monsters there were and how quickly they rushed up, it simply wasn’t enough.

Xi Ling spread her wings and unleashed a [Vermillion Judgment], causing countless fireballs to rain down like a storm, turning the surrounding region into a sea of flames. All Undead that went into the sea of flames were instantly incinerated.

It seemed like there was no end to these vampiric Undead. However, Ling Chen’s goal wasn’t to kill them, but to pass through the Path of Darkness. He simply couldn’t afford to keep fighting with them here. He frowned and made a decision as he yelled, “Xi Ling, let’s go!”

As he spoke, Snow Cherry turned into a white blur and shot forwards, passing through the area that Vermillion Judgment covered. Countless Undead monsters sprang towards him, and without looking, Ling Chen raised his hand and a New Moon rose,

followed by [Moon Sacrifice].

The light of destruction fell, completely annihilating the innumerable Undead within 300 metres of Ling Chen. However, before Ling Chen could break out, countless vampiric Undead once again swarmed at him with numbers no fewer than before.

Ling Chen and Xi Ling alternated in using their AOE skills – this was the only thing they could do against such overwhelming numbers. Every second countless vampiric Undead would fall, but they would immediately be replaced by more Undead monsters, making it so that the pressure on Ling Chen and Xi Ling did not decrease but instead increase. At first, Ling Chen could continue charging, but he began to slow down more and more, and in the end, it became difficult to even move forwards. A single vampiric Undead was nothing to him, 10 were negligible, and even with hundreds of thousands they still wouldn't be able to make him feel much pressure... but there were simply too many of them, and they simply did not stop coming.

It was just like how a single drop of water would quickly evaporate, but an entire basin of water could make the ground wet... while massive waves could destroy mountains. Ling Chen was currently being assaulted on all sides by gigantic waves, and he could barely advance. However, if he or Xi Ling made a single mistake in their attacks, they would be done for.

"Ding... your pet 'Cai'Er' has levelled up to LV46, HP+1000, MP+1000, Physical Attack Power+10, Magic Attack Power+200."

There were simply too many vampiric Undead, and they were killing them so quickly that Cai'Er had levelled up in just a few minutes. Ling Chen was now furious. He raised his head and lowered his weapons as a layer of purple lightning appeared around his body.

Chapter 643 – Ice Purgatory

Every time Ling Chen used the Thunder God's Bulwark, it decreased how much lightning it had stored within it. This power from the guardian beast White Tiger could cause miracles, and at this moment, he had to use it even if he didn't want to.

Just as the purple light started to expand out and was about to be released, a song that sounded like a gentle breeze sounded out.

Cai'Er, who had been hiding behind Ling Chen in fear, was currently floating beside Ling Chen. Her beautiful eyes were closed, and there was a pure smile on her pink and tender face. The song she sang sounded like a song from heaven, and every word and note could cause a person's mind to feel intoxicated from the bliss of hearing the song. As he listened to the song, Ling Chen gradually calmed down, and a beautiful scene appeared within his mind: a gentle breeze, quiet, flowing waters, the faint fragrance of flowers, the warm sunlight, the azure sky... it was as if he had no troubles or worries, only a peaceful and safe heaven.

At the same time, Ling Chen suddenly felt that the pressure around him was becoming weaker, and the howls of the vampiric Undead became softer. Within his field of vision, the vampiric Undead rushing towards him slowed down, and the murderous looks within their eyes died. Even the bloodthirsty air around them gradually faded.

Boom!!

A [Boundless Desolation] from Ling Chen and a [Heaven-Burning Flames] from Xi Ling were simultaneously released, causing the Undead to Ling Chen's sides and above him to be annihilated. However, the vampiric Undead in the distance did not immediately charge over. Instead, the vampiric Undead on the ground looked at them and hesitantly took a few steps forwards before lowering their heads and starting to powerlessly mill

around, as if they had forgotten about Ling Chen and his pets. The Demon Bats in the air did not fly over, and they instead flew around slowly – the rate at which they beat their wings became at least 3 to 4 times slower. Some would occasionally fly past Ling Chen, but before they could attack, they would lazily fly past as if they were too lazy to attack them.

Ling Chen turned to look at Cai'Er, who was smiling as she sang, and stared at her with incredulity. She wasn't the cute and bubbly Cai'Er that he knew, but she seemed more like a goddess. At this moment, he smacked himself on the head – he had forgotten about this little Fairy's abilities!

After all, this was the first time Ling Chen had summoned her after taking her as a pet, and Ling Chen was the most unfamiliar with her skills. Just then, when he had been almost overwhelmed by the attacks of the Undead and felt an incredible amount of pressure, he didn't have a chance to think about Cai'Er's Nature songs. There was a [Song of Redemption – Pure Heaven], which reduced the enemy's hatred and battle spirit.

Even if he had thought of it, he wouldn't have expected such a ridiculous effect. The vampiric Undead, which had wanted to rip him into pieces, did not even look at him now, let alone attack him. It was as if he didn't exist to them.

"Cai'Er, why didn't you sing this earlier? Xi Ling and I were fighting so hard back there." Ling Chen wiped the cold sweat off his forehead as he asked. During this period of time, he and Xi Ling had been incredibly tense... even if he forgot about the Song of Redemption, how could Cai'Er forget about it?

Cai'Er stopped singing and lifted her face, her small hand patting her chest as she said in a small voice, "There were so many scary monsters, and I was nearly scared to death, so... so I forgot about it."

Ssss~~

In just the few seconds that Cai'er stopped singing, the vampiric Undead around them started to hiss and screech again. The vampiric Undead seemed to have been shocked out of a nightmare, and a berserk aura burst out from them as they charged towards Ling Chen, once again forming a massive army of Undead.

Ling Chen's eyebrows jumped and he hurriedly sent the nearest wave of Undead flying as he yelled to Cai'Er, "Hurry and sing! Don't stop!!"

"Eh? Oh, oh!" Cai'Er, who had been given a big fright, hurriedly started to sing the Song of Redemption again. Just as she started to sing, the berserk aura died down by half and was soon gone. The approaching Undead army stopped and silently dispersed, with all of the monsters ignoring Ling Chen and his pets.

Ling Chen let out a breath and asked Xiao Hui to find the direction before quickly advancing. At first, Ling Chen was still quite cautious, but after 10 or so minutes, he was able to let down his guard. The vampiric Undead here were like big cabbages, and none of them attacked him as he passed by. Despite passing right before them, they didn't even bother to look at him and uninterestedly walked away. There would sometimes be a wall of Undead blocking their way, which would be incinerated by Xi Ling, and the Undead around them would continue to mill around, not caring at all.

As such, Xi Ling opened the way from the front and Xiao Hui was right behind her, collecting the Underworld Coins, while Ling Chen followed behind them in a carefree manner. Their journey was completely unobstructed, and 2 hours later, he came out of the Path of Darkness as the lighting changed and a system announcement sounded out.

Cai'Er was undoubtedly the one who made it possible to pass through the Path of Darkness so easily. Without Cai'Er, Ling Chen definitely wouldn't have been able to make it through the Path of Shadows, and it would have been incredibly difficult for him to

make it past the Path of Darkness. After walking out of the Path of Darkness, Ling Chen opened Cai'Er's stats page and looked through her abilities a few times, especially all of her Nature's Songs. After committing them to memory, he once again advanced.

At a different place.

"All of the signs we've seen points to Ling Tian hiding in Su Hang City, and he is under the Li family's protection. There's definitely some sort of relationship between him and Li Xiao Xue!"

"Are you sure?" Long Tian Yun turned around, his gaze sinister.

"I'm completely certain! Furthermore, although the Yun family has been desperately searching for her, Yun Meng Xin hasn't returned to the Yun family and is staying somewhere else. However, it seems that there are people protecting her – all of the people I've sent to monitor her haven't returned. We haven't even found any corpses."

"Then her as well!" Long Tian Yun laughed, a trace of madness in his eyes. "If I can't have her, I'll just have to destroy her. Even if it's her, she deserves to die for forcing me to this state!"

"Young master wants to... carry this out immediately?"

"That's right, you can start right now." Long Tian Yun's laugh was incredibly cold and savage, "However, you should know the consequences if this is leaked. Even my own father would kill me, so none of you will be able to escape either!"

The black figure trembled and lowered its head as it said, "Rest assured, young master, we'll definitely carry this out perfectly without any flaws! They won't be able to suspect anyone."

"Go."

The black figure nodded and quickly disappeared from Long Tian Yun's sight.

“You forced me to do this… enjoy this nightmare!”

……

“Ding… You have entered the ‘Ice Purgatory’. There may be great danger ahead. Please proceed with caution or immediately leave.”

As Ling Chen stepped into the Ice Purgatory, the space in front of him became quite wide. The world before him was no longer dark but was instead quite bright, allowing Ling Chen to see the entire space clearly. It seemed to be a region constructed with crystals, and no matter if it was below their feet, above them, or to the sides, it seemed to be made of light-blue ice. At a glance, this seemed like a sealed world, but it was thousands of metres under the surface, so it shouldn’t have any natural light from above. The light in here should be from the crystals.

“Wow! It’s all ice here! So pretty… it’s just a bit cold.” Leng’Er looked around with wide eyes that were full of curiosity and excitement as she subconsciously pulled her thin clothes closer to her. There was ice everywhere, so naturally it would be quite cold here. However, it was not to the point that it was ‘freezing’. But then again, Ling Chen had the Aquarius Orb, so even if it was at absolute zero, he wouldn’t feel it at all.

It was all ice below his feet, and it was quite difficult to walk due to how slippery it was. As such, Snow Cherry had to fly low to the ground. Ling Chen flew slowly, continuously looking around him. The space was not very big – it was at most 300 metres wide, and as soon as Ling Chen had entered, he could see the exit. The ground directly ahead was flat and slippery, and there was nothing to obstruct him. On the sides were countless large and small mountains of ice, and it was so silent that one could hear a pin drop, making the atmosphere seem quite oppressive.

“Big brother, it was so dark outside, so why is there light here? I can’t see any magic lights here,” Cai’Er asked curiously while appreciating the icy environment.

“Shhh…” Ling Chen put his finger to his lips.

Cai’Er immediately covered her mouth, blinking at Ling Chen.

Snow Cherry continued to advance but at a slower rate. Then, as Ling Chen’s eyebrows twitched, Snow Cherry came to a complete stop.

It was completely silent around them, and there was not even a trace of sound. They were less than 100 metres from the exit, but Ling Chen had suddenly stopped and paused there, his eyebrows furrowed as he narrowed his eyes.

Suddenly, his pupils contracted as he activated [Moment of Elegance] and shot upwards like an arrow.

Crack!!!

The still surface of ice beneath Ling Chen was suddenly broken through as countless bone-spikes pierced upwards, reaching 10 metres in the air. The bone-spikes extended for 100 metres across, forming a shocking forest of bone-spikes.

Because of Ling Chen’s incredible reaction time in using [Moment of Elegance], Snow Cherry and he narrowly avoided the bone-spikes, and Leng’Er’s body was in a spirit state, so she naturally was not harmed. However, Xiao Hui, Xi Ling, and Cai’Er were hit…

-45,000.

-18,000.

-180,000!

Although Xiao Hui was only Heaven’s End grade, his maximum HP was 88,960, and adding on the Holy Spirit’s Shield, which negated 50% of all damage, that terrifying attack was not enough to insta-kill him. For Xi Ling, apart from Water, all of her elemental resistances were not lower than 80%. As such, she bore only 20% of this Darkness element attack. However, Xi Ling’s

lifeforce was quite weak, and even with Cai'Er's Nature's Heart, her maximum HP was only 10,720, so although she didn't receive much damage, her HP bar was instantly emptied. As for Cai'Er, 5 of her elemental resistances were at 90%, but she was incredibly weak against Darkness attacks. With her -100% Darkness Resistance, the attack dealt a massive amount of damage to her and also instantly killed her.

However, Xi Ling and Cai'Er did not immediately die. Instead, Xiao Hui's body shone with a grey light.

"Ding... your pet Xiao Hui's Passive Ability [Holy Spirit's Sacrifice] has been activated and has taken the place of Xi Ling and Cai'Er's deaths. Xi Ling and Cai'Er have been restored to the state before they died."

"Ding... your pet Xiao Hui has died."

"Ding... your pet Xiao Hui's Passive Ability [Holy Spirit's Shield] has activated and has been revived with full HP."

Ling Chen, who was high in the air, saw an eerie white shadow about 50 metres to his left.

Chapter 644 – Killing Heaven's End

At some unknown time, a massive skeleton had appeared on the ice. It had 2 large horns, a terrifying head, a gigantic body, and a pair of bony wings that seemed larger than its body when extended. There was also a bony tail that was around 10 metres long behind it. Below its body were incredibly eerie and white claws... its body was made up completely of bones, and it gave off a shocking and monstrous aura.

This was evidently the gigantic skeleton dragon that only appeared in myths and legends!

And yet, this skeleton was moving, and there were 2 balls of black light in its eye sockets!

While Ling Chen was staring at this gigantic skeleton dragon in shock, an icy aura came from his left. Ling Chen quickly turned his head and saw a 10 metre-long, 1 metre-thick ice shard flying towards him. Through the ice shard he could see something completely blue breaking through the ice... an ice wolf!

Ling Chen did not try to evade, and in the next instant, the gigantic ice shard... passed through his body.

+134,680!

Boom!!

At that moment, the ice shard heading directly toward Ling Chen was shattered as a gigantic black figure shot out like a cannonball towards him. Before it even came close, the howling wind cut into his body, bringing about pain all over, while Xiao Hui, Cai'Er, and Xi Ling were sent flying, the sensation of death rapidly approaching Ling Chen.

If he had [Moment of Elegance], evading this sort of sudden attack would not have been too difficult. However, the black figure would attack Cai'Er and Xi Ling behind him if he evaded. As such,

Ling Chen frowned as he instead rushed towards it.

A massive explosion sounded out as Ling Chen and the black ball-like thing collided. As a -150,000 red damage figure rose up, the black ball gave a low roar and was sent flying by the impact reflected by the Evil God's Mask. At that moment, Ling Chen saw its full appearance… as well as the 8 spikes on its back.

At the same time, information about these 3 creatures were sent into Ling Chen's mind from Xiao Hui.

[Demon Skeleton Dragon]: Type: Undead, Grade: Heaven's End, Level: LV66, HP: 72,000,000. An Overworld War Dragon originally from a western continent. It was killed by the Shura during the Shura's Devastation, and its corpse was obtained by the Underworld King, who used the power of darkness and death to turn it into an Undead skeleton dragon. Although it has lost its consciousness, it contains the Overworld War Dragon's abilities and powers, and its incredibly powerful body and attacks make it a nightmare to all enemies.

Passive Abilities: Extremely high Physical Defence and Physical Attack Power. Immune to all abnormal statuses and debuffs.

Attack Skills: [Demon Dragon Claw], [Forest of Darkness], [Bone Spike Hell], [Darkness Breath]

Ultimate Skills: [Dragon's Reverse Scale], [Demon Dragon Roar]

Weaknesses: No Elemental Resistances, weak towards Light and Fire element attacks.

[Eighth Fiend]: Type: Undead, Grade: Heaven's End, Level: LV70, HP: 105,000,000. A natural-born Undead that fell into the Underworld Blood Lake but did not die, gaining tremendous power. It has 8 spikes on its back and has a cruel and war-loving personality. Any part of its body can shred through the toughest defence. Because it caused much chaos in the Underworld, it was subjugated by the Underworld King and forever sealed in the Ice

Purgatory.

Passive Abilities: Incredibly high Physical Attack Damage, and its attacks have a high chance of adding a [Torn] status. Immune to all abnormal statuses and debuffs.

Attack Skills: [Spirit Spike], [Soul Awl], [Sphere Ram], [Thousand Split], [Eight Soul Life-Chasing Dance]

Ultimate Skill: [Hell Euphoria – Eighth Movement]

Weaknesses: Weak Physical Defence and Magic Defence, all of its Darkness power is focused on Physical Damage, and has no long-range or Magic attacks.

[Ice Soul Undead Wolf]: Type: Undead, Grade: Heaven's End, Level: LV70, HP: 99,000,000. An Emperor of the Ice Wolf Clan at the glaciers of the extreme north of the Forgotten Continent. Its corpse was obtained by an Underworld Representative and brought back to the Underworld. After being immersed in the Underworld Blood Lake, it awakened power greater than that when it was alive and became an Undead wolf that only knows to attack. Although it is an Undead, the deathly aura is only supporting its body to move, while its attacks are purely Ice type. It is the monster with the greatest Water damage in the Underworld.

Passive Abilities: It has an agile body and incredibly fast Movement Speed. It has incredibly high resistance to magic of all elements apart from Earth. Immune to all abnormal statuses and debuffs.

Attack Skills: [Rain of Disaster], [Icy Fission], [Snowstorm], [Endless Ice Blades], [Ice Soul Snow Spirit], [Blizzard], [Extreme Icestorm], [Pale Roar]

Ultimate Skill: [Extreme Blue Radiance]

Weaknesses: Weak against Earth element Attacks, relatively weak Physical Defence, attacks are mainly Magic Attacks, and has

weak Physical Attacks.

.....

Within the Ice Purgatory were 3 powerful Heaven's End grade beasts!

To date, Ling Chen had fought with 2 Heaven's End grade beings before, one of which was the Mountain Giant. When he had first fought the Mountain Giant, it was so suffocatingly strong that Ling Chen wasn't even able to escape. In the end, because of Tian Tian's death, he was able to miraculously turn the tide. The other was the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard on the Godchild Peak. It had also forced Ling Chen into a state of hopelessness, and it was only killed because of Xi Ling.

Back then, Ling Chen didn't have any strength to fight with Heaven's End grade beings of the same level.

And now, there were 3 Heaven's End grade monsters that were all higher level than him. What's more, each of these 3 monsters were far more powerful than the Mountain Giant and the Purple-Winged Cloud Leopard!

The 3 Heaven's End grade beast's auras locked onto Ling Chen. When 3 powerful Heaven's End grade beasts simultaneously locked aggro onto Ling Chen, he found it difficult to even breathe. Fight with these 3 Heavens' End grade beasts? Ling Chen naturally wouldn't do such a thing. If they were 3 Celestial grade beasts it was possible, but Heaven's End grade... facing them directly was simply seeking death.

Ling Chen quickly thought and looked over to Cai'Er as he said in a low voice, "Cai'Er, hurry and make them sleep!"

Just as Ling Chen moved, the 3 beasts roared. Under the might from their roars, the entire Ice Purgatory began to shake. At this moment, a melodious song sounded. The voice was soft and gentle, and it felt as if it travelled through one's ears into their heart and

then into their soul, causing them to lapse into intoxication, revelling in the beauty of the song.

The 3 beasts stopped roaring, and they all paused in their attacks. Their bodies powerlessly lay on the ground and yawned before falling asleep.

[Song of Tranquility – Clear Dream In A Peaceful Night]!

Even powerful Heaven's End grade beasts fell asleep under Cai'Er's Song of Tranquility. Cai'Er did not stop singing, because once she stopped, it was possible that the beasts would immediately wake up and would not be affected by the Song of Tranquility anymore. Ling Chen took this opportunity and rushed to the Ice Purgatory's exit. At the exit was a mass of grey, black, and blue light blocking the way.

[Ice Purgatory Barrier]: A special barrier created by the Underworld King from the Demon Skeleton Dragon, Eighth Fiend, and Ice Soul Undead Wolf's source energies. Only when the Demon Skeleton Dragon, Eighth Fiend, and Ice Soul Undead Wolf have died will the barrier disappear.

When he saw the barrier's description, Ling Chen could only turn around and look at the 3 sleeping beasts. Once they fell under the effects of the Song of Tranquility, as long as Cai'Er did not stop singing and he didn't attack them, they would not wake up. However, once they woke up, they wouldn't be affected by the Song of Tranquility anymore.

It was impossible for Ling Chen to face 3 Heaven's End grade beasts, but if it was one at a time...

Ling Chen's gaze fell on the Demon Skeleton Dragon, which was the lowest level. After staring at it for a few moments, he gently breathed in and rushed towards its body.

"Cai'Er, immediately hide in a corner and keep singing!"

"Xi Ling, keep a safe distance and attack whenever you have the

opportunity!”

“Xiao Hui, protect them!”

“Leng’Er… err, give some words of support!”

“Snow Cherry, let’s go!!”

“Soul Sacrifice… War God’s Fury!”

“Ding… the Libra Orb’s effects have been activated, [Soul Sacrifice]’s cooldown time has been reset.”

“Ding… the Libra Orb’s effects have been activated, [War God’s Fury]’s cooldown time has been reset.”

After activating his 2 powerful buffs, Ling Chen’s maximum HP fell by 50% and his current HP was reduced to 1 HP. However, his Basic Attack Power skyrocketed to 58,310. In his strongest state, he launched 2 of the War God’s profession’s most powerful skills towards the Demon Skeleton Dragon: a [Extinguishing the Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest] with his right hand and an [Eight Direction Annihilation] with his left!

“Ding… the Libra Orb’s effects have been activated, [Extinguishing the Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest]’s cooldown time has been reset.”

“Ding… the Libra Orb’s effects have been activated, [Eight Direction Annihilation]’s cooldown time has been reset.”

BOOM!!!!!

-8,163,400, -1,959,216!

A massive explosion sounded out, causing the surrounding layer of ice to fracture as countless shards of ice were lifted into the air, turning into a rain of ice fragments. The Demon Skeleton Dragon’s body was blasted away and landed heavily on the ice, forming a large crater. This caused the Demon Skeleton Dragon to wake up, and the 3 seconds that the [Extinguishing the Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest] should have applied did not take

effect. It stood up and roared with ear-piercing fury.

However, Ling Chen did not immediately attack again and instead stared at the 2 slowly fading damage figures.

Each of those skills had dealt more than 1 million damage!

And one of them had nearly dealt 10 million damage!!

Ling Chen continued to stare, feeling completely dumbfounded… after upgrading his War God's profession and obtaining 2 pieces of Heaven's End grade equipment, this was the first time he had gone all out in a fight. Moreover, he had used 2 of the most powerful skills of the War God's profession, dealing so much damage that he almost gave himself a fright. He couldn't believe his own eyes.

Although he was facing a high level Heaven's End grade monster, he had dealt almost 10% of its HP in a single attack… this should be impossible!!

Ling Chen only came back to his senses when the Demon Skeleton Dragon roared and charged towards him as bone spikes fell towards him like rain. Ling Chen didn't bother to look at the bone spikes falling towards him – he charged up with a [Moment of Elegance] and activated [Moon Shadow] as he fixed the Demon Skeleton Dragon in place, unleashing 2 Heaven Destroying Slashes on it. From a distance, Xi Ling mercilessly shot out a [Solar Laser] at the Demon Skeleton Dragon.

-816,240, -815,998, -1,085,400!

Under Ling Chen's current state, even the Heaven Destroying Slashes, which were almost normal attacks to him, dealt nearly 1 million damage, which was close to how much Xi Ling's Solar Laser had dealt. At the same time, the [War God's Fury] not only increased his Physical Attack Power but also his Attack Speed as well. With the Chilling Star, Ling Chen's Attack Speed was 120, which was doubled to 240 with the War God's Fury, meaning that he could unleash 5 rounds of attacks in 2 seconds!

As Ling Chen rapidly attacked, the Chilling Star and Twilight Spear became 2 blurs, the Demon Skeleton Dragon's HP rapidly fell under the repeated attacks from Ling Chen and Xi Ling. By the time Moon Shadow had ended, the Demon Skeleton Dragon's HP had fallen to less than half. Ling Chen's eyes flashed as he sent out another [Extinguishing the Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest] and [Eight Direction Annihilation].

-8,160,008, -1,963,500!

With Moon Shadow's effects gone, the Demon Skeleton Dragon's body once again flew away like a gigantic sandbag. With such massive damage and force, let alone a Heaven's End grade beast, even a Mysterious God grade beast would be sent flying. Ling Chen did not stop, but instead he chased after it like a bolt of lightning. The instant it landed, Ling Chen aimed the Twilight Spear towards its back as a colourless light flashed.

-25,920,000!

Powerful Bosses all had powerful ultimate skills, and this was much more so for high grade Bosses. Those ultimate skills often only activated when their HP fell below a certain amount, and the lower their HP was, the more terrifying their ultimate attacks would be. This was something that Ling Chen was incredibly familiar with, especially when a Boss' HP fell below 10%. The damage that their ultimate skills dealt would be able to destroy the heavens and annihilate the earth. However, Ling Chen no longer had to worry about Bosses becoming insanely powerful after falling into critical HP. No matter how powerful his target was, if their HP fell below 36%, they were as good as dead to him.

After being upgraded by the [Holy Spirit's Pearl], [Soul Demise] dealt 36% of a target's maximum HP instantly!

"Ding... you have successfully killed the LV66 Heaven's End grade Boss [Demon Skeleton Dragon], Fame+66,000, SP+66,000."

"Ding... congratulations, you have levelled up to LV58, HP+20,

MP+20, Strength+5, Agility+1, Spirit+1.”

“Ding… your pet Xiao Hui has levelled up to LV58…”

“Ding… your pet Leng’Er has levelled up to LV58…”

“Ding… your pet Snow Cherry has levelled up to LV58…”

“Ding… your pet Xi Ling has levelled up to LV58…”

“Ding… your pet Cai’Er has levelled up to LV47…”

“Ding… your pet Cai’Er has levelled up to LV48…”

……

“Ding… your pet Cai’Er has levelled up to LV50…”

The system announcement in his ears signified the end of this battle. After watching the Demon Skeleton Dragon fall and not get back up, Ling Chen found that there was a large pile of equipment and items around it.

It was finished… it was finished? Just like that, he had killed a LV66 Heaven’s End grade beast?

Staring at the Demon Skeleton Dragon’s body, Ling Chen felt as if his world was tottering.

Chapter 645 - Lachesis' Tear?

From the experience he had in fighting Heaven's End grade Bosses from the past, Ling Chen thought that it would have been an incredibly cruel and bitter battle. He never expected that he would slice this scary-looking Demon Skeleton Dragon up like lettuce.

The War God's profession was completely focused on damage, and all of its skills dealt massive amounts of damage. Moreover, the Lunar Scourge was an undeniably heaven-defying item – it allowed him to ignore all Defence, gave him absolute HIT and absolute Critical Hits, and after his second profession upgrade, Ling Chen's stats were far superior to that of normal player's. Moreover, his damage had long surpassed the limit for players, and in his most powerful state, his damage could be said to be on the level of Mysterious God grade existences... or even higher. Furthermore, his second profession and the Lunar Scourge's various skills allowed him to easily survive even in the most desperate situations.

As such, Ling Chen hadn't realised just how terrifying his attacks were before today.

When Cai'Er saw the Demon Skeleton Dragon fall, her eyes glittered in excitement as she waved her hands around, but she did not dare to stop singing, keeping the Eighth Fiend and Ice Soul Undead Wolf in their sleeping states.

Xiao Hui happily ran over and collected all of the spoils of war dropped by the Demon Skeleton Dragon. He then ran around the corpse a few times before opening his mouth and releasing a faint grey light, and then he started to devour the Demon Skeleton Dragon's corpse.

The Demon Skeleton Dragon had dropped 7 pieces of equipment: 1 Silver grade, 4 Gold grade, 1 Celestial grade Helmet... and a ring

that flowed with the colours of the rainbow. When Ling Chen looked at the ring's grade, his pupils dilated and his body almost started to tremble.

This was because the ring's grade wasn't Celestial... nor was it Heaven's End... but...

Mysterious God!!

Although he had killed a Heaven's End grade Boss, that did not necessarily mean that Ling Chen would receive Heaven's End grade equipment. Based on his experience with virtual games, there was only a 20% chance of a Heaven's End grade Boss dropping a piece of Heaven's End grade equipment even after countless players had spent incredible amounts of resources killing it. However, Ling Chen was different. With Ling Chen's Luck and the fact that he had singlehandedly killed a Boss that was much higher level than him, the chances of Heaven's End grade equipment dropping was almost 100%! Even receiving Heaven's End grade jewellery wouldn't be so strange.

However, after killing a Heaven's End grade Boss, a Mysterious God grade equipment had dropped...

This was never heard of and should be completely impossible!

Apart from 'Saint Destroyer', the words 'Mysterious God' essentially represented the apex of power, and the number of Mysterious God grade equipment in the Forgotten Continent could be counted on a single hand. Anyone who obtained a piece of Mysterious God grade equipment would be able to sweep across the land unhindered. In the history of virtual games, there had never been more than 2 pieces of Mysterious God grade equipment in a single Region in the late stages of virtual games – this was true for the entire world. It was evident how rare they were.

And yet, after easily killing a Heaven's End grade Boss, Ling Chen had obtained a Mysterious God grade equipment. This made him delirious with joy.

He had 9 Mysterious God grade Orbs of the Lunar Scourge, so he knew just how powerful the words ‘Mysterious God’ were. Moreover, the Mysterious God grade Orbs were attached to the Lunar Scourge, while most other Mysterious God grade equipment were separate equipment. Although they were the same grade, the concept was completely different. As such, obtaining this Mysterious God grade equipment greatly increased his strength.

Ling Chen was so excited that he only casually glanced at the Silver and Gold grade equipment before putting them away and looking at the remaining 2 pieces of equipment in detail.

[Demon Dragon Darkness Crown]: Type: Headpiece, Grade: Celestial, Equipment Requirements: Any profession above LV65. Cannot be traded and will disappear after being thrown away. A battle helmet made from the Evil Dragon’s skull. It contains remnants of the Demon Dragon’s power and consciousness, and it gives off a might and murderous air that causes people to tremble.

Stats: Defence+390, +30 to each of the 4 Basic Attributes, Critical Chance+12%, Darkness Resistance+10%.

Bonus Skills:

[Demon Dragon Roar]: When suffering damage to the head, there is a 15% chance of activating the Demon Dragon’s remnant soul’s anger, eliciting a furious roar that completely reflects the damage.

This battle helmet was a dark grey colour, and its exterior looked like a dragon’s skull. Although it was a skull, it looked completely terrifying. The mouth was wide open, and the rows of dragon teeth glinted like sharp knives. A black light flowed in the 2 eye sockets as if it was looking around, making murderous air coming from it almost felt corporeal. As a LV65 Celestial grade equipment, its stats were naturally not weak. Although its appearance was quite horrifying, Ling Chen equipped it without hesitation, and his stats rocketed up.

Following this, Ling Chen took in a deep breath as he looked at

the Mysterious God grade ring's stats in expectation:

[Lachesis' Tear]: Type: Ring, Grade: Mysterious God, Equipment Requirements: Unknown. A ring with unknown origins that was somehow devoured by the Overlord War Dragon and brought to the Forgotten Continent.

Stats: HP+50%, negates all damage and negative effects from [Lachesis]

The ring was in the shape of a beautiful tear, was completely transparent, and had a rainbow light around it. It looked like it had been crafted from a flawless diamond. From its appearance, it seemed like a ring suitable for females. However, its stats caused Ling Chen to feel quite surprised.

Increasing one's HP by 50% was quite a powerful stat, but it also negated 'all damage and negative effects from [Lachesis]. This stat was quite strange, and Ling Chen couldn't see the use of it.

An increase of HP by 50% was quite powerful on other equipment, but as the only stat on a Mysterious God grade equipment, it didn't seem like much... the Virgo Orb, which was also Mysterious God grade, gave 150% HP and 150% MP! It was much better than just +50%.

This sort of stat shouldn't qualify as Mysterious God grade, which meant that its most important stat wasn't the HP buff, but the fact that it negated all damage and negative effects from [Lachesis]. However, this stat... felt unintelligible to Ling Chen.

What was Lachesis? A person? A weapon? Some sort of attacking item? Ling Chen had never heard of this name before. Moreover, if negating all damage from Lachesis qualified this ring to be Mysterious God grade, Lachesis was definitely something extraordinary. However... from this ring's short description, the only thing he could tell was that it was from a western continent, while Lachesis was evidently a western name. Perhaps Lachesis existed on a western continent, which meant that it wouldn't have

much to do with the Forgotten Continent, an eastern continent.

In other words, this stat was not very useful to Ling Chen. To be blunt... the main stat was a completely trash stat to him. Although it was a Mysterious God grade ring, it only gave a bonus of 50% HP.

Ling Chen felt quite displeased and cheated, but a bonus 50% HP was something that would at least appear on Celestial grade equipment. It was better than any of the rings Ling Chen currently had, so although he wasn't quite satisfied with it, he still equipped it on his left hand. After opening his stats page, he found that his HP had rocketed to 50,400.

After killing the Demon Skeleton Dragon, he had also received large amounts of SP. Ling Chen did not hoard them, and he instead spent them on upgrading the [Heaven Wind Technique] and [Item Manipulation Technique]. After all, he was about to hit LV60, and when that happened, Xiao Hui's [Holy Spirit's Gift] would bring them both to max level.

[Heaven Wind Technique]: Current Level: LV9, Highest Level: LV10. SP to Upgrade to LV10: 15,000. An ancient battle technique that can greatly increase the ability to control any weapon after practice. Effect: When using any weapon, damage dealt is increased by 45%. Effect does not stack with other weapon proficiency skills.

[Item Manipulation Technique]: Current Level: LV9, Highest Level: LV10. SP to Upgrade to LV10: 15,000. An ancient battle technique that allows you to equip equipment that surpasses your current level after practice. Effect: Ignores any piece of equipment's level requirement by 9 levels.

Apart from these pieces of equipment, the Demon Skeleton Dragon had also dropped 6000 Underworld Coins, 30 or so pieces of Dark Dragon Bones, and a profession change scroll for the special Summoner profession [Dark Dragonrider].

Cai'Er continued to sing. She loved singing, and even if she had

to sing for a long time, she wouldn't feel tired or bored. So, she continued to sing elegantly and gracefully. Xiao Hui had finished devouring the Demon Skeleton Dragon, leaving nothing behind from the gigantic skeleton. Before, Xiao Hui would never devour Undead beings, especially those low-level Zombies – he wouldn't even look at them. However, he simply couldn't control himself when faced with a Heaven's End grade Undead Skeleton Dragon.

"Ding... your pet 'Xiao Hui' has successfully consumed the [Demon Skeleton Dragon], HP+1300, Defence+90."

After devouring the Demon Skeleton Dragon, Xiao Hui burped before swaying and spitting out a dark-coloured pearl.

[Dragon Soul Pearl]: A pearl that contains the Overworld War Dragon's soul and life, which is found in the core of the dragon's head. It contains powerful War Dragon energy. Even if the War Dragon dies, the energy within it will not naturally dissipate.

The dark pearl was quite heavy and felt icy cold. Ling Chen could not see any uses for it. As such, he threw it into his bag... the Dwarves would probably be quite interested in it.

After dealing with the Demon Skeleton Dragon, Ling Chen's gaze locked onto the loudly sleeping Eighth Fiend's spiky back. The Eighth Fiend was higher level than the Demon Skeleton Dragon, had nearly 30 million more HP than it, and had higher Attack Power. However, in Ling Chen's eyes, it was much less of a threat than the Demon Skeleton Dragon. The reason was quite simple – the Eighth Fiend had only Physical Attacks and did not have any long-range attacks or attacks with large AOEs that Ling Chen could not avoid. From the attack it had launched before, its agility didn't seem too great either. With his abilities, this sort of enemy was the type that he could defeat most easily... based on his estimations, for the Eighth Fiend to hit him within 10 seconds... was essentially impossible!!

Chapter 646 - Killing 3 Heaven's End

By now, all of Ling Chen's cooldown times had reset. He leisurely went over to the Eighth Fiend and activated War God's Fury and Soul Sacrifice before he raised his weapons. A light of strength burst forth from his body as he cast a [Extinguishing the Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest] and [Eight Direction Annihilation] towards the Eighth Fiend's round body. In the distance, Xi Ling shot out a [Solar Laser], hitting the Eighth Fiend the same time that Ling Chen's attacks hit it.

3 gigantic damage figures floated up as the Eighth Fiend instantly lost over 10% of its more than 100 million HP. Its body flew 100 meters as if it was a rubber ball that had been kicked, and it smashed onto a wall of ice at the boundary of the Ice Purgatory.

After being attacked, the Eighth Fiend woke up and radiated a vicious air. Because of its immense power, the space around it seemed to freeze, and a strange, sharp howl sounded out. 100 meters away, the Eighth Fiend's body turned into a perfectly-shaped ball, which had 8 spikes on it. It then suddenly released a storm of energy and shot out like a bullet towards Ling Chen, who was in the air... it traversed the 100 metres between them in just 2 seconds.

Ling Chen narrowed his eyes and quickly descended using a [Moment of Elegance], dodging the Eighth Fiend's attack without taking any damage. At the same time, he released a [Moon Shadow] from his right hand, freezing the Eighth Fiend in the air. He then leapt up and continuously chained skills as he hit it, while Xi Ling also shot her flames towards it. 5 seconds later, Moon Shadow's effects ended, and the Eighth Fiend fell to the ground pitifully. By now, it had lost more than one third of its HP.

"Snow Cherry – Thousand Illusion! Illusory Moon!"

Snow Cherry rushed over to the Eighth Fiend in the blink of an

eye. The Eighth Fiend, which had been beaten savagely, was extremely furious. The spikes on its body lit up with a dark light and then became longer and stabbed towards Ling Chen… however, before it could move, it saw a blur before its eyes. Its target suddenly divided into 2… then into 4… then 8… then tens… then hundreds…. In just an instant, Ling Chen's afterimages filled the entire space and rushed towards the Eighth Fiend from all directions. The Eighth Fiend was utterly confused – every one of the afterimages looked exactly the same, and all of them gave off the same aura. It was simply impossible for it to determine which one was its true target, and because it couldn't decide where to attack, it froze on the spot from indecision.

Boom!!

Thousand Illusion was used to make sure the enemy would not know where to attack, making it difficult for them to attack. It was incredibly powerful because it caused the enemy to panic, making them reveal openings.

Ling Chen's attacks savagely hit the confused Eighth Fiend, sending its body, which had just stood up, into the layer of ice on the floor. Its body was buried into the ice and then sent flying back up by another one of Ling Chen's attacks. Just like that, Ling Chen continued to ruthlessly attack it within the afterimages.

The War God's profession's attacks not only had incredibly power, but they also contained massive force. The more damage the attacks dealt, the more force would be released. In his most powerful state, Ling Chen's attacks were like thousand-kilogram hammers smashing onto the Eighth Fiend's body, causing its body to be blasted back, fall over, and roll around. It was unable to maintain its balance and could not attack Ling Chen even once. Its HP also continuously fell incredibly quickly, from 60%, to 50%, to 45%… 40%… 35%…

"Goodbye!" Seeing that the Eighth Fiend had about only one third of its HP remaining, Ling Chen slowed down his attacks as he

casually raised his right hand, casting a [Soul Demise].

-37,800,000!

The Eighth Fiend's body suddenly became stiff as it unpleasantly cried and then powerlessly fell to the shattered ice floor.

"Ding... you have successfully killed the LV70 Heaven's End grade Boss [Eighth Fiend], Fame+70,000, SP+70,000."

"Ding... congratulations, you have levelled up to LV59, HP+20, MP+20, Strength+5, Agility+1, Spirit+1."

"Ding... your pet Xiao Hui has levelled up to LV59..."

"Ding... your pet Leng'Er has levelled up to LV59..."

"Ding... your pet Snow Cherry has levelled up to LV59..."

"Ding... your pet Xi Ling has levelled up to LV59..."

"Ding... your pet Cai'Er has levelled up to LV51..."

.....

"Ding... your pet Cai'Er has levelled up to LV54..."

Ling Chen had easily killed the Demon Skeleton Dragon, and even killing the Eighth Fiend hadn't taken too much effort, much less an intense and dangerous battle. Looking at the Eighth Fiend's corpse, Ling Chen tapped his nose... Goddamn, I've become so OP.

The EXP rewards for killing Heaven's End grade Bosses that were higher level than him were simply enormous. Even with the Heaven's Jealousy debuff, Ling Chen had levelled up after killing each of the Heaven's End grade Bosses, while Cai'Er had levelled up 7 times. Xiao Hui walked forwards and collected the spoils of war before starting to devour the Eighth Fiend's corpse.

The Eighth Fiend had dropped 9 pieces of equipment in total: 7 of them were Gold grade, 1 was Celestial grade, and the remaining one was a Heaven's End grade equipment.

[Slasher]: Type: Gauntlet, Grade: Celestial, Equipment

Requirements: Any Warrior or Shield Bearer profession above LV70. Dark gauntlets made from the Eighth Fiend's spikes. They are completely black and are heavy and cold. The killing intent they possess is immense, and the backs are covered with sharp spikes. After equipping, Attack Power and Critical Chance will be greatly increased.

Stats: Defence+300, Physical Attack Power+200, Agility-20, Critical Chance+10%, Pierce Chance+10%, Darkness Resistance+5%. When attacking, adds a 7% chance of slashing open a wound and dealing continuous damage for the next 5 seconds.

Although it did not give any skills and the Critical Chance and Pierce Chance were useless to Ling Chen, the Physical Attack Power+200 stat was a pleasant surprise for him. It had to be known that his strongest weapon – the Heaven's End grade Chilling Star – gave him 1000 Attack Power! It was a pity that the gauntlet's level requirement was LV70, and even with the LV9 Item Manipulation Technique, he was still unable to equip it.

The Heaven's End grade item dropped from the Eighth Fiend was surprisingly a jewellery equipment!

[Stone of Resentment]: Type: Necklace, Grade: Heaven's End, Equipment Requirements: Any profession above LV70. An item of evil and darkness that absorbed the resentment of countless Undead where many Undead perished. It contains boundless power of hatred.

Stats: Darkness Resistance+5%. When attacking, adds a 5% chance of doubling damage, a 3% chance of tripling damage, a 1% chance of quadrupling damage, and a 0.1% chance of dealing 10 times damage.

The Stone of Resentment was threaded on a black thread, and it was about as big as one of the Lunar Scourge's orbs. It had black wisps of air surrounding it, giving off an uncomfortable, eerie feeling. However, its stats completely shocked Ling Chen. The

Stone of Resentment indeed deserved to have ‘resentment’ in its name and to be Heaven’s End grade. Its effects could double his damage or even multiply it up to 10 times… in his most powerful state, the damage he could deal was simply unimaginable!

If it activated during crucial moments, it could deal a miraculous blow!

After feeling quite delighted about the Stone of Resentment’s stats, Ling Chen casually glanced through the stats of the other pieces of equipment before throwing them in his bag. Now, almost every Chinese player had a full set of Gold grade of equipment, so he did not have even a bit of interest in the Gold grade equipment.

“Ding… your pet Xiao Hui has successfully devoured the Eighth Fiend, HP+900, Defence+180.”

After devouring the Eighth Fiend, Xiao Hui’s horn flashed as he spat out a black pearl, looking like the one he had spat out after devouring the Demon Skeleton Dragon’s corpse.

[Pearl of Revenge]: Type: Energy Orb, Grade: Heaven’s End, Attributes: Darkness, Stats: reflects 35% of all damage received.

This Heaven’s End grade Pearl had a shocking stat – a powerful reflective ability. This sort of item would be heaven-defying on any player, but to Ling Chen, this sort of thing wasn’t very useful. After all, his Attack Power was simply too powerful, and the damage that would be reflected simply couldn’t be compared to the damage that he could deal. Moreover, with his skills and abilities, it was almost impossible to hit him. It wasn’t worth it for Ling Chen to give up the 15 Movement Speed from the Wind Chasing Stone for this.

After dealing with the Demon Skeleton Dragon and Eighth Fiend, taking down the remaining Ice Soul Undead Wolf was no problem at all. This was because although the Ice Soul Undead Wolf was a Heaven’s End grade Boss, it posed no threat to Ling Chen. The reason was very simple… all of the Ice Soul Undead Wolf’s attacks

were of the Water element, and it was weak against physical attacks.

As for ice and water attacks... even the Mysterious God grade Ice Demon Beast was unable to harm Ling Chen at all, so how could this Heaven's End grade Ice Soul Undead Wolf hope to even scratch him?

Ling Chen moved over to the sleeping Ice Soul Undead Wolf and smashed an attack down onto it, waking it up. Following this, Ling Chen didn't even bother activating Moon Shadow or Soul Sacrifice, and he simply launched vigorous attacks with his 2 weapons. Naturally, the Ice Soul Undead Wolf was enraged and cast various powerful Ice attacks towards Ling Chen. In just an instant, a snow storm started blowing as ice blades flew around, turning the place into a true Ice Purgatory. However, Ling Chen completely ignored all of these attacks and chased down the Ice Soul Undead Wolf with his superior Movement Speed. Throughout the entire process, he did not stop attacking the Ice Soul Undead Wolf at all, because when the ice attacks hit him, green numbers would float up. The Ice Soul Undead Wolf simply couldn't harm him at all.

When the Ice Soul Undead Wolf finally realised this, it chose to attack with its claws instead. Ling Chen did not bother evading, and he instead met its attack with his body. When the claws slammed onto his chest, a '-3240' damage figure slowly rose up from the Ice Soul Undead Wolf's body.

A player at this stage of the game dealing this amount of damage would be considered decent, but for a LV70 Heaven's End grade Boss to deal such damage, it was simply trash. Ling Chen couldn't help but smirk and didn't waste any more time, activating both Soul Sacrifice and War God's Fury. He started beating down the Ice Soul Undead Wolf in his strongest condition, reducing its health to 30% in less than half a minute. Finally, just like the other Bosses, he finished it off with a [Soul Demise].

Whew, give me a few more of these Water element Bosses... Ling Chen thought to himself as he looked down at the fallen Ice Soul Undead Wolf.

“Ding... you have successfully killed the LV70 Heaven’s End grade Boss Ice Soul Undead Wolf, Fame+70,0000, SP+70,000.”

“Ding... congratulations, you have levelled up to LV60, HP+20, MP+20, Strength+5, Agility+1, Spirit+1.”

“Ding... your pet Xiao Hui has levelled up to LV60, HP+800, MP+150, Defence+50, Skill [Eye of the Holy Spirit] has been raised to max level, [Holy Spirit’s Aura] has levelled up to LV13, [Holy Spirit’s Pearl] has levelled up to LV2, [Holy Spirit’s Gift] has levelled up to LV4, [Holy Spirit’s Shield] has levelled up to LV4.”

“Ding... under the effects of your pet Xiao Hui’s skill [Holy Spirit’s Gift], your skills [True Lucky Hand], [Heaven Wind Technique], and [Item Manipulation Technique] have been levelled up to max level. [War God Technique] has been levelled up to LV11, [Broken Shadow] has been levelled up to LV9, and [Vanishing Shadow] has been levelled up to LV9.”

“Ding... your pet Leng’Er has levelled up to LV60, MP+100, Magic Attack Power+20, Defence+10, skill [Soul Lock] has been levelled up to LV2.”

“Ding... your pet Snow Cherry has levelled up to LV60, HP+1000, MP+300, Physical Attack Power+100, Magic Attack Power+60, Defence+50, and has entered into her six-tail form. Skill [Godly Fox Sky-Toppling Dance]’s effects have changed accordingly.”

“Ding... your pet Xi Ling has levelled up to LV60, HP+100, MP+2000, Physical Attack Power+20, Magic Attack Power+800, Defence+1, skill [Heaven-Burning Flames] has been levelled up to LV9, [Solar Laser] has been levelled up to LV9, and her normal fire attack’s effects have become more powerful.”

“Ding... your pet Cai’Er has levelled up to LV55...”

“Ding… your pet Cai’Er has levelled up to LV57, HP+1000, MP+1000, Physical Attack Power+10, Magic Attack Power+200, Defence+10.”

Chapter 647 - Massive Benefits

After killing 3 high-levelled Heaven's End grade Bosses, Ling Chen's level jumped from LV57 to LV60. Xiao Hui's Holy Spirit's Gift levelled up to LV4, and all of Ling Chen's skills that weren't max level had also levelled up.

[Eye of the Holy Spirit]: Current Level: LV5, max level. Uses the Holy Spirit's energy to create a pair of eyes that can see through all hidden things. The higher the level, the more information that can be seen and the greater the range. Effects: Can view detailed information and weaknesses about any target. The information can be transferred to the master. Has a range of 200 metres, and it can discover any hidden areas, items, or creatures.

[Holy Spirit's Aura]: Current Level: LV13, Highest Level: LV20, Level required to upgrade to LV14: LV65. Using its Holy Spirit Aura, which is devoid of evil and impurity, to seek the protection of mother nature, it upgrades the innate gifts of itself and all companions. Effect: Luck+13 and Comprehension+13 of itself along with the master and all pet companions. Effect exists even while not summoned.

[Holy Spirit's Pearl]: Current Level: LV2, Highest Level: LV3, Level required to upgrade to LV3: LV70. The Holy Spirit Beast uses its unique Holy Spirit power to create a special pearl, containing boundless auspiciousness and Nature's blessings. Can create 1 pearl every level this skill is raised. When the Holy Spirit's Pearl is used on a skill, it can increase the maximum level of the skill by 20% (subject to rounding), and it can instantly raise the skill to the new maximum level.

[Holy Spirit's Shield]: Current Level: LV4, Highest Level: LV5, Level required to upgrade to LV4: LV80. An invisible shield that is always protecting the surroundings of the Holy Spirit Beast's body, forcibly decreasing all damage received by 60%. When HP is higher than 40%, the user will not die after receiving a lethal blow, and

HP will be reserved at 1. HP recovers 10% every second, and after death the user can directly revive on the spot. When revived, HP will recover to max, there will be no losses, and can revive 3 times a day.

[Holy Spirit's Gift]: Current Level: LV4, Highest Level: LV5, Level required to upgrade to LV5: LV80. Using Holy Spirit Force to bless the master increases the level of all of his/her skills. Effect: Level of all skills of master+4 (Ineffective towards skills that are already max level, directly takes effect towards new skills that appear later). Effect exists even while not summoned.

Not only did the range increase after Xiao Hui's [Eye of the Holy Spirit] had been raised to max level, but there were also no longer any restrictions on the target. This meant that they would be able to receive full information on targets of any level or grade! Levelling up [Holy Spirit's Shield] meant that Xiao Hui's survivability once again increased, and levelling up [Holy Spirit's Pearl] and [Holy Spirit's Gift] brought Ling Chen massive benefits. The [War God's Technique] had been levelled up to LV11, [Broken Shadow] and [Vanishing Shadow] had been levelled up to LV9, and the skills that Ling Chen had for the longest time, [Heaven Wind Technique] and [Item Manipulation Technique], had been levelled up to max level. The super stealing skill from the Lucky Cat, [True Lucky Hand], had also been raised to max level.

[Heaven Wind Technique]: Current Level: LV10, max level. An ancient battle technique that can greatly increase the ability to control any weapon after practice. Effect: When using any weapon, damage dealt is increased by 50%. Effect does not stack with other weapon proficiency skills.

The max level [Heaven Wind Technique] gave him an extra 50% damage stat when using any type of weapon. No matter if it was the fact that it applied to any weapon or how powerful the effects were, it was far superior to ordinary weapon proficiency skills. This ancient battle technique from the god beast Tao Tie had

become one of the most important skills to Ling Chen in combat. Ling Chen then looked down towards the [Item Manipulation Technique], which was also from Tao Tie. Based on past experience, the max level [Item Manipulation Technique] should allow Ling Chen to ignore 10 levels for equipment requirements. Now that Ling Chen was LV60, it was expected that he could equip the LV70 [Slasher] and [Stone of Resentment]. However, after Ling Chen read the LV10 [Item Manipulation Technique]'s description, his eyes widened.

[Item Manipulation Technique]: Current Level: LV10, max level. An ancient battle technique that allows you to equip equipment that surpasses your current level after practice. Effect: Ignores all level restrictions on all equipment.

Every time the [Item Manipulation Technique] was levelled up from LV1 to LV9, it allowed Ling Chen to ignore another level for equipment restrictions. However, the max level [Item Manipulation Technique] didn't merely allow him to ignore 10 levels... but allowed him to ignore all level restrictions!!

This meant that the max level [Item Manipulation Technique] not only allowed Ling Chen to equip LV70 equipment but also LV80 or even LV100 equipment! Moreover, even if his level dropped to LV0, he would still be able to equip LV100 equipment with the [Item Manipulation Technique]!

Ling Chen sighed in amazement – this effect was simply too heaven-defying!

He happily equipped the [Slasher] Gauntlets and hung the [Stone of Resentment] around his neck before looking at the max level [True Lucky Hand] in anticipation.

[True Lucky Hand]: Current Level: LV5, max level. The evolved version of [Lucky Hand], a godly skill that comes from the treasure creature Lucky Cat. Anyone who obtains this skill will receive world-dominating theft skills that will cause people to shudder at

the sound of their name. Upon use, the user can use an unseen hand to steal any item from the target. Legends say that a pinnacle True Lucky Hand can instantly steal everything a target has. However, it is said that training to the pinnacle is as difficult as reaching the heavens, and even the Lucky Cat has not been able to unleash such power. Within range, the user can steal up to 5 items of their choice from the target. The success rate is affected by the target's level, grade, and luck. Base success rate for stealing is (Luck x 5)%. Success rate is increased by 50% for an item that is known. The ability to steal without being detected is also affected by the target's level, grade, and luck. Base success rate for not being detected is (Luck x 5)%. Consumes 10 MP, cooldown time: 5 seconds. [Note: This skill was from the treasure spirit beast 'Lucky Cat', and LV5 is only the level of skill that the 'Lucky Cat' reached. It is not necessarily the maximum level of True Lucky Hand. The Lucky Cat's True Lucky Hand has been at LV5 since 6000 years ago, and it has not been able to level it up ever since. It is possible that LV5 is the True Lucky Hand's final level, so the 'extreme power' of the legends might not actually exist.]

The 'max level' True Lucky Hand had quite a strange description. After looking through it a few times, Ling Chen then looked at [Broken Shadow], [Vanishing Shadow], and Xi Ling's 2 upgraded skills, memorizing their new stats. By now, Xiao Hui had collected everything from the Ice Soul Undead Wolf and had created a new Holy Spirit's Pearl, which had all been moved to Ling Chen's bag.

The Holy Spirit's pearl was a ridiculously overpowered item that could increase the maximum level of a skill. Ling Chen had used the first Holy Spirit's Pearl on [Soul Demise], turning it into Ling Chen's most monstrous skill. When used on Bosses, it became an absolutely game-breaking skill. What should he use this second Holy Spirit's Pearl on?

Ling Chen looked through his skills, and after thinking for a while, he decided not to immediately use it. Instead, he put it away

and started to go through the spoils of war he had received from the Ice Soul Undead Wolf. The Demon Skeleton Dragon had dropped a Mysterious God grade Ring, and the Eighth Fiend had dropped a Heaven's End grade necklace. The Ice Soul Undead Wolf's spoils of war wouldn't be too shabby either.

Ling Chen found that he had obtained 4000 Underworld Coins, 19 Ice element Wolf Fangs, 2 single-use skill scrolls for the Ice Soul Undead Wolf's ultimate skill [Extreme Blue Radiance], and 7 pieces of equipment: 1 Silver grade, 4 Gold grade, and 2 Celestial grade. One of the Celestial grade equipment was a pair of boots, and the other was a rare cloak. However, what made Ling Chen feel quite depressed was that there was no equipment above Celestial grade!

[Ice Soul Cloud Boots]: Type: Boots, Grade: Celestial, Equipment Requirements: Any profession above LV70. A beautiful pair of boots made from unknown materials. They are as clear as diamonds, and they contain a noble and cold, faint blue light. They look like they've been instilled with a mysterious energy, and they are unexpectedly light.

Stats: Defence+260, Constitution+35, Agility+70, Movement Speed+25, Water Resistance+8%, provides immunity to slipping while walking on ice and snow.

Bonus Skill: [Blue Blessing]: Releases a watery blue light that covers one's body, causing the user's Water Resistance to increase by 40% for 30 seconds and provides immunity to [Frozen] status during that time. Costs 40 MP, cooldown time: 100 seconds.

[Ice Soul Crystal Cloak]: Type: Cloak, Grade: Celestial, Equipment Requirements: Any profession above LV70. A crystalline yet soft and light cloak. When blowing in the breeze, it gives off a starlike light, containing an unbelievable lightness.

Stats: Defence+160, HP+600, Agility+230, Movement Speed+20, Water Resistance+5%, provides immunity to Movement Speed and Magic Attack Power debuffs.

Bonus Skill: [Ice Crystal Snow Dance]: Causes the cloak to flutter, letting out large amounts of snow and ice to restrict enemies, causing all targets within 10 metres to lose 30% HIT and Evasion for 20 seconds. Costs 30 MP, cooldown time: 100 seconds.

Compared to the Demon Skeleton Dragon and the Eighth Fiend, this Ice Soul Undead Wolf was much stingier. Luckily, both of these Celestial grade equipment were useful to Ling Chen, and he equipped both of them immediately. With 4 pieces of Ice type equipment on his body, he gave off a cold, piercing glow.

Facing 3 high-level Heaven's End grade Bosses had seemed like an incredibly intense and dangerous ordeal to Ling Chen at first, but he had completely underestimated how powerful he was. None of the 3 Heaven's End grade Bosses were able to threaten him at all, and instead they had given him large amounts of EXP, SP, and equipment. What's more, they had all dropped high-grade equipment that were useful to him, allowing him to change almost all of his equipment. Now, apart from the [Fairy's Blessing] Earrings, the lowest grade equipment on him was Celestial grade. He had 5 Heaven's End grade equipment as well as a Mysterious God grade Ring, which had fairly lacklustre stats.

Ling Chen took a close look through all of the equipment on him before focusing his attention on the [Lachesis' Tear], trying to see if there were any hidden special effects. After looking at its description, Ling Chen's eyes fell on its Equipment Requirements, and a look of confusion flashed in his eyes.

Equipment Requirements: Unknown.

And yet, he was able to wear it on his hand and have the stats apply to him.

Could it be that 'unknown' meant that there were no equipment requirements? Or was there some other meaning...

After feeling confused for a while, Ling Chen stopped thinking about it. After looking at his SP, which was now more than

100,000, he casually raised [Broken Shadow] and [Vanishing Shadow] to their max level. With the Heaven's Jealousy debuff, Ling Chen required twice as much SP to level up his skills, and because of how powerful his skills were, they already required an insane amount of SP to level up. As such, even with Xiao Hui's Holy Spirit's Gift, he needed SP more than anyone else. SP was mainly obtained from killing Bosses, and now that Ling Chen could easily kill Celestial and Heaven's End grade Bosses, he was no longer in short supply of SP. Adding on Xiao Hui's LV4 Holy Spirit Gift, Ling Chen no longer had to worry about levelling up his skills. From now on, he probably wouldn't even be able to finish spending all of his SP.

[Broken Shadow]: Current level: LV10, max level. One of the Feng Chen Sect's ultimate escaping techniques. After activating, the user's body becomes like an illusory shadow, and the user will be almost impossible to stop or capture. Effects: Movement Speed+900%, Evasion+900%, effects last for 30 seconds. Can be used seven times per day.

[Vanishing Shadow]: Current Level: LV10, max level. One of the most advanced concealment techniques of the Feng Chen Sect. After casting, the user's body disappears without even a trace, and even the Ghost God wouldn't be able to discover him or her. Effects: Conceals the user's body. While concealed, the user cannot attack or counterattack. The concealment is cancelled upon receiving damage. Costs 5 MP per second and can be maintained for an unlimited amount of time. After cancelling the concealment, this skill cannot be used within 30 seconds.

The max level Broken Shadow not only lasted for 30 seconds each time, but it could also be used 7 times per day! That meant Ling Chen would be able to activate Broken Shadow for a total of 210 seconds every day. What's more, the max level Vanishing Shadow didn't have any time limits, and once it was activated, it would not deactivate unless he was hit or he cancelled the skill. It was a

perfect stealth skill! The only downside to it was that once he cancelled the skill, he would not be able to use it again within 30 seconds.

Chapter 648 - Underworld Fire

“Ding... your pet Xiao Hui has successfully devoured the Ice Soul Undead Wolf, HP+600, MP+350, Defence+200.”

The final Heaven’s End grade entity, the Ice Soul Undead Wolf, was devoured by Xiao Hui. Continuously devouring 3 Heaven’s End grade Bosses was like a massive banquet for Xiao Hui, and he had received incredible benefits. The higher-grade the corpses he devoured were, the more stats he would receive.

After finishing eating, Xiao Hui fell silent for a while. His horn then flashed with light as he continuously spat out 3 small, round objects. They were only about as big as a thumb, and they were completely transparent, as if they were made of glass.

Could they be Energy Orbs again? Ling Chen picked them up and looked at their descriptions.

[Ice Soul Heart-Protector Pearl]: A pearl of protection created from the Ice Soul Undead Wolf’s core energy. Once the energy within it is triggered, it will release an extremely protective Ice element power. Upon contact with armour, the Heart-Protector Pearl will be absorbed into the armour, and when the wearer suffers a fatal blow, the Heart-Protector Pearl will be crushed, releasing energy that cancels out the fatal damage. Effects can only take place once.

A single Ice Soul Heart-Protector Pearl could save him from fatal damage once, so 3 of them meant that they could block fatal damage 3 times, meaning that they were essentially 3 extra lives for Ling Chen!

Ling Chen took a pearl and experimentally placed it against his chest. He heard a ‘ding’ as the Ice Soul Heart-Protector Pearl was absorbed into the Chilling Crystal Battle Armour. Because they were both of the Ice element and looked crystalline, it essentially fused with the Chilling Crystal Battle Armour perfectly.

“Ding… you have successfully attached the [Ice Soul Heart-Protector Pearl] to the [Chilling Crystal Battle Armour]. The [Ice Soul Heart-Protector Pearl]’s activation conditions are the same as those of the [Evil God’s Mask]. Please decide which one should be activated first. If no choice is made, the [Ice Soul Heart-Protector Orb] will be activated first.

There was no need for Ling Chen to think, and he immediately replied, “Activate the [Evil God’s Mask] first.”

The system gave a ‘ding’ of confirmation in response.

The Evil God’s Mask’s effects could be activated every 10 seconds, and if Ling Chen received any fatal damage during those 10 seconds of cooldown time, he would be dead without a doubt. With the [Ice Soul Heart-Protector Pearls], he now had 3 additional layers of safety during those 10 seconds!

Unless he faced Mysterious God grade enemies, it would be difficult for him to even die.

Ling Chen once again came to the end of the Ice Purgatory, and the 3-coloured barrier was now gone, revealing a grey exit.

Path of Shadows, Path of Darkness, Ice Purgatory… after passing through the Fire Purgatory, he would be able to reach his destination – the Underworld Blood Lake!

After walking out of the Ice Purgatory, Ling Chen came to a narrow, dark passageway. The passageway was not too long, and he reached the end in less than half a minute. At the end was a pair of tightly-closed stone doors, on which 2 dark red words were engraved: Fire Purgatory!

Xiao Hui, who had been walking in front, stopped walking, and a grey light shone from his horn, becoming more and more intense. At the end, it became so bright that it covered more than half of his body.

Ling Chen stopped walking and looked at Xiao Hui’s because of

his strange behaviour. Apart from when he devoured things, his horn would only light up when he detected danger, treasure, or hidden areas. However, Ling Chen had never seen his horn glow so brightly before.

"Xiao Hui, what did you find?" Ling Chen asked in a low voice.

Xiao Hui gave a long 'awoo' as the light on his horn became brighter and brighter and his hair started to stand on end. He lowered his body, almost pressing down against the cold ground. Ling Chen instantly realised that Xiao Hui had detected something incredibly dangerous ahead and was warning him.

In front of him was evidently the Fire Purgatory.

Xiao Hui naturally knew Ling Chen's strength. For him to act in such a way, he was undeniably telling Ling Chen that what was ahead was a danger that he could not overcome. From the grey light, it seemed like this would be the most dangerous thing that he had ever encountered!

"Xiao Hui looks very scared; could there be something incredibly terrifying ahead?" Cai'Er floated over to Ling Chen's side as she asked with a look of worry.

Ling Chen frowned – Xiao Hui's detections abilities were peerless, and he had never given a false alert before. His warning was clearly telling Ling Chen that if they continued, it was possible that they would die!

Before entering here, he had heard from the Undead Warrior that there was something terrifying in the Fire Purgatory, something so terrifying to the point that even the Mysterious God grade 8 Underworld Gods would feel scared.

However, since he had come here, how could he retreat? In order to obtain all of the Lunar Scourge's Orbs, he would still jump down even if there was a chasm of despair in front of him. He would not retreat.

After lightly breathing in, Ling Chen gripped his weapons as he walked towards the entrance of the Fire Purgatory. When he reached where Xiao Hui was, Xiao Hui was silent. He suddenly leapt towards him and bit onto his pants, trying to drag him backwards. However, he was too small and wasn't very strong, so he wasn't able to stop Ling Chen at all. He looked up at Ling Chen, a look of warning and pleading in his eyes.

This was the first time Xiao Hui had done such a thing in response to danger, causing Ling Chen's heart to tremble. A range of emotions flickered across his face, and he squatted down as he patted Xiao Hui's head, saying, "Don't worry, no matter how dangerous it is ahead of us, it's still easy for me to stay alive. Back when I was LV30, even Snow Cherry couldn't do anything to me. Surely the enemy in front of us can't be more powerful than Snow Cherry, right?"

Xiao Hui refused to let go and desperately tried to drag Ling Chen back, completely determined to not let Ling Chen advance. His detection abilities not only told him that the enemy ahead was incomparably strong, but he could also feel the danger of going ahead... this time, what Xiao Hui detected was simply darkness! A completely pure darkness. This meant that if Ling Chen went into the Fire Purgatory, he would die without a doubt!

However, no matter what Xiao Hui did, he was not able to change Ling Chen's mind. Even though he knew how dangerous it was ahead, Ling Chen would not choose to retreat. After falling silent for a while, Ling Chen patted Xiao Hui's head again and picked him up before putting him on Snow Cherry's back and slowly walking towards the entrance of the Fire Purgatory. Xiao Hui knew that he was powerless to change the mind of his stubborn master, so he could only lower his head and look forwards as his fur started to stand again.

Step... Step... Step...

Ling Chen walked through the silent passageway and stood right

in front of the entrance to the Fire Purgatory. Ahead of him was the pair of tightly-closed stone doors, and through a small gap, he could see some flickering colours. Ling Chen stretched out his hand and pressed it against the stone doors. The instant his hand came into contact with the stone doors, an overwhelming feeling of suppression appeared within his heart to the point that he felt that it was difficult to breathe.

This was a feeling he would experience right before facing incredible danger!

Just what is hidden ahead... why does it give me such a terrifying feeling?! This feeling clearly tells me... that if I take another step forwards, I'll definitely die!

Ling Chen's body was fixed in place as an incomparably serious expression appeared on his face. Xiao Hui's reaction and the feeling he felt created a slight desire of retreat within him... but the instant it appeared, Ling Chen immediately quashed it. Retreating in the face of danger was not something he did. The Lunar Scourge's Orbs were his only hope to revive Shui Ruo, so he couldn't allow himself to retreat no matter what!

Rumble...

Ling Chen pushed out vigorously, and the heavy stone doors swung open easily. A fiery light flashed, lighting up the entire passageway between the Ice Purgatory and Fire Purgatory.

In front of Ling Chen's eyes was a world of fire.

The ground was completely covered with flames, leaving not even a speck of white. Although these flames seemed to form a single body of flames, they burned at different intensities at different places. Some places had small tongues of fire, while others had incredibly intense and raging flames. The smallest flames were 10 or so centimetres tall, while the largest shot up to 4 to 5 metres.

What was strangest, however, was the colour of these flames. They weren't the normal red or orange colour, nor were they the blue or purple of extremely hot flames. Instead, they were an incredibly strange... grey! What's more, despite standing in front of this sea of flames, Ling Chen couldn't feel any heat.

"Xi Ling, why is the fire here all grey? Are there grey flames in this world?" Ling Chen frowned as he asked, but he did not walk forwards.

Xi Ling spread her wings, and after a flash of red light, she turned into her human form. After looking at the grey flames for a while, her eyes flashed, as if she discovered something, and she said, "This is Underworld Fire! And an extremely pure type at that."

"Underworld Fire?" It was the first time Ling Chen had heard of this.

"Although it's called 'fire', it's not true fire," Xi Ling continued. She possessed the Golden Crow, Vermillion Bird, and Phoenix's flames, and she was undeniably the sovereign of fire. "This is a type of extremely high-grade miasma, and it is incredibly dense. As such, it's no longer something that is colourless or formless, but it has taken shape. It takes the form of burning flames as it flows, so it's called 'Underworld Fire'. Places with Underworld Fire are like heaven for Undead, but the requirements for Underworld Fire to appear are incredibly strict. It should only exist within this Underworld place."

Underworld Fire – although it was called 'fire', it was not actually fire but an extremely dense type of miasma that merely looked like flames

If it was true fire, Ling Chen wouldn't be afraid at all. This was because Xi Ling, a Mysterious God grade existence, gave all of her companions immunity to Fire damage.

Since it was miasma, theoretically, it wouldn't harm him either. The Underworld was filled with miasma, but because of Leng'Er,

he and his pets hadn't taken any damage. Logically, the Underworld Fire shouldn't deal damage to him either.

After thinking about this, Ling Chen finally advanced and stepped into the 'burning' Underworld Fire, truly stepping into the Fire Purgatory.

After stepping into the Underworld Fire, he did not feel any discomfort, but he felt that he had been brushed by something invisible. Neither he nor his pets lost any HP, allowing Ling Chen to let out a breath of relief. At this moment, a heavy rumbling sounded out from behind him as the stone doors tightly closed.

Ling Chen frowned and quickly returned to the stone doors, trying to open them again. However, the stone doors seemed to have become thousands of times heavier, and he couldn't make them budge at all. Ling Chen immediately retreated and raised the Chilling Star and Twilight Spear, roaring as he launched 2 [Heaven Destroying Slashes] at the stone door.

Clang!!

Sparks flashed and the sound of the impact was deafening. The recoil caused Ling Chen to take many steps backwards, and he almost fell to the ground. After launching those attacks, his arms were now numb, while only a shallow mark had appeared on the stone door. In the next moment, the thin mark disappeared as if the door had never been damaged.

With the Scorpio Orb, all of Ling Chen's attacks carried with them a powerful Destruction effect. The attacks he just unleashed would have been able to destroy an incredibly tough boulder, yet it was barely able to damage the stone doors.

Now that the stone doors were unable to be opened again... he did not have anywhere to retreat to!

Chapter 649 - The War God Who Returned From Hell: Chi Xuan Wu Hen

Since his retreat was cut off, Ling Chen could only advance. Since Ling Chen had walked in, he naturally wouldn't retreat anyways.

Ling Chen looked at the closed stone door before turning around, his expression incredibly calm. He then walked towards the Underworld Fire again.

The 'Fire' in the name 'Fire Purgatory' was evidently referring to this Underworld Fire. However, it was not real fire – how could such an important place like the Underworld Blood Lake possess an element that the Undead were so fearful of?

The Fire Purgatory was deathly silent, and Ling Chen's footsteps were incredibly loud and clear. After taking tens of steps, Ling Chen suddenly stopped. He looked through the moving Underworld Fire and saw a large door at the end. The door was jet-black, and it was particularly striking in this world of grey. In front of the door stood a tall and powerful-looking figure. The person stood as still as a statue and wore azure-coloured clothing. He also held a large, jet-black sword that seemed to be buried deep into the ground. Ling Chen's footsteps echoed around the entire space, yet this person did not react at all. His eyes were closed, and it was as if he was a corpse.

When Ling Chen was about 10 steps away, he stopped and silently looked at the still figure. He looked like a grand figure, and he was dressed simply. He had a stiff and ordinary-looking face that people would forget easily... but as he stood there completely still, Ling Chen felt as if he was looking at a gigantic mountain, blocking off his path. Ling Chen did not make any sounds as he gripped his weapons.

It was as if the person had finally detected that an outsider was here, and he slowly opened his eyes, revealing a pair of dim,

emotionless eyes. The instant he opened his eyes, his aura, which seemed as boundless as an ocean, erupted out, causing the surrounding air to congeal. Even the Underworld Fire stopped moving, becoming still. The instant he looked at Ling Chen, Ling Chen felt as if there was a heavy mountain weighing on him, and his entire body, including his internal organs, felt incredibly heavy, breathing becoming almost impossible.

Waves of shock rolled across Ling Chen's heart... was this the person that Xiao Hui had been so afraid of? Just who was this person? How could he have such terrifying strength? Let alone the 3 Underworld Gods that he had met before, even the monstrously powerful War Demon Beast and Shadow Demon Beast couldn't compare to this person! Even the East Ocean Continent's Moon God Representative, Snow Cherry, hadn't made him feel such pressure.

This meant that this person was stronger than the War Demon Beast, Shadow Demon Beast, and even a Moon God Representative!

Could this terrifying person be the Underworld King?!

No, that wasn't right! Why would the Underworld King personally stand guard here? However, since this person was even more powerful than the 8 Underworld Gods, why would he stand guard here in perpetuity?

It wasn't just that this person's aura was overwhelmingly powerful. Before, the Undead Warrior had told Ling Chen that apart from the Underworld King himself, no one had entered the Underworld Blood Lake by themselves. Let alone enter, they couldn't even get through the entrance. In other words, at least in the past thousand years, no one had successfully come to the Fire Purgatory before. And yet, the person standing guard here didn't seem shocked or wary at all – he remained as calm and still as a boulder, and he had not moved all this time, nor had his expression even flickered... this person's mental state was strong to an unimaginable degree. It was as if there was nothing in this

world that could move him.

“If I die, you pass. Otherwise, you die.”

The man in azure finally spoke. There was no emotion in his voice, and although he spoke, his body did not move at all, his gigantic black sword remaining motionless in his hand... it was as if he was telling Ling Chen: you don’t have the right for me to take the initiative to attack you.

“Are you a human or an Undead?” Ling Chen tightened his grip on his weapons as he asked. Beside him, Xiao Hui’s body was arched, looking incredibly tense.

“Undead, while you are a living creature,” The man in azure calmly replied. When he spoke, Ling Chen almost couldn’t see his lips move, and his voice was so calm that it was like a dead person was speaking... because it was impossible for a living person to speak without even a trace of emotion in their voice.

Ling Chen’s heart trembled as he frowned and asked, “How did you know?!”

“It doesn’t matter if you’re a living creature or Undead. You either kill me, or you will be killed by me. No need to speak anymore. Come.”

This was the third time that the Undead spoke, and it still contained no emotion at all. From his exchange with this person, he felt a sense of familiarity – he had never heard such an emotionless voice before, so why did he feel like he had heard it in the past before?

It was definitely a misperception!

The man in azure did not reply to him, and Ling Chen did not speak anymore. The gigantic pressure weighing down on Ling Chen’s body felt like a ten-thousand-kilogram rock. However, he straightened his body and his gaze became colder and colder without a trace of fear in them. However, his heart beat madly... if

he could kill this terrifying Undead, he would be able to pass through the Fire Purgatory.

However, could he really kill this Undead who was stronger than the 10 ancient demon beasts and the Moon God Representatives?

As Xiao Hui's Eye of the Holy Spirit activated, the man in azure's information was sent to Ling Chen's mind:

Chi Xuan Wu Hen: Type: Undead, Grade: High-Tier Mysterious God, Level: 96, Profession: Undead War God, HP: 3,200,000,000. A descendant of the Forgotten Continent's Chi Xuan family while he was still alive, and he fell in love with martial arts. He became the strongest being in the world, and he went through countless battles and life and death experiences. In the end, he was undefeatable, and he was given the title of 'War God' in the Forgotten Continent. He was the closest human in the Forgotten Continent's history to reach Saint Destroyer grade. He is a legend who no one has ever been able to come close to. The Underworld King obtained his corpse a thousand years ago and brought it to the Underworld, using the undying Underworld Fire to bring out all of his power from when he was still alive, becoming an extreme Undead that is second only to the Underworld King. However, it is unwilling to be with other Undead, and it would rather stand guard in the Fire Purgatory, never to see the sun or moon in a thousand years.

Passive Abilities: 1. Has incredibly powerful Attack Power; 2. Has incredible battle senses and abundant experience; 3. Has a 50% Critical Chance and Pierce Chance when attacking; 4. Attacks have powerful impact and chances of slashing; 5. Attacks contain a powerful Destruction effect; 6. Attacks ignore pain reduction; 7. Extreme proficiency in using swords; 8. Will not be knocked back, knocked over, or knocked flying by any attacks; 9. Immune to all abnormal statuses and debuffs; 10. Immune to Darkness attacks.

Special Ability: Because he has remained in an environment filled with Underworld Fire, recovers 1,500,000 HP and 500,000 MP

every second. Effects vanish if he leaves Underworld Fire.

Attack Skills:

[Extreme Heaven Destroying Slash]: The extreme form of the Heaven Destroying Slash. Releases the incredibly powerful War God power to attack all targets 5 metres in front of the user, causing an energy explosion that can destroy mountains and split stones. Deals a large amount of damage, and it has a chance of destroying the targets' equipment. Damage is equal to 800% of normal attacks, Critical Chance+30%, 15% chance to stun the targets for 3-5 seconds, and 10% chance for the targets' Defence to fall by 60% for 5 seconds. Costs 320 MP, Usage Frequency: Unknown.

[Extreme Eight Direction Annihilation]: The extreme form of the Eight Direction Annihilation. Uses the War God's power to create a powerful storm of destruction within 100 metres of the user, sending targets into an abyss of death. Damage is equal to 2000% of normal attacks, Critical Chance+70%, and 100% chance to knock back targets. Costs 980 MP, Usage Frequency: Low.

[Extreme War God's Fury]: The extreme form of War God's Fury. In Extreme War God's fury, the burning fury is transformed into boundless power. After activation, Physical Attack Power+150%, Attack Speed+150%, Defence reduced to 0, and Evasion reduced to 0. All attacks will have [Absolute HIT], [Absolute Critical], and [Absolute Pierce], lasting for 3 minutes. Activation requirements: Unknown. Usage Frequency: Low.

[Extreme Heaven Wind Battle Light]: The extreme form of the Heaven Wind Battle Light. Fuses the War God's power into his weapon, creating a golden battle light. The battle light's attack capabilities are the same as the weapon, and the battle light greatly increases the range of normal attacks and skills to a maximum of 30 metres. Can be activated and deactivated at will. Costs 2000 MP per second, and it will be deactivated when there is no more MP.

[Boundless Sword Light]: A powerful killing move created by fusing the War God Chi Xuan Wu Hen's sword intent and the War God's power. Upon activation, it will release countless beams of sword light from the sword in his hand, slashing everything within 300 metres into fragments. Can only be used with a 'Sword'. Damage is equal to 500% of normal attacks. Costs 1900 MP, Usage Frequency: Low.

[Heaven-Splitting Dragon-Slaying Art]: An extreme killing move comprehended by the War God Chi Xuan Wu Hen during his later years. Shoots out the golden battle light formed from the War God's power, piercing through an area of 3 metres by 1000 metres in front of him. Has [Absolute Pierce] and a large chance of destroying the target's equipment. Damage is equal to 600% of normal attacks. Costs 1600 MP, Usage Frequency: Low.

Ultimate Skill:

[War God Domain – Qilin]: The War God Chi Xuan Wu Hen's unique domain. Turns the 50 metres around him into his own domain. Within the domain, Physical Attack Power+90%, Movement Speed+90%, Enemy Physical Attack Power-40%, and Movement Speed-40%. Lasts for 10 minutes and can only be used once per day.

[God-Murdering Heaven-Punishing Slash]: An extreme killing move comprehended by the War God Chi Xuan Wu Hen during his later years. Legends say that it can kill even True Gods and rend the heavens once released. Single target attack, damage is equal to 12,500% of normal attacks, and it applies a stun for 3-5 seconds. Costs 35,000 MP, activation conditions: Unknown. Usage Frequency: Extremely Low.

[Blue Sky Extermination]: An extreme killing move comprehended by the War God Chi Xuan Wu Hen during his later years. 3 years after comprehending it, his lifeforce ran dry, and he never used it. As such, its power is unknown. Activation conditions: Unknown, Usage Frequency: Extremely Low.

Forbidden Skill:

[War God's Final Mystery – Moon Break]: ??????

Weaknesses: No Physical Defence, Light element Resistance: -100%, Fire element Resistance: -50%.

Chapter 650 - Only Option

The man in azure's information shocked Ling Chen, and he cried out, "You're... You're the War God!!"

The person in front of him was actually the legend of the Forgotten Continent, an ultimate expert who was crowned the War God! He was publicly acknowledged to be the most powerful human in the history of the Forgotten Continent. Even after 1,000 years, there were still legends in the Forgotten Continent about him. At the same time, he was the one who had given Ling Chen his profession! Almost all of Ling Chen's battle skills came from the War God's inheritance. From this, the War God was equivalent to his master in the virtual world.

However, he never would have thought that he would face this person who had died 1,000 years ago!

Ling Chen suddenly realised why this man's voice had sounded so familiar – although it contained no emotion, the voice itself was exactly the same as the War God's spirit from the War God's Trial Grounds.

Even after Ling Chen called out his name, the man in azure revealed no emotions. However, his response shocked Ling Chen, "I am the War God, and you are also the War God."

His voice was incredibly calm, and apart from his mouth moving ever so slightly, the muscles on his face did not move at all.

"How did you know?" Ling Chen asked.

"How could I not recognise my own power?" The War God replied.

While he was the War God, Ling Chen was the person who had inherited his power. It was only natural that he would be able to tell that Ling Chen also possessed the War God's power. However, what made Ling Chen even more shocked was that when he saw an

outsider come in, he was incredibly calm; when it saw that it was a living being, he remained just as emotionless; and even though he recognised that this person was the inheritor of his strength, his expression, body, and the look in his eyes were all as still as water without even a hint of excitement or any other emotion.

Could it be that despite the fact that his body and power were revived by the Underworld Fire, his heart and emotions were still dead?

However, the War God's next words confirmed that this was not true. He calmly spoke, "It's just that I never thought that the power I left behind would only be inherited after a thousand years."

There was finally a trace of emotion in the War God's voice. It was one of sorrow and melancholy that no one else could understand, and it also contained a hint of reminiscence. These slight traces of emotions showed that it wasn't that his heart and emotions were dead, but that his mental state had reached a point that normal people couldn't even imagine. Let alone meeting the inheritor of his power after 1,000 years, he would remain just as calm even if the sky fell and the earth shattered.

Wait... he knows that he's the War God, can tell that I have the War God's power, and remembers the inheritance. Could it be...

"Do you still have your memories from during your lifetime?" Ling Chen asked.

When Ling Chen had first entered the Underworld and talked to the elderly Undead, he found out that powerful Undead, especially under special circumstances, could awaken their memories from when they were alive. It would be as if they had been given another life. However, this sort of Undead was so rare that they would appear only once in a thousand years. Moreover, these memories would only last in the Underworld; once they left the Underworld, they would become like normal Zombies.

From the War God Chi Xuan Wu Hen's words, he evidently could remember his life before he became an Undead.

"That's right. Otherwise, I would be peacefully staying here and would instead be the Underworld King's slave. You wouldn't understand the pain of having my memories from during my lifetime but being unable to leave this world of Undead. If I had the choice, I would rather be an Undead without my memories.

The War God's words confirmed Ling Chen's suspicions, and he revealed even more emotions. Ling Chen could understand his pain... possessing his memories from his past and having many things he wanted to do, but being unable to leave to meet the people he loved... not being able to know whether they were living well or not, and being unable to do what he wanted to do was an unbearable torture. It was not something that he could ever completely forget.

At this moment, Ling Chen gradually relaxed, and he thanked the heavens for helping him. It was definitely true that with Xiao Hui by his side, super lucky things would happen to him wherever he went. Although the War God in front of him was not the Forgotten Continent's War God anymore but the Underworld's Undead War God, his power had been completely awakened, meaning that he could only be stronger than he was when he was alive. Facing the strongest human in history, did Ling Chen have any hope in defeating him? Absolutely not! As for killing him, that was simply a fantasy.

As such, if he had to kill the War God, Ling Chen would definitely not be able to pass through the Fire Purgatory.

However, what allowed him to breathe out in relief was that although the person in front of him was the War God, he was his sole successor. From the War God's words, Ling Chen could deduce that he still had his memories, that his emotions were not completely dead, and that he desired to return to the Forgotten Continent. In that case, he wouldn't try to kill his 'successor',

right? Since the situation was like this, perhaps...

Ling Chen spoke in an earnest tone, “Senior War God, I can completely understand how you feel. I had the fortune of obtaining your power, and I have always felt incredibly grateful towards you. I never thought that you still existed in this world. Since I’ve been blessed with your power, I should do something for you. As such, if senior War God has anything that he wishes to be done in the Forgotten Continent, please tell me, and I’ll do my best to accomplish it for you.”

“And what would you like in exchange?” The War God blandly replied.

Ling Chen stared in surprise before immediately replying, “I hope that after fulfilling senior War God’s wishes, senior War God will allow me to pass through the Fire Purgatory. I risked many dangers coming to the Underworld, and I want to reach the Underworld Blood Lake because there’s something I need to obtain there no matter what. As such, I hope that senior War God will agree to this.”

Ling Chen had spoken incredibly sincerely, and he had not even asked the War God to immediately let him pass, but only after he fulfilled the War God’s wishes. It was impossible for Ling Chen to defeat the War God, so this was his only hope.

The War God did not move, and when he spoke again, his voice became low and heavy, the pressure on Ling Chen’s body becoming stronger, “Let me ask you, what is the essence of a War God?”

Ling Chen raised his eyebrows as he replied, “Battle and power.”

“That’s right, it’s battle and power,” the War God slightly nodded. This was the only action Ling Chen had seen him make this entire time, “A War God’s strength is raised through going through countless battles. When there’s an obstacle, one must use power to eliminate it. What a War God desires should be obtained

through strength and not trickery or pleading. Otherwise, they do not deserve the War God's power or to be called a War God."

A chilling feeling spread throughout Ling Chen's heart.

The War God's hand moved, and as he stretched out his hand, he gradually lifted the massive jet-black sword from the ground. When the sword completely left the ground, a formless sword qi swept throughout the entire Fire Purgatory like a wild gale. Ling Chen's entire body felt cold, and he felt a faint pain in his face. The Chilling Star and Twilight Spear in his hands felt as if they had met the emperor of weapons, and they trembled in Ling Chen's hands. Even the glow they shone with died down.

The Chilling Star and Twilight Spear were proper Heaven's End grade equipment! From this, Ling Chen could tell just how monstrous of a weapon the jet-black sword was.

The War God pointed the large sword at him and spoke with his emotionless voice again, "The only way for you to pass through here is for you to kill me. Otherwise, I will kill you. Today, one of us will die; there's no other option!"

Either I die or you die – this was the War God's reply to Ling Chen. The relationship between them and Ling Chen's offer to help him fulfill his wishes didn't matter to him at all.

The War God was a maniac who pursued the ultimate power, and he spent his entire life trying to become stronger. What he had said was the foundation of his life while he was still alive. However, although Ling Chen had obtained the War God's power, he wasn't a true War God, nor was he a madman who desperately pursued power. As long as his methods didn't completely throw away his dignity or go against what he believed in, he would do anything to accomplish his goals.

Facing the War God's sword, Ling Chen frowned as he asked, "Senior War God, is there a possibility of me defeating you?"

“No,” The War God’s reply was very direct. “As such, it is you who will die today.”

“I am the sole successor of your power. If I die, the War God’s power will disappear from the Forgotten Continent forever. Is this something you want to see?” Ling Chen asked as he took in a deep breath… he desperately hoped that the Undead War God didn’t know that players could revive after dying.

“Since fate has arranged for me to kill the successor of my power, so be it. War Gods do not fear death – dying in battle is the best way for a War God to die. I will use my full power to guard this place. No matter who it is, if they kill me, they can pass; otherwise, I will kill them. This is my destiny, as well as my pride and dignity as a War God.” The War God slightly turned the sword, and just this simple action caused the flow of air in the entire space to change. “Raise your weapon and show me your power. Fight! No matter if you live or die, do not throw away the pride and dignity of a War God!”

The War God’s reply completely crushed Ling Chen’s hopes. He did not say anything else – after all, no matter what he said, it would be futile. Ling Chen slowly raised his arms, which felt incredibly heavy, and crossed the Chilling Star and Twilight Spear in front of his body… if he wanted to pass through the Fire Purgatory, he had to kill the War God, the most powerful legend in the Forgotten Continent. Apart from this, there was no other option!

Chapter 651 - War God vs War God

They stopped talking, and the air seemed to solidify during the silence. The War God held his sword across his body, but he did not move. As the mighty War God, with his pride, he would not take the initiative to attack a junior who was evidently much weaker than he was. Ling Chen tightly gripped his trembling weapons, the backs of his hands covered with cold sweat. However, he did not attack for a long time... the War God remained as still as a statue, and his stance was not a battle stance but an invitation. He seemed to be full of openings, and if it was anyone else, Ling Chen would have attacked with a lightning-fast strike.

However, while looking at the War God, he suddenly couldn't find any openings when he chose an angle to attack from. This sort of terrifying feeling told him that no matter where he tried to attack the War God from, he would be rushing to his death.

Even the terrifying Instructor Hell hadn't given him a feeling like this.

"Are... Are you going to fight? That old grandpa looks so strong; will big brother be able to beat him?" Cai'Er nervously covered her mouth with her hands as she spoke anxiously. She had always lived in the peaceful Fairy Realm, and she had only experienced the outside world with Ling Chen. She had no battle experience, so meeting the War God, who was Mysterious God grade, did not make her feel the same amount of pressure that Ling Chen felt. However, she instinctively could tell that he was quite strong... moreover, Xiao Hui's fur was completely standing on end, and Xi Ling was not flying in the air and had not made any sounds, instead standing behind Ling Chen motionlessly. Only the flames on her body gave off some small sounds. This told Cai'Er that the person in front of them was exceptionally dangerous.

Ling Chen did not say anything as beads of cold sweat rolled

down his forehead. He desperately thought of different possibilities, but he found that in the face of absolute power, any items or tricks were completely powerless.

“Caw~~”

Xi Ling flew high into the air, spreading her crimson wings as they erupted with flames. Below, Snow Cherry also spread her pure-white wings, rushing to the sky. Under his extreme suppression and following the changes in Ling Chen’s thoughts, they all entered their battle states. Since they could only choose to fight, they could only give it their all... even though the silent old man in front of them was the strongest enemy they had ever faced and was a peak-level existence that they had no hope in defeating, this was the only choice before them.

Cai’Er, who had the lowest sense of danger, felt that the battle was about to start, so she flew to Ling Chen’s ear as she asked, “Big brother, what should Cai’Er sing?”

“Clear Dream In A Peaceful Night,” Ling Chen said in a low voice as he gritted his teeth.

“Okay, got it!” Cai’Er nodded her head and flew a small distance away before closing her eyes as her lips parted, a song that was like a clear breeze filling the space that was already filled with the air of suppression. The Song of Tranquillity sounded like it came from a beautiful heaven, and it was gentle and intoxicating to listen to. Anyone who listened to it would feel as if their worries had dissipated, leaving them in a peaceful and blissful world.

“Why do you not attack? Are you afraid?”

Hearing the Song of Tranquillity, Ling Chen gradually calmed down. However, a cold voice dispelled the atmosphere of peace and wonder that the Song of Tranquillity brought. The War God remained emotionless, and there weren’t any changes to the look in his eyes. The Song of Tranquillity, which had easily lulled 3 high-levelled Heaven’s End grade Bosses to sleep, was completely

ineffective on him.

“Eh?” Cai’Er stopped singing and stared at the Undead War God with her mouth open wide, “Eeeeeehhh? How come he can still talk? He should be asleep!”

Ling Chen did not reply to Cai’Er. He didn’t have too much hope in the Song of Tranquillity – how could someone with mental state that sharp be affected by the Nature’s Songs? Ling Chen met the War God’s gaze and coldly replied, “I am indeed afraid because I don’t want to die.”

“Fearing death and not being baptised by battles of life and death will make it so that you can never become a true War God. You have disappointed me.”

“Fearing death? Heh…” Ling Chen laughed. “There are many things that I fear in this world, but the thing I fear the least is death! You’re indeed much stronger than I am, but do you think you can kill me so easily?”

Ling Chen’s body burned with battle intent as he activated [Soul Sacrifice] and [War God’s Fury]. Ling Chen’s attacks in his most powerful state wouldn’t be too inferior to those of the Mysterious God grade War God’s, and instantly, the pressure from the War God was reduced by more than half. The weapons in his hands also stopped trembling and once again shone with their original lustre.

“Snow Cherry, Xi Ling, prepare to fight. Cai’Er, go somewhere safe and sing the Song of Passion. Xiao Hui, do your best to protect them. Leng’Er, don’t go too far away!!”

After speaking, Ling Chen finally moved. While mounted on Snow Cherry, his Movement Speed was 431, which allowed him to shoot out like an arrow towards the War God. Before he came near, the Lunar Scourge shined with light from [Moon Shadow], freezing the War God’s body in place.

Although the War God was not affected by the Nature’s Songs, he

would never be able to resist the Lunar Scourge's power. [Moon Shadow], which could freeze anything in place, was Ling Chen's initial show of strength to the War God. He and Xi Ling mercilessly rained down attacks on the War God's body, and at the same time, Cai'Er's [Song of Passion – A Brave Heart] reverberated in their ears. The song caused all of the blood in Ling Chen's body to boil, and their Physical Attack Power and Magic Attack Power drastically increased.

-1,216,000, -1,216,000...

With the Song of Passion, Ling Chen's Heaven Destroying Slashes dealt over 1 million damage each time. Xi Ling's flames were a perfect counter to Undead, and her Solar Lasers dealt even more damage. However, despite launching such powerful attacks together, they could barely see any changes to the War God's HP bar. With 3,200,000,000HP and a regeneration of 1,500,000HP per second, it was difficult for Ling Chen, even in his most powerful state, to deal much damage.

5 seconds passed very quickly, and as soon as the silver light completely disappeared, the War God's sword moved. His sword slashed downwards towards Ling Chen's body, the jet-black sword drawing a white arc through the air. As the sword in the War God's hand moved, a wave of battle intent filled the entire space, causing anyone who felt it to tremble. Those whose power or minds were weak would not be able to resist the battle intent at all, and they would not even have the strength to move a finger.

The instant the War God attacked, the skill's information was captured by Xiao Hui's Eye of the Holy Spirit and was sent to Ling Chen's mind, making him feel incredibly shocked.

This casual attack was actually the [Extreme Heaven Destroying Slash]! When Ling Chen used the Heaven Destroying Slash, his power would explode out, using his weapon to heavily hit his target. However, this extreme form of the Heaven Destroying Slash gave off no special airs at all. In the next instant, the War

God's black sword, which seemed quite slow, seemed to leap through space so that it was right in front of his chest...

Although Ling Chen was quite surprised, he did not panic. The Lunar Scourge once again shone with light as he activated [Moon Grief]. At the same time, he quickly jumped out of away, escaping from the trajectory of the War God's attack.

The downwards strike suddenly stopped. Under the effects of Moon Grief, the War God's Extreme Heaven Destroying Strike was cut short. However, this only lasted for an instant – no, it wasn't even an instant. As Ling Chen's pupils dilated, the downwards strike suddenly reversed, drawing out a black arc and piercing towards his body in mid-air, causing him to feel the icy coldness of death...

"Moment of Elegance!"

Using the Moment of Elegance's dash, Ling Chen's body suddenly shifted 10 or so metres away, dodging the War God's first attack. After coming to a rest, waves of shock crashed within his heart.

Anyone who suddenly felt that they couldn't move their body would be incredibly shocked. However, after Moon Shadow's effects ended, the War God had instantly attacked without any hesitation or panic... under Moon Grief's effects, he had forgotten all of his skills – normally, players would stand with their weapons raised, a look of confusion on their faces with all of their battle spirit gone. And yet, although the War God's [Extreme Heaven Destroying Slash] had been cut short by [Moon Grief], he had not reacted in dismay. He had instead immediately chained the attack into a normal attack, causing Ling Chen to almost be hit while he was in disbelief.

The War God was indeed the War God. He had simply experienced so many battles during his lifetime to the point that he himself had lost count. These battles not only increased his strength, but they also increased his battle sense and experience.

Although Ling Chen's battle sense was amazing, he had only fought for 10 or so years, while the War God... had thousands of years of experience! At his level, 'battle sense' wasn't just a sense but a terrifying instinct. This sort of instinct could allow him to perfectly react to any scenario in battle.

Currently, the War God had forgotten all of his skills, but he remained just as calm without even a hint of fear or confusion. To Ling Chen, the War God was still a terrifying existence even without his skills because even his normal attacks could split mountains and tear the earth.

How could Ling Chen deal with this peak-level existence who had no openings?!

Chapter 652 - The Undefeatable War God

+1,500,000, +500,000.

+1,500,000, +500,000.

.....

Every second, the War God's HP recovered at an astonishing rate, causing the damage that Ling Chen had dealt during the 5 seconds that the War God was frozen to become futile.

While he still had [Soul Sacrifice] and [War God's Fury], Ling Chen spread out his hands and got into position to attack again. His eyes also flashed with a strange light, sending a [Utter Despair Curse] towards the War God.

The War God slightly frowned, but that was it. His expression and his gaze did not change at all, and he calmly said, "So you are also a successor of the Feng Chen Sect. Looks like Xiao Feng Chen has escaped from the Lunar Sky Hell and fulfilled his greatest wish."

Back then, Xiao Feng Chen had told Ling Chen that before he was imprisoned in the Lunar Sky Hell, he was good friends with the War God. When he heard that the War God died, Xiao Feng Chen had been extremely sad. As such, Ling Chen wasn't surprised that the War God would mention the Feng Chen Sect and Xiao Feng Chen. Ling Chen tightened his grip on his weapons – although he had expected this sort of outcome, he still felt quite uncomfortable. If even the Feng Chen Curses were ineffective on the War God, it seemed that the only option he had was to kill him.

"If it was from before I died, perhaps your Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curses would have worked on me. However, I've stilled my mind for over a thousand years, and even the powerful Feng Chen Curses are unable to shake me. Perhaps this is my fortune, and perhaps this is misfortune," The War God spoke somewhat

melancholically as he slowly lifted his large, jet-black sword. “Everything from when I was living is like a dream. Now, my duty is to guard the area behind me and to kill anything that comes in here. If you don’t want to die, use your strength to destroy me. Otherwise, prepare to be buried in the undying Underworld Fire.”

“I won’t allow myself to die!” Ling Chen roared as he rushed towards the War God again. When he was about 10 or so steps away, Snow Cherry activated her [Thousand Illusion], instantly filling the area with countless afterimages that all rushed towards the War God.

Clang!!!

All of the afterimages disappeared, leaving behind only Ling Chen’s true body, which was above and to the left of the War God. This was Ling Chen’s full-powered strike, but he was unable to hit the War God’s body. His Twilight Spear and Chilling Star slammed down on the War God’s jet-black sword, which had suddenly appeared there, and had been solidly blocked.

A parry... and a perfect one at that! Once a perfect parry was activated, the parried party would be frozen for at least 1 second.

The War God’s terrifying counterattack arrived like a flash of lightning. The jet-black sword calmly stabbed towards Ling Chen’s chest, and the instant it made contact, a deafening explosion sounded out.

BANG!!!

-3,660,000!

Ling Chen and Snow Cherry were blasted into the air. The Evil God’s Mask roared as the damage that the War God dealt was reflected to him. A look of shock briefly appeared in his eyes before his gaze fell on the mask that Ling Chen was wearing.

“The Feng Chen Sect’s Evil God’s Mask,” The War God muttered to himself.

Ling Chen, who had been blasted into the air, steadied his body and almost shot out flames from his eyes. In the virtual world, he had parried countless attacks, but apart from that one time with the Sword Emperor, he had never been parried before. Moreover, that time with the Sword Emperor was because he wasn't using his full strength against her in order to test her strength. With his powerful battle sense and tactics, his attacking angle was always perfect, and with his shocking, explosive strength, it was almost impossible for enemies to dodge his attacks. At least to his knowledge, only Hell and Eve could do such a thing. Just then, not only had he used all of his strength, but had also chosen an angle that the War God could not have dodged from. He had even used [Thousand Illusion], and yet the War God had easily parried his attack perfectly!

The perfect parry completely crushed Ling Chen's last hopes.

The War God... a god among men; the most powerful existence in the history of humans in the Forgotten Continent. The peak at which he stood completely surpassed anything Ling Chen knew. Although Ling Chen was powerful, he was still a human. How could he stand up against an existence acknowledged to be a god?

"Ahhh!!!"

"Broken Shadow!"

Ling Chen unleashed a loud roar as he activated Broken Shadow, sending his Movement Speed while mounted on Snow Cherry to shoot to 4310. This was an incredibly monstrous burst speed, a figure that should not be possible for a human. As Ling Chen charged forwards with this speed, a wild gale erupted forth in the Fire Purgatory. Ling Chen and Snow Cherry were travelling so fast that it was impossible for them to be seen clearly, and only their after images could be seen.

Bang! Bang!

Ling Chen blasted 2 furious attacks onto the War God's body.

Even the War God was unable to react to more than 4000 Movement Speed, much less parry it. In fact, he couldn't even see Ling Chen's trajectory properly. After attacking, Ling Chen immediately retreated and then rushed towards the War God again, once again landing 2 heavy blows on his body... he then repeated this a third time, then a fourth, then a fifth...

The War God stood unmoving. Facing this sort of speed, he was unable to evade, and even if he attacked, all that he would hit would be afterimages. After Ling Chen launched 7 rounds of attacks, the War God closed his eyes, allowing Ling Chen to crazily attack as he calmly said, "The Feng Chen Sect's escaping abilities are indeed peerless under the heavens. If this space wasn't sealed, I wouldn't be able to stop you if you wanted to leave, much less harm you. However, within this restricted space, so what if you're fast?"

The War God opened his eyes and held his sword straight ahead of him. As he activated his skill, Xiao Hui, who had been watching the War God this entire time, sent a piece of information into Ling Chen's mind. This caused Ling Chen, who was about to launch his eighth round of attacks, to feel immense shock as he looked at Xi Ling and Cai'Er, roaring out, "Dodge it!!"

However, it was too late. Moreover, where could they escape to within this restricted space?

Countless streams of dark sword qi rushed out from the War God's sword, flying in all directions. In just an instant, every part of the Fire Purgatory was filled with sword qi, and Ling Chen, Xiao Hui, Snow Cherry, Xi Ling, and Cai'Er were all pierced by the sword qi. Ling Chen's Evil God's Mask's cooldown time had just refreshed, and Leng'Er, who was not affected by physical attacks, was safe and sound. However, Xi Ling and Cai'Er's HP were instantly cleared out.

"Ding... your pet Xiao Hui has suffered fatal damage. The skill [Holy Spirit's Shield] has been activated, and his HP has remained

at 1 HP."

"Ding... your pet Xiao Hui's skill [Holy Spirit's Sacrifice] has been activated, and he has died in Xi Ling and Cai'Er's place."

"Ding... your pet Xiao Hui has died."

"Ding... your pet Xiao Hui's skill [Holy Spirit's Shield] has been activated, and he has revived with full HP."

The War God's [Boundless Sword Light] covered the 300 metres around him. This meant that no matter where they were in the Fire Purgatory or how fast they were, they were still bound to be hit.

[Soul Sacrifice] and [War God's Fury]'s effects ended at the same time, and Ling Chen's Attack Power returned to its normal state. Under Cai'Er's [Nature's Light], his HP returned to its maximum. However, he wouldn't be able to deal more damage than the War God could heal in this state.

"[Disdaining The Heavens and Scorning the Earth, I Am The Emperor]!"

All of the power within Ling Chen's body furiously gathered and burned as the formless War God's power formed a layer of colourless light on Ling Chen's body. He once again rushed towards the War God and attacked.

Clang!!

If Ling Chen's attacks in even his strongest state could be parried, it was even more so for Ling Chen in his normal state. The War God casually swung out his sword, easily parrying Ling Chen's attack. However, despite being parried, Ling Chen was not affected by any attack delays, and he instead roared as he immediately followed with a second attack. He used all of his strength in his body to stab towards the War God's chest, hitting him solidly. However, the War God's expression did not change at all. His sword sliced through the air and hit Ling Chen's body with an

[Extreme Heaven Destroying Slash], the War God's power exploding outwards. However, Ling Chen did not retreat, and he did not even take any damage. His gaze was ruthless as he attacked incredibly quickly, ignoring all of the War God's attacks.

"Is this the unique War God skill that you comprehended?" There was a faint sense of disappointment in the War God's voice. He stopped counterattacking and allowed Ling Chen to attack as he wished because Ling Chen was evidently invincible during this period of time, "Even though the War God's power is in battle and strength, you've used the strongest portion of the strength to defend... extremely foolish."

10 seconds later when [Disdaining The Heavens and Scorning the Earth, I Am The Emperor]'s effects ended, the silent War God suddenly raised his black sword like an awoken Demon God, slashing out with a meteor-like attack.

Bang!!

An explosion rang out, and after being hit heavily by the War God's attack, the Evil God's Mask's effects once again activated, reflecting the damage back at the War God. However, as someone who knew about the Feng Chen Sect and knew Xiao Feng Chen extremely well, how could the War God not know the Evil God's Mask's effects? That first attack was merely to activate the Evil God's Mask, and his true attack swept towards Ling Chen while the Evil God's Mask was in cooldown. Just like that, an oppressive air that could flip mountains and overturn oceans covered Ling Chen's body. Ling Chen was just about to retreat, but the War God's oppressive air froze him in place. He felt as if Mount Tai was weighing down on him, and he couldn't budge and inch.

Within Ling Chen's eyes, he could see the War God's jet-black sword coming closer and closer. Ling Chen's eyes widened and gathered all of the strength in his body to raised his arms, meeting the War God's sword with his Chilling Star and Twilight Spear.

Clang!!

The War God's sword did not land on Ling Chen's body, but it was instead tightly resisted by Ling Chen's weapons. However, this only lasted for an instant. In the next moment, Ling Chen grunted as the massive force that travelled through his arms smashed into his body like 2 massive hammers, sending him flying off Snow Cherry's back.

Although he had successfully parried the attack, how could he completely negate all of the force from the War God's attack?

Evidently, the War God hadn't expected Ling Chen to parry his attack, and a look of surprise appeared within his eyes. However, this look became icy as his sword then stabbed towards Ling Chen, giving off a 30-metre-long golden glow that pierced through Ling Chen's body. A wave of immense pain spread throughout Ling Chen's body... the War God's attacks ignored all pain reduction, so when Ling Chen was cut by his sword, he felt as if he was really being cut by a real sword.

Ding...

Ling Chen heavily fell to the ground, and his arms were so numb that he couldn't feel them. An [Ice Soul Heart-Protector Pearl] shattered before disappearing.

"Ding... your weapon [Twilight Spear] has been moderately damaged, and it has lost 40% Physical Attack Power and 30% of all other stats. All bonus skills have disappeared."

Chapter 653 - The Berserk Ling Chen

The Twilight Spear's glow disappeared, and there was a long crack on the earthen-yellow spear.

"Big brother!"

Cai'Er stopped singing and cried out in worry as she hurriedly flew towards Ling Chen. A look of fury flashed in Xiao Hui's eyes, and he stood in front of Ling Chen, using his little body to protect Ling Chen, who was unable to stand up. Xi Ling also furiously cried out as she shot a [Phoenix Arrow], which gave off scorching heatwaves, towards the War God.

Feeling the flames of the 9 suns burning on his body, the War God lifted his jet-black sword and unleashed an [Extreme Boundless Desolation]. The destructive radius of 30 metres was extended by the golden sword light to 60 metres, and the golden arc contained a destructive power that could cause the heavens and earth to dim. It sliced through Xi Ling and Cai'Er, and it covered Xiao Hui below. However, it barely passed by Ling Chen.

-958,000, -2,156,912, -2,126,980.

"Ding... your pet Xiao Hui has suffered fatal damage. The skill [Holy Spirit's Shield] has been activated, and his HP has remained at 1 HP."

"Ding... your pet Xiao Hui's skill [Holy Spirit's Sacrifice] has been activated, and he has died in place of Xi Ling and Cai'Er."

"Ding... your pet Xiao Hui has died."

"Ding... your pet Xiao Hui's skill [Holy Spirit's Shield] has been activated, and he has revived on the spot with full HP."

"Ding... your pet Xiao Hui has used the maximum number of [Holy Spirit Sacrifice] in one day, and he will not be able to activate it for the remainder of the day."

“Ding... your pet Xiao Hui has used the maximum number of [Holy Spirit’s Shield]’s revivals in one day, and he will not be able to activate it for the remainder of the day.”

The slew of system notifications caused the semi-dazed Ling Chen to feel greatly shocked. He suddenly raised his head as he yelled, “Xiao Hui, Cai’Er, Xi Ling... return immediately!”

As Ling Chen yelled, he quickly gave the command to bring all pets except Leng’Er and Snow Cherry back to the Pet Space. However, the instant he gave the command, all of his pets were enveloped by a terrifying and irresistible power, making it so that Xiao Hui and the others could not return. The War God raised his jet-black sword high in the air as a berserk wave of energy gathered around his body, turning into a jet-black tornado that swept towards his surroundings...

“Stop!!!”

Ling Chen could immediately tell that this was one of the War God’s most powerful skills: [Extreme Eight Direction Annihilation]!

However, how could his shout stop the extreme form of the [Eight Direction Annihilation]?

The indescribably terrifying tornado of energy swept throughout the entire Fire Purgatory. Xiao Hui, Leng’Er, Xi Ling, Cai’Er, Snow Cherry, and Ling Chen were all caught within it...

Xi Ling sorrowfully cried out, and Cai’Er cried out ‘big brother’ before they were swept into the tornado of destruction formed by the war God’s power...

-3,668,000, -8,456,912, -8,526,890, -8,463,000...

The tornado of energy veiled Ling Chen’s sight, and he felt as if there were tens of thousands of blades cutting his body. In his ears, a certain system notification made him feel as if his eyes were going to burst out of anger...

“Ding… your pet Xiao Hui has suffered fatal damage. The skill [Holy Spirit’s Shield] has been activated, and his HP has remained at 1 HP.”

“Ding… your pet Xiao Hui has been afflicted with a [Slash] status, and he will continuously lose HP.”

“Ding… your pet Xiao Hui has died, and he has fallen to LV59. Xiao Hui cannot be summoned within 3 hours.”

“Ding… your pet Xi Ling has died, and she has revived with the Nine Suns Rebirth but cannot be summoned within 1 hour.”

“Ding… your pet Cai’Er has died, and she has fallen to LV56. Cai’Er cannot be summoned within 3 hours.”

“Ding…”

Finally, the sound of a second [Ice Soul Heart-Protector Pearl] shattering sounded out.

If it wasn’t for the [Ice Soul Heart-Protector Pearls] that Xiao Hui had refined from the Ice Soul Undead Wolf, Ling Chen would have died twice already.

The War God’s berserk tornado of energy finally dissipated as Xiao Hui vanished within a glow of grey light, Xi Ling vanished within a glow of crimson light, and Cai’Er vanished within a glow of green light, returning to the Pet Space. After pets died, not only did their levels fall by 1, but they also needed to sleep for 3 hours, during which they could not be summoned. Only Snow Cherry, who was invincible while in mount form, and Leng’Er, who was immune to physical attacks, were remaining by his side.

“You’re still alive? How’s that possible?”

The War God remained where he stood as if nothing had happened. His peaceful body was like a tall mountain, the peak of which could not be seen. Although Ling Chen hadn’t died after repeatedly taking fatal blows, to the War God, Ling Chen was just using life-saving items to extend his pitiful struggling. It could

temporarily extend his life, but it would not save him from his fate of dying at the War God's hands.

"You... You!!!!!!"

Ling Chen slowly stood up. In his extreme rage, his mind buzzed, and he almost broke his teeth from gnashing them too hard. His knuckles whitened as bone-piercing ruthlessness and hatred appeared within his eyes... Xiao Hui had joined him first followed by Xi Ling, and now he had 5 pets in total. From when he entered the virtual world until now, they had gone through countless dangers and miraculous encounters together, but they had overcome the dangers every time. No matter if it was his pets or himself, none of them had truly died before. Today was the first time they had died...

After pets die their levels would fall, but they would only fall asleep instead of truly dying. After 3 hours, they would be able to be summoned again...

However, this was completely unacceptable to Ling Chen. Completely and utterly unacceptable!!

After Shui Ruo had left, he had promised himself that he would protect everyone important to him and not allow what happened that night to repeat itself. Today, because he was not strong enough, his pets had died one by one in front of him... if it was Tian Tian or Dia Wu... he simply couldn't accept this sort of thing.

Pain, anger, hatred, and guilt towards himself for not being able to protect them, erupted within Ling Chen... these emotions clouded Ling Chen's mind, and he gripped the Chilling Star and moderately-destroyed Twilight Spear as he roared, "I'll kill you!!!"

Ling Chen did not activate Broken Shadow or Burning Shadow nor did he use Soul Sacrifice or War God's Fury. Ling Chen rushed up without using any tricks, his gaze so furious that it threatened to rip the War God's body apart. The War God calmly glanced at him as the jet-black sword lightly pierced out, completely ignoring

Ling Chen's attack. Just as the tip of the sword touched Ling Chen's chest, the Evil God's Mask roared as it once again reflected the damage at the War God. However, the powerful force still travelled into Ling Chen's body. Despite this, Ling Chen's body only slightly tilted back, his terrifying willpower preventing his body from stumbling backwards. He loudly roared and he threw his left arm forwards, stabbing the Twilight Spear into his arm as a colourless glow spread out from it.

Soul Demise!

-1,152,000,000!

The pain from having his HP reduced by one third as well as the gigantic damage figure above his head caused him to reveal the most emotion he had shown all day. However, those emotions only lasted for an instant before he mercilessly counterattacked at Ling Chen.

Clang!!

This attack did not hit Ling Chen. Instead, it was once again parried by the Twilight Spear and Chilling Star... if the first parry was lucky, then this one was simply miraculous. However, even though he had successfully parried the War God's attack, that did not mean Ling Chen was fine. This time, as an ear-piercing collision sounded out, Ling Chen flew backwards like a broken kite, and the Twilight Spear and Chilling Star fell from his hands, landing in different places.

A hint of praise appeared within the War God's eyes upon being repeatedly parried. Even so, he wouldn't show any mercy. The jet-black sword once again lit up with the golden sword light. As the golden light shot towards Ling Chen, an ear-piercing sound from the air being torn apart sounded out. Wherever the sword light passed, the space around it would twist and turn.

This was the War God's ultimate skill: [Heaven-Splitting Dragon-Slaying Art]!

Chi!!

Ling Chen, who was in mid-air, was pierced by the golden sword light as yet another shattering sound came from his chest. The final [Ice Soul Heart-Protector Pearl] had been destroyed.

Bang!!

-6,980.

Ling Chen's body heavily smashed onto the boundary of the Fire Purgatory, and the might of the impact caused the entire Fire Purgatory to slightly tremble.

"Master..." Leng'Er softly called out to Ling Chen while floating over to him, tightly holding onto her doll in her embrace. Her dark eyes were filled with worry, and the pain in her heart exceeded what she would feel if she lost her doll. However, she couldn't help Ling Chen. Compared to Xiao Hui, Xi Ling, Cai'Er, and Snow Cherry, no matter if they were her stats or abilities, they were far too weak. Their relationship had never been one of master and pet, and Ling Chen had never treated her like a pet like he treated Xiao Hui. Instead, he cared for her like he would a daughter: giving her gifts, telling her stories, doing all he could to make her happy...

This time, Ling Chen had half lost consciousness after hitting the boundary. After falling to the ground, he raised his head, using the wall behind him to support himself as he slowly stood. He stared at the War God with a piercing gaze as Snow Cherry quickly flew over, supporting his body.

Ding, Clang.

The Chilling Star and Twilight Spear fell to the ground at the same time. The Chilling Star fell next to his feet, while the Twilight Spear fell next to the War God's feet. The instant it landed, it... broke into two halves. The Heaven's End grade light flickered out and disappeared, and the spear returned to its dim earthen-yellow colour.

“Ding… your weapon [Twilight Spear] has been completely destroyed, and it cannot be repaired.”

Before he knew it, the War God was standing 10 steps away from him and staring at him like he was looking at a corpse. He didn’t look surprised that Ling Chen had yet again avoided death.

“You don’t have any chance of defeating me. No matter how you struggle, all there is for you is death,” the War God expressionlessly said. He treated this as the last sentence he would say to Ling Chen because everything was about to end.

“Hahahaha…” Ling Chen put his hand against Snow Cherry and did his best to straighten his body. There was no fear in his eyes, and he instead smirked and laughed in a terrifying and sinister manner. He stretched out his hand and pointed at the War God’s face as he said while coldly laughing, “War God, even though I knew from the start that I had to kill you to pass through here, I never truly wanted to kill you… because my battle power came from you, and I received a great favour from you. In fact, you could even say that you’re my master. If I kill you, you’ll die permanently, and you won’t even exist as an Undead anymore! I’m unable to do such an ungrateful act. As such, even though I had the power to kill you, I was reluctant to do so.”

“However…” the cold smile on Ling Chen’s face vanished as a demonic and eerie look replaced it. “You dared to kill Xiao Hui, Xi Ling, and Cai’Er… this is unforgivable!!”

“Even if you’re half a master to me, even if you were Xiao Feng Chen’s good friend back then, and even if you’re the War God… that was my bottom line… so you must pay the price for it… today I’ll definitely kill you!!!”

Chapter 654 - Staking It All: Sky-Toppling Dance

A rare ripple appeared in the Undead War God's gaze, and he slightly nodded while calmly saying, "Not bad, that's the aura a War God should have. However, what use is aura without power? How can you kill me with such power?"

"How do you know that I can't?!"

Ling Chen roared and grabbed the Chilling Star from the ground. He supported himself with his hand as he leapt onto Snow Cherry's back again, and he equipped the Great Ravager to his left hand.

Snow Cherry seemed to know what Ling Chen wanted to do, and she raised her head. The gentle look in her eyes disappeared, and it was replaced by a profound and sharp gaze as she gathered the power of the divine fox clan. Her 6 tails parted and burned with 6 white flames.

"Snow Cherry, release all of your power. Even if this person is a True God, we're going to kill a god today!!"

"Sky! Toppling! Dance!"

As Ling Chen roared, Snow Cherry raised her head softly cried out. Suddenly, a white light seemed to fill the space, drowning out everything. Even the War God had to close his eyes from the immensely intense white light. Within the light, Snow Cherry's body slowly floated up, and her 6 tails released 6 rays of light, which flew towards different areas around the War God. They then stopped moving and formed snow-white orbs of light, which rapidly grew.

Whoosh...

The boundless white light disappeared like fog, and around the War God there were no longer just one Ling Chen and Snow

Cherry but 7!

In front, behind, to his sides, and above… there were 7 Ling Chens in total. They had the same equipment, held the same weapons, and had the same expressions and gazes… even their auras were the same, and the snow-white foxes they were riding on were also exactly the same.

The appearance of 7 Ling Chens didn't cause any changes in the War God's expression. With his thousands of years of experience, he had seen countless illusion and cloning skills. However, when he swept his senses across all 7 of the Ling Chens, a trace of dismay appeared within his eyes… if it was an illusion technique, then 6 of them should be fake. Although illusions could trick his eyes, ears, and mind, with his power, it wouldn't be difficult to find the real one. If it was a cloning skill, his power should have been distributed across the clones, making them all significantly weaker. However, the War God's senses told him that all 7 were the real one! All of their auras were not at all weaker than the real Ling Chen's!

This wasn't an illusion skill nor a cloning skill… within the white light, 6 perfect copies of Ling Chen had appeared!

Despite this, the War God was only surprised for an instant, and he said in his calm voice, "What's the difference between 1 of you and 7 of you?"

To the War God, let alone 7 Ling Chens, even 100 of them would not make a difference. After all, it would take him a single attack to kill them all. Ling Chen's attacks in his most powerful state dealt incredible damage and were not much weaker than the War God's. However, his battle sense and experience were extremely lacking compared to the War God. The most crucial thing was that his lifeforce was too weak, and even the shockwaves from one of the War God's attacks were enough to kill him tens or hundreds of times.

At this moment, Ling Chen calmed down, and the air of viciousness about him greatly died down. Right now, in his eyes, the Undead War God was no longer the Forgotten Continent's legend nor was he the person who had given him the War God's power. There was no longer any hesitation or reluctance in his gaze, only peace and determination. "War God, you should have disappeared from this world a thousand years ago, and no one knew that you actually became an Undead and resided here with your memories. With your pride as a War God, you would never have submitted to anyone even if that person was the Underworld King, someone more powerful than you. As such, you chose to remain in his peaceful place. Perhaps every moment of these thousand years was unbearable for you, so since it's like this..." Ling Chen raised the Chilling Star in his right hand and Great Ravager in his left hand, the other 6 'Ling Chens' also doing the same exact action. The 7 voices mixed together into one, "I'll end this for you."

Undead War God: "....."

"Soul Sacrifice, War God's Fury, Broken Shadow!"

7 voices roared out as the 7 Ling Chens' bodies simultaneously glowed with the light from Soul Sacrifice and War God's Fury. They moved at the same time, and they looked like 7 bolts of lightning flying towards the War God from different directions. On their left hands, the War God's power gathered crazily...

"Extinguishing the Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest!!""

7 maximum-damage [Extinguishing the Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest] were unleashed, and the combined energy twisted the space where they met. The War God's clothes and hair was blown back by the wild gale caused by the skill, but even the 7 ultimate skills merging together was still unable to move him. The War God raised his jet-black sword, and even mightier War God power spiralled around his sword. In the next instant, he was

about to unleash an [Extreme Eight Direction Annihilation] that would be able to destroy all of the ‘Ling Chens’.

However, just as he started to activate [Extreme Eight Direction Annihilation], the War God’s body suddenly froze. His extremely calm eyes widened, and his breathing and heartbeat simultaneously stopped.

The light in the space suddenly dimmed as if the light had been devoured by darkness, and the War God could not see anything anymore.

Pressure… an incredibly terrifying power to the point that the War God didn’t know how to describe it was covering every inch of the space. It covered his body, devouring all of the War God power that he had gathered. Under this sort of pressure, the War God felt as if his body was being grinded down and sliced into pieces. He had gone through countless life and death experiences and had received countless wounds, but nothing had ever made him feel fearful or terrified. And yet, he now felt fear. He could even feel that the surrounding space seemingly tremble as if it would crumble at any moment.

What… was this power?!

How could such monstrous power exist in this world?

The War God, whose mental state was solid as a rock and had stilled his heart for a thousand years, felt fear. He had encountered a power that exceeded his imagination, and in front of this fearsome power, he, the invincible War God, felt as small as a grain of sand. It would only take an instant for this power to destroy him… in his ears, an incredibly ruthless and savage voice, like one from hell, roared out…

“Shura’s… Death… Domain!!!”

A wild gale blew, and the suppressed air became incredibly berserk. An indescribable sense of mercilessness and ruthlessness

filled the air, and the Underworld Fire gathered on the two sides of the space as if it was trying to escape from this terrifying power. A striking scent of blood and gore filled the region accompanied by a sense of death that could only exist in hell.

The instant the Shura's Death Domain was activated, Ling Chen's mind went blank. His vision drastically changed and everything turned crimson-red as if his world had been dyed by blood. An incredible berserk feeling rushed out from within his heart and filled his mind and body, making him feel as if he had been possessed by a devil. Even he was shocked at his desire to kill and destroy. This sort of madness tried to devour his mind in order to destroy his rationality. Ling Chen gritted his teeth, widened his blood-red eyes, raised the Chilling Star and Great Ravager, allowing that boundless and mighty power to fill his body. He locked on to his only target, smashing all of that frightening power towards the War God...

Every time Ling Chen activated the War God profession's ultimate skill, [Extinguishing the Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest], he would have to wait 3 days before using it again unless the Libra Orb's effects were activated. As for the Shura's Death Domain, he could only ever use it twice. He had used it the first time to destroy the Fairy Realm's barrier, and today he had used it the second time – the final time.

However, this time there were 7 [Extinguishing the Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest] as well as 7 [Shura's Death Domain].

Ling Chen's 6 clones were completely under the control of his true body, and apart from not being able to use items or command pets, they were completely the same as his true body. No matter if it was stats, profession, skills, or equipment, they were all exactly the same. This meant that the 6 clones could use [Extinguishing the Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest] as well as the final [Shura's Death Domain]. What's more, all of them were

separate attacks, and they were not restricted by the cooldown times.

The [Shura's Death Domain]'s might was simply incredible – it had destroyed the barrier that the Fairy Clan had been unable to damage for 1,000 years in a single hit. Although his [Shura's Death Domain] was unable to insta-kill the War God, what about 7 [Shura's Death Domains]?

Under the might of 7 [Extinguishing the Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest] and 7 [Shura Death Domain], the War God could not move at all. 14 weapons simultaneously landed on the War God's body, and the Stone of Resentment, which had been peaceful this entire time, started to glow with a dark light.

BOOM!!!!!

A bloody light exploded from the 7 Ling Chens' bodies, making it seem as if the 7 Ling Chens were bathed in a bloody ocean, and the Chilling Star and Great Ravager also looked like they were pure red. An incredibly fearsome, extreme energy mercilessly swept outwards, devouring all of the light from the Underworld Fire. Finally, all of the light was gone, and the entire space fell into darkness.

Within the heaven-rumbling, earth-shaking explosion, the ground shook as the space violently trembled. No matter if it was the ground or the boundaries of the Fire Purgatory, long cracks appeared, spread, and intersected at an astonishing rate. In the blink of an eye, they filled the entirety of the Fire Purgatory, and following this, the entire Fire Purgatory shattered like a glass ball...

Chapter 655 - The War God's Demise

-192,000,000, -9,600,000.

-192,000,000, -9,600,000.

-192,000,000, -9,600,000.

-192,000,000, -9,600,000.

-192,000,000, -9,600,000.

-192,000,000, -9,600,000.

-192,000,000, -9,600,000!!

"Ding... you forcefully activated the limited use skill [Shura's Death Domain], your level will be decreased by 9 levels, Strength-30, Constitution-30, Agility-30, Spirit-30."

"Ding... the skill [Shura's Death Domain] has been used a maximum number of times, and it cannot be used again."

"Ding... your pet Xiao Hui's level has fallen to LV51."

"Ding... your pet Snow Cherry's level has fallen to LV51."

"Ding... your pet Xi Ling's level has fallen to LV51."

"Ding... your pet Cai'Er's level has fallen to LV51."

"Ding... your pet Leng'Er's level has fallen to LV51."

The Fire Purgatory collapsed, and the Underworld Fire rushed out like a flood in all directions. The 7 Ling Chens landed on the ground and the weapons disappeared from their hands, but the blood-red glow around them remained. Ling Chen covered his head, which felt like it was going to explode, with his hands. He was unable to maintain his balance and heavily fell from Snow Cherry's back, falling onto the ravaged ground. The pain from falling gave Ling Chen a bit of clarity, and he hurriedly yelled, "Snow Cherry... hurry and... recall them!"

Fury, bloodlust, ruthlessness... all sorts of negative emotions

chaotically crashed within Ling Chen's mind, spurring him into boundless slaughter. He had experienced this the first time he had used the Shura's Death Domain, and he had used his powerful mental energy to suppress them. However, this time it was different – this time, the negative emotions were more powerful by 7 times!

The other 6 Ling Chens were all controlled by him; although there were 7 of them in total, he only had a single mind. The side effects of the 7 [Shura's Death Domain] were concentrated on his mind alone, and even for Ling Chen, who had astoundingly powerful mental energy, his mind almost collapsed instantly.

Snow Cherry quickly cancelled the [Sky-Toppling Dance]'s effects, causing the 6 copies to disappear. However, the terrifying side effects were not immediately reduced, and they continued to assault Ling Chen's mind. Ling Chen gritted his teeth, desperately trying to bring his mind under control. His body had long since been drenched by cold sweat, and his head ached so much that it threatened to split open. His body kneeled on the ground, unable to stand up no matter what.

The murderous intent in his heart continued to grow and unable to be stopped at all, devouring the last of his reason. Within Ling Chen's eyes and heart, a river of blood, mountains, seas of corpses that seemed to stretch on forever, and scattered body parts all appeared... he actually felt that the scene was incredibly beautiful, and the pitiful screams made him feel a sort of pleasure...

"Wuahhhh..."

Ling Chen desperately beat at his head as he let out bestial roars. Suddenly, he raised his head as his eyes shot out 2 crimson-red glows... his eyes had become the colour of blood!

.....

Real world, Bamboo Sea Wonderland.

Qi Yue lazily reclined on the sofa with a gentle expression on her face as she smiled and flicked through a magazine with great interest. Even though she looked so still and peaceful, she continued to give off an air of seduction that could tempt any man. Opposite her, Xuanyuan Dia Wu was watching TV, looking quite bored, and she would occasionally take secret glances at Qi Yue.

The air-conditioner was not on in the living room, and it was still a bit chilly at the end of April. However, Qi Yue looked as if she was dressed for summer. After coming to the real world, she didn't continue wearing those simple black clothes. Now, she was wearing a tight T-shirt that had laces on the sides and a gigantic V-neck. Half of her proud chest could be seen. They were incredibly large and perky, but they did not sag at all, looking like perfect spheres. The V-neck's collar was pushed outwards by the perkiness, and the single button seemed as if it would burst off at any moment.

Just her upper body was enough to attract the gaze of any male, and the scenery below was even more deadly. Today, Qi Yue was wearing a beige miniskirt that was barely long enough to cover her shapely behind. Her snow-white legs were essentially completely revealed, and they gave off an alluring lustre. Qi Yue's legs were not only white, but they were also long and slim - they were simply gold class. Qi Yue was about 1.75 metres tall, but her legs were definitely longer than 1.1 metres.

With this sort of figure, men would go crazy after her even if she was incredibly ugly. However, the heavens had blessed this woman. Not only did she had a demon-like body, but she also had looks that could devastate the world. Qi Yue's beauty far surpassed anything humans knew and what their definition of beauty could quantify. In fact, she was so beautiful that one would feel suffocated upon looking at her.

Comparatively speaking, Xuanyuan Dia Wu was dressed more conservatively, but her clothes were still a bit revealing. She was

wearing a thin, white dress that was quite short. Her collar was quite low as well, revealing her slender neck and snow-white, glistening skin. Going down from her collarbones, her large and perky breasts pressed tightly against the collar, threatening to jump out. Beneath the short skirt, her 2 long, white legs were also exposed, revealing a petite but exquisite figure.

Xuanyuan Dia Wu was undeniably a beauty that could cause the downfall of a city, but despite her reluctance, she couldn't help but admit that she simply could not compare to Qi Yue. In front of Qi Yue, she felt the envy and admiration that any normal woman would feel as well as a deep sense of wariness... Ling Chen was the only man in this place, and apart from him, who would this succubus, who never went out, be dressing up for? Of course, it could only be for Ling Chen. This caused Xuanyuan Dia Wu, who had always dressed conservatively, to wear clothes that were more revealing than she would normally wear... if it wasn't for her silent battle with Qi Yue, she wouldn't have worn what she was currently wearing no matter what.

Pa.

Qi Yue closed the magazine and put it aside. She lightly stretched, revealing her stunning figure to Xuanyuan Dia Wu. As she stretched, her bountiful breasts swayed, making even Xuanyuan Dia Wu feel dizzy.

Qi Yue's gaze swept over Xuanyuan Dia Wu as she smiled, saying, "Little mistress, you are dressed so prettily today. Are you hoping to give the little master a surprise?"

"... You're thinking too much." Xuanyuan Dia Wu brought in her legs and stared at the TV screen as she calmly replied. There were many exquisite beauties around Ling Chen, but she could get along with the devastatingly beautiful Yun Meng Xin, the incredibly rich Li Xiao Xue, and even the cold Mu Bing Yao. However, she couldn't get rid of the hostility she felt towards Qi Yue.

Qi Yue's enchanting eyes narrowed slightly, unreservedly looking at Xuanyuan Dia Wu from her neck, to her chest, and to her legs. She then praised her, "But you're dressed so prettily and sexily. Describing the little mistress as having the face of an angel and the body of a demon is simply perfect. No wonder little master likes you so much. If I was a man, I would also have my heart stolen by you."

If anyone else praised her like this, Xuanyuan Dia Wu would feel quite pleased. However, she felt quite uncomfortable being praised by a demoness like Qi Yue as having the 'face of an angel and body of a demon'.

"Ai..." Qi Yue thought of something and lightly sighed before saying in a bitter tone, "We women have such hard lives. We need to make ourselves look pretty every day and act all gentle and elegant to make men happy. This is especially so for our figure – most, if not all, men like big breasts. As long as one's breasts are big enough, any man will hold on to them tightly. Little mistress' figure is truly enviable..."

As Qi Yue spoke, she stretched her collar, causing her large breasts to wildly ripple. "Aiya, this shirt seems to be too tight, and my chest is so uncomfortable in it. I should go and change."

After speaking, Qi Yue got up and walked towards her room. When the door was closed, Xuanyuan Dia Wu threw the remote control on the sofa and angrily huffed, "Despicable! You think you're so great because your chest is so big? Demoness, demoness, demoness! Tian Ya definitely won't like you!"

While Xuanyuan Dia Wu was raging to herself, Shadissika walked out of her room wearing a white swimsuit. "Big sister Dia Wu, come with us to the hot spring. Tian Tian has already heated up the water."

"Hot spring... hmm, okay." Xuanyuan Dia Wu immediately nodded and agreed. The man-make lake outside had a heating

device that could transform it into a man-made hot spring. The weather was still a bit cool, so no one would want to swim in cold water. However, soaking in a hot spring at this time of the year was sure to be enjoyable.

When Xuanyuan Dia Wu went to change into her swimsuit, her mobile phone started ringing. This was the mobile phone that Li Xiao Xue had given Xuanyuan Dia Wu, and not many people knew this number. Xuanyuan Dia Wu glanced at the screen and answered it, “Xiao Xue, what is it?”

“Dia Wu, can you contact Ling Tian… come to Ling Tian City immediately! Something has happened!” Li Xiao Xue’s voice sounded incredibly hurried.

“Alright, I’ll be there soon.” Xuanyuan Dia Wu ended the call and looked towards Ling Chen’s room as she quickly said to Shadissika, “I need to go into the game, so I won’t be coming with you all to the hot spring… if Tian Ya comes out from the game, tell him to immediately return to Ling Tian City.”

“Eh? Oh, I got it.” Sha Sha, who didn’t know what was happening, hurriedly nodded as she watched Xuanyuan Dia Wu return to her room. She thought for a moment and was just about to go to the hot spring when she suddenly stopped walking, a serious and surprised look in her eyes.

At the same time, Qi Yue, who was changing, slightly raised her head as a look of surprise also flashed in her eyes…

This feeling… could it be…

If it really was like that, this would be an incredible opportunity. Not only would she not have to sacrifice herself, but she could also fulfil her goal… however, just what had happened?

Qi Yue’s eyes continuously flickered, and she finally made a decision. She waved her hand as the mysterious black muslin dress covered her body, and she slowly disappeared within a strange,

dark glow...

Chapter 656 - Dark Samsara (1)

Mystic Moon world, Underworld, Fire Purgatory.

“Arghhh!!”

“Wuaaahhhh!!!”

“Arghhh!!!!”

Ling Chen’s roars became more and more terrifying, and his eyes had completely become the colour of blood. The killing intent and ruthlessness that emanated out from his entire body formed a horrifying gale, making the crumbling Fire Purgatory look like a true hell. Feeling this aura, Snow Cherry subconsciously took a few steps back, and Leng’Er stared at him with fear with her mouth wide open... because both of them felt an incredible sense of danger from him... a feeling that he might go berserk and kill them!

Currently, every one of Ling Chen’s cells and nerves was filled with boundless killing intent, making him want to release all of the strength within his body and kill and destroy everything in sight. His boulder-like mental energy defended the last of his clarity, but under the unending killing intent, his willpower was unable to stop it and on the verge of collapse.

At this moment, a black light that no one could see appeared beside Ling Chen, revealing Qi Yue’s figure. She silently looked at Ling Chen and narrowed her eyes as she slowly extended her hands towards Ling Chen. When she was halfway there, however, she suddenly stopped as a conflicting look appeared on her face. After this persisted for a few seconds, Qi Yue closed her eyes and spread her fingers apart... instantly, the Lunar Scourge on Ling Chen’s hand shone with a dark grey light, covering his entire right arm and spreading around his entire body.

Qi Yue opened her eyes and looked towards the silver light that

was covering Ling Chen's entire body, muttering, "This is an opportunity given to me by the heavens to take... so don't blame me... when I attain my desire, I'll return your freedom to you... and I will do everything I can to make it up to you..."

The silver light continued to extend, covering half of Ling Chen's body. At that moment, a faint white light silently appeared above Ling Chen and within it was a small figure. This figure did not catch anyone's attention, and not even Qi Yue noticed it. After appearing, the white figure stared in silence for a few seconds before releasing a completely undetectable and colourless light that fused into Ling Chen's body.

Following this, Ling Chen's mind, which had almost been completely devoured, felt as if it had gone from hell to a warm heaven. It caused all of the pain to disappear, and the negative emotions quickly receded as the killing intent and murderous air around him quickly dissipated... the silver light that covered more than half of Ling Chen's body stopped extending further and retreated like lightning back into the Lunar Scourge.

Qi Yue's body trembled and her face became incredibly pale. She then disappeared amidst a glow of black light. The white figure in the air remained there for a few more seconds before also disappearing.

Within Qi Yue's room, a black light appeared and then Qi Yue reappeared. However, her face was pitifully pale, and her body swayed before finally powerlessly falling next to her bed. She held onto her head, which was threatening to split apart, as she muttered in disbelief, "How could it be... how could his mental energy... be strong to such a degree... I thought it was an incredibly rare opportunity..."

After a while, the pain in her soul finally began to lessen and her face regained its rosy glow. Qi Yue placed her hand on her chest as she hazily looked ahead and muttered to herself, "Looks like I really have to use that method... I guess... I owe him..."

Outside the door, Shadissika was staring fixedly at Qi Yue's closed door, and a trace of killing intent appeared within her star-like eyes. When she turned around, her snow-white face was once again covered with a pure and gentle smile. She called out Tian Tian's name and hopped out of the hall with her swimsuit on before leaping into the man-made hot spring.

.....

Ling Chen stood up, staring at his hands in surprise. As he thought back to that terrifying feeling, he spaced out for a while.

The first time he had used the Shura's Death Domain he had been afflicted by an onslaught of feelings of violence and destruction, and the effects of 7 Shura's Death Domains was much more terrifying. He had clearly felt that despite struggling with all he had, his willpower was still being slowly devoured, and he was only a sliver from crumbling... however, all of the negative emotions that were assaulting his mind had suddenly disappeared without a trace. His mind now felt incredibly refreshed, and he didn't even feel any lethargy...

It was as if everything had just been a dream.

Despite this, he felt a trace of fear in his heart. If that wasn't an illusion, the result would have been his mind being completely taken over by those negative emotions, turning him into a true demon of murder.

Snow Cherry and Leng'Er came over to Ling Chen and looked at him worriedly. Ling Chen patted Snow Cherry with one hand and held Leng'Er's icy cold hand with the other as he smiled, "You must have been incredibly worried just then, right? It's fine now; that was just the side-effects from the skill."

After speaking, Ling Chen's gaze became serious, and he looked up at the person standing in front of him... the War God that still had not fallen.

Although he still had not fallen, Ling Chen was 100% sure that he was dead. After taking 7 [Extinguishing the Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest] and 7 [Shura's Death Domain], which were all miraculously boosted by the Stone of Resentment's 0.1% chance of activating the 10 times damage multiplier, the War God had definitely died from such an attack. The only reason that he was still standing was that his willpower did not allow his body to fall down just yet.

"The... Shura's... power..."

The Undead War God's mouth moved as he rasped. His eyes had lost their focus and he hazily stared towards where Ling Chen was, but it seemed as if he could not see him.

"As well as the... Eyes of Extermination... from the legends... You're actually..."

"I did not... die unjustly..."

The War God stopped speaking as countless cracks spread out along his body. A breeze blew past, and the War God's body seemed to turn into stone. He was gradually blown away, bit by bit, by the wind... only the jet-black sword, which had kept him company for over a thousand years in the Underworld remained, remained, and it fell to the ground with a 'clang'.

"Ding... you have successfully killed the LV96 high-tier Mysterious God grade Boss [Chi Xuan Wu Hen], Fame+1,920,000, SP+1,920,000."

"Ding... congratulations you have levelled up to LV52, HP+20, MP+20, Strength+5, Agility+1, Spirit+1."

"Ding... congratulations you have levelled up to LV53, HP+20, MP+20, Strength+5, Agility+1, Spirit+1."

.....

"Ding... congratulations you have levelled up to LV61, HP+20, MP+20, Strength+5, Agility+1, Spirit+1."

“Ding… congratulations you have levelled up to LV62, HP+20, MP+20, Strength+5, Agility+1, Spirit+1.”

“Ding… your pet Xiao Hui has levelled up to LV59…”

“Ding… your pet Xi Ling has levelled up to LV62…”

“Ding… your pet Leng’Er has levelled up to LV62…”

“Ding… your pet Snow Cherry has levelled up to LV62…”

“Ding… your pet Cai’Er has levelled up to LV62…”

After using the Shura’s Death Domain, Ling Chen had lost 9 levels and 30 of each of the basic attributes. However, for singlehandedly killing a LV96 high-tier Mysterious God grade Boss, the amount of EXP, Fame, and SP he received was gigantic. Even with the Heaven’s Jealousy debuff, Ling Chen’s level rose by 11, and he had received almost 2 million Fame and SP!

When the system announcement notified him as to how much Fame and SP he had received, Ling Chen’s heart almost exploded in shock. This was too goddamn much… it would take him a lifetime to spend it all!

The War God had died. The War God, who had died 1,000 years ago, had died again. This time, he had died permanently. Under the might of the [Shura’s Death Domain], the War God’s body and soul had been completely annihilated without even a trace left. After silently looking at where the War God had been, a feeling of sorrow passed through Ling Chen’s heart… on the very first day that he had entered the Forgotten Continent, he had heard of the War God’s legend. He had then entered the War God’s Trial Grounds and inherited his power. It was because of the War God’s power that he became invincible within this world. As his profession grew, Ling Chen became more and more shocked as to its power, and he felt more and more admiration towards the War God.

However, he had never expected that he would meet the War God

and that he would have to use his trump card to kill him.

Fate's arrangements were always unpredictable. Thinking back over all of this, Ling Chen felt as if all of this had been a dream.

The War God's death meant that Ling Chen had passed the Fire Purgatory. However, even if the War God had not died, he wouldn't have been able to stop Ling Chen from entering the Underworld Blood Lake. This was because the entirety of the Fire Purgatory had been destroyed by the Shura's power. After wallowing in melancholy for a while, Ling Chen did not stay any longer. He was sure that the massive commotion caused by the Fire Purgatory being destroyed would have definitely alerted the Underworld Gods standing guard, and it was possible that someone might perhaps investigate... the worst case scenario would be the Underworld King using the special teleportation channel to directly appear at the Underworld Blood Lake. As such, there was very little time for Ling Chen to search for the Orb at the Underworld Blood Lake.

"Snow Cherry, let's go!"

Ling Chen sat atop Snow Cherry as they sped across the desolated ground. When they passed where the War God had stood, Ling Chen suddenly stopped and looked down at the gigantic, jet-black sword on the ground.

This was the only thing that the Undead War God had dropped after falling.

Chapter 657 - Dark Samsara (2)

How could the War God's sword be any ordinary item? Ling Chen could clearly remember that when the War God initially lifted it up, his Twilight Spear and Chilling Star had both trembled in fear. This showed just how powerful it was. After hesitating for a moment, Ling Chen stretched out his hand and picked up the large, jet-black sword. The instant his hand touched the sword, an imperceptible light was released from the sword and travelled along Ling Chen's fingers into his body.

"Ding... you have received a gift of power from the War God, HP+2000, MP+1000, Strenght+200, Constitution+100, Agility+50, Spirit+50, Comprehension+2, SP+90,0000, skill [War God Technique]'s level has been raised to LV15, maximum level has been raised to LV25. Skill [Heaven Destroying Slash]'s maximum level has been raised to LV12, skill [Boundless Desolation]'s maximum level has been raised to LV12, skill [Eight Direction Annihilation]'s maximum level has been raised to LV6. You have received the War God's unique skill [War God's Will].

Ling Chen froze in shock, an incredibly complicated feeling inside him.

A gift of power from the War God... this meant that the instant before the War God disappeared he had sent all of his power into this jet-black sword so that when Ling Chen picked it up, it would increase the power of his War God's profession.

Did Ling Chen hate the War God? Of course he did. Otherwise, he wouldn't have done all that he could to destroy him. After all, he had caused Ling Chen's pets to die for the first time. However, his battle power came from the War God, and after the War God had perished, he had left him power... in that instant, Ling Chen simply didn't know how to express how moved he felt.

After activating [Shura's Death Domain], he had lost 120 points of

stats, but the power from the War God had given him 2000 HP, 1000 MP, and 400 points of stats! What's more, 200 of those points were added to Strength, and he had even gained Comprehension. Also, the maximum level of many of his skills had been raised. He had even received a new War God skill. This was the most stats Ling Chen had ever received.

[War God's Will]: Special skill, cannot be levelled up. The special skill given by the Undead War God Chi Xuan Wu Hen. Effects: Once activated, 80% chance of not being knocked back, knocked over, or knocked up when receiving damage.

This skill gave an 80% chance of nullifying an impact from attacks – this was undeniably a powerful skill. When fighting the War God, no matter how powerful his attacks had been, the War God had been like a steady mountain that could not be moved. With this skill, he could essentially fight like the War God had, like an immovable mountain. When fighting against powerful enemies, this skill would undeniably be incredibly useful.

When Ling Chen held the Undead War God's sword, it not only felt incredibly heavy, but it also felt bone-piercingly cold. However, what allowed Ling Chen to release a breath of relief was that the jet-black sword did not release energy to resist his touch. As far as he knew, incredibly powerful weapons that had reached a certain grade had a mind of their own. Once they chose an owner, they would resist anyone else. If someone else tried to forcibly use them, they would release energy to attack the person.

The large jet-black sword's appearance was simple and unadorned. It was completely jet-black, and the sword's edge was quite blunt. It was incredibly wide to the point that it was quite difficult to hold in one hand. Apart from this, there was nothing else to be described. It didn't have any inscriptions on it, and it was so ordinary-looking that if it was hung in a weapons shop, most people, including Ling Chen, wouldn't spare it an extra glance. However, it was the War God's sword, and it had caused the

Heaven's End grade Chilling Star and Twilight Spear to tremble in fear, so it definitely wasn't any ordinary sword. Ling Chen picked it up with great difficulty and looked at its stats:

[Dark Samsara]: Type: Double-Handed Sword, Grade: Mysterious God, Equipment Requirements: A weapon that has had restrictions cast on it by the Underworld King. Only those who the Underworld King chooses can use this weapon. Currently, only the Undead War God Chi Xuan Wu Hen has been given permission. A sword forged by the Dwarf Clan 10,000 years ago using Starfall Metal and Extreme Darkness Chalcedony, it was fused with hundreds of thousands of dark souls. It devoured the blood of the Darkness God Beast, and it was bathed in the Underworld Blood Lake. In total, it took 130 years to forge the sword. When the sword was completed, the sky, sun, and moon became dark and brought a divine tribulation. It has the power to rend the heavens and destroy the earth; the power to annihilate stars and break moons. It was originally the Underworld King's personal sword, but it was given to the Undead War God to be used a thousand years ago, and it has been with him ever since.

Stats: Only those who can equip the weapon can see its stats.

Bonus Skills: Only those who can equip the weapon can see its skills.

Ling Chen's eyes shined as he tightly gripped the Undead War God's sword... although he had expected this, waves of shock crashed into his heart when he saw the sword's grade.

Mysterious God grade... this was a Mysterious God grade Double-Handed Sword!! An actual god's sword! It was not only the Undead War God's sword, but it had also been the Underworld King's personal sword in the past!

There were definitely not more than 3 Mysterious God grade swords in the entire Forgotten Continent, and yet this sword was in his hands. If Ling Chen could equip this sword, his overall

power would skyrocket to a completely different level! Just thinking about it made all of the blood within Ling Chen's body started to boil.

However, even with the max-level [Item Manipulation Technique], Ling Chen was unable to equip the Mysterious God grade sword because it was clearly written that the Underworld King had set restrictions on it so that only those whom he gave permission could use it. In other words, if Ling Chen wanted to use this sword, he had to ask the Underworld King to give him permission…

As soon as this naïve thought appeared in Ling Chen's mind, he immediately quashed it.

What a joke! He had charged into the Underworld's Forbidden Area, the Underworld Blood Lake. Once the Underworld King knew of this, he would order the entirety of the Underworld to capture or kill Ling Chen. Why would he release the restriction for Ling Chen?

After obtaining the Mysterious God Grade sword and not being able to use it, Ling Chen felt as if he had brought a very beautiful woman to bed but simply couldn't take her clothes off. This sort of feeling was incredibly uncomfortable. After feeling quite complicated for a while, Ling Chen threw the sword into his bag… it was simply impossible to ask the Underworld King to give him permission to use this sword. However, with the Dwarves' wisdom and skill in forging, perhaps they would have a way to undo this restriction. This was especially so because it was the Dwarves who had forged it 10,000 years ago – it was possible that they had left something within it that allowed them to control it.

Ahead of Ling Chen was the Underworld Blood Lake, one of the Underworld's most restricted and dangerous areas. Ling Chen had arrived in quite a good condition, and he looked at his current SP. After killing the 3 Heaven's End grade beasts and the War God, he had also received the War God's gift, resulting in 2,130,000 SP!

After looking at all of the War God's skills that had been upgraded, he quickly allocated the SP among them, bringing the [War God Technique], [Heaven Destroying Slash], [Boundless Desolation] and [Eight Direction Annihilation] to max level.

[War God Technique]: Current Level: LV25, max level. Powerful battle technique originating from the War God's soul force. After practicing, one's Attack Power is greatly increased permanently. Effect: Strength increases by 25*X points, Physical Attack Damage increased by 60*X (X=Current level).

[Heaven Destroying Slash]: Current Level: LV12, max level. A single-target skill upgraded from [Ling Tian Slash], it possesses even more destructive power and contains enough might to destroy the heavens and split the earth. Uses one's weapon to attack a single target, releasing the ferocious and mighty War God's power, dealing massive damage to the target. Effects: Single target attack, Damage is equal to 600% of normal attacks, Critical Chance+30%, 10% chance to stun the target for 3-5 seconds, 10% chance for the target's Defence to fall by 70% for 5 seconds, 90% chance of knocking the target back. MP Consumption: 50, no cooldown time.

[Boundless Desolation]: Current Level: LV12, max level. An AOE skill upgraded from [Ling Tian Burst], it has a larger range and more destructive power. Guides the War God's power into one's weapon and then releases it as one sweeps their weapon, causing a large-scale explosion. Attacks the area 12 metres in front of the user, and it has a 100% chance of knocking back the targets. Damage is equal to 350% of normal attacks. MP Consumption: 70, no cooldown time.

[Eight Direction Annihilation]: Current Level: LV12, max level. An ultimate skill upgraded from [Four Corners Star Formation]. Unleashes the War God's power without reservation when cast, and it creates a terrifying storm of destruction within 30 metres of the user. Damage is equal to 1500% of normal attacks, Critical

Chance+30%, 100% chance to knock back targets. MP Consumption: 280, cooldown time: 60 seconds.

After raising the 4 skills that the War God had upgraded to their new maximum levels, Ling Chen looked at his remaining SP and instantly felt dumbfounded... the terrifying 2 million SP was now 940,000 – he had spent over half! The 3 attack skills were not too bad, but it required 80,000 SP to upgrade [War God Technique] from LV15 to LV16, and every time he levelled it up after LV20 it cost him more than 100,000 SP. When Ling Chen raised the levels of his skills, his hands trembled because of the aching in his heart. However, the max level War God Technique was undeniably incredibly powerful, causing his Attack Power to skyrocket.

Now, his Basic Attack Power had broken through 10,000, and it was more than twice as powerful as it had been before he had fought the War God!

The situation did not allow Ling Chen to continue dallying. He once again jumped onto Snow Cherry's back and brought Leng'Er as they sped forwards like lightning. After exiting the destroyed Fire Purgatory, they came to a dark passageway. With Snow Cherry's extreme speed, they passed through the passageway in a flash. The instant they passed through the passageway, Snow Cherry's body froze, and Ling Chen stared ahead.

"Ding... you have entered into the extremely dangerous region 'Underworld Blood Lake'. The Underworld Blood Lake is one of the Forbidden Areas of the Underworld, and entering will bring the wrath and anger of the Underworld King. Please quickly depart before the Underworld King notices!"

In front of him was a gigantic lake of blood... that's right, a lake of blood! The system announcement in his ears confirmed that this was the Underworld Blood Lake that he had come for.

The Underworld Blood Lake was not as large as Ling Chen had expected – at least, it didn't stretch on as far as the eye could see.

Ling Chen could see the Underworld Blood Lake all the way to the other end. It formed an imperfect circle, and it was roughly 1 kilometre in diameter. The water was a shocking dark red colour, looking like incredibly dense blood. The lake water constantly bubbled, and an incredibly dense and heavy air hung above it.

Ling Chen slowly came to the edge of the Underworld Blood Lake and looked at the colour of the lake. When thinking of the name 'Underworld Blood Lake' before he had come here, he had imagined several possibilities, and what he saw was quite close to what he had imagined. However, it still gave him quite a big shock. Looking at the dark-red lake water, an important question surfaced in his mind...

Since the Underworld Blood Lake was so large, how could he find the Orb hidden within it?!

Because Xiao Hui had died earlier, he needed to sleep for 3 hours. Without Xiao Hui's detection abilities, Ling Chen had no idea how he would find the Orb. Furthermore, he didn't know if the Orb was around the lake or within the lake! If it was within the lake, he wouldn't be able to go into it to find the Orb even if he knew exactly where it was... this was a terrifying lake that had refined countless high-grade Undead's corpses. Without even thinking, it was obvious what would be the result if a living creature jumped into it.

Chapter 658 - [Soulkilling Curse]

The Underworld Blood Lake was extraordinarily quiet, and apart from the bubbling from the lake, there were no other sounds. This meant that he was temporarily safe here – even if the collapse of the Fire Purgatory had alerted the Underworld Gods outside, it would take them quite some time to reach here... however, it was impossible to stall until Xiao Hui woke up. Ling Chen looked at the large lake, feeling at his wit's end. He could only walk around the edge of the Underworld Blood Lake while looking at the Lunar Scourge to see if there was any reaction. He started to pray that the Orb would be around the edge of the lake as opposed to within it.

The lake definitely had the densest aura of death in the world after devouring countless powerful Undead's bodies and power, and it was to the point that even Undead couldn't handle it. In that case, there shouldn't be any living things around. However, after taking a few steps, Ling Chen suddenly found a dark-red leaf growing to the side of the Underworld Blood Lake. The leaf was quite small, and one would not notice it if they were not paying attention. It looked like a young sprout that had just grown.

This sort of impossible existence couldn't help but attract Ling Chen's attention. He squatted down and looked at it:

[Young Comprehension Flower]: The juvenile form of a strange flower that grows next to the Underworld Blood Lake at the bottom of the Underworld. It gives off light that looks like water ripples in the darkness. It doesn't have a set colour, but rather its colour changes depending on the emotions of creatures close to it. The more positive the emotions are, the brighter the colour will be; the more negative the emotions are, the darker the colour will be. After consuming, Comprehension+1 permanently. Although its effects cannot compare to that of a matured Psychic Flower's, its effects can be stacked.

Ling Chen remembered that when he had met Qian Gun Gun for

the second time, he had spent a massive amount of money to buy a Psychic Flower. After consuming it, it had shockingly increased his Comprehension by 3 points. Looking at this young Psychic Flower, he remembered that in the description it had said that these flowers grew next to the Underworld Blood Lake, which was where he was right now.

However, the Comprehension Flower's effects could not be stacked, while this Young Psychic Flower's description had stated that its effects could be stacked. As such, Ling Chen did not hesitate and immediately plucked it, throwing it into his mouth. He had come here with great difficulty, and he most likely would not be able to come again. It would be a waste not to take free benefits like this, and it would be impossible for him to wait until it matured.

"Ding... you have consumed a [Young Psychic Flower], Comprehension+1."

After consuming the [Young Psychic Flower], its effects immediately manifested, increasing Ling Chen's Comprehension by 1 permanently. Adding on the gift from the War God before, his Comprehension was now an astounding 30 points. At this moment, another system announcement sounded out:

"Ding... your Comprehension has reached 30 points. The Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curses' [Soulkilling Curse] of the 3 Forbidden Curses has been unlocked.

This system announcement surprised Ling Chen, and he opened his skills page as quickly as he could... the second Feng Chen Forbidden Curse had actually been unlocked at this time, surprising Ling Chen. All of the Feng Chen Curses' effects were incredibly powerful as well as incredibly shocking and terrifying. When he had used the weakest of the 3 Forbidden Curses, the [Soulstealing Curse], he had caused the Moon God Representative Snow Cherry to submit to him, becoming his loyal mount. To be honest, that skill was so powerful that it made Ling Chen feel

uncomfortable. Xiao Feng Chen had told him in the past that there were 3 Forbidden Curses in total: the [Soulstealing Curse], the [Soulkilling curse] and the [Yama Curse]. The effects of each of them in succession were more and more heaven-defying, so if this new curse was even more powerful than the [Soulstealing Curse], just what sort of effects would it have…

[Soulkilling Curse]: One of the 3 Forbidden Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curses, cannot be levelled up. When cast towards a single target within the user's field of vision, the user's mental energy severs and destroys the target's connection to their soul and their control over their soul. The target's soul will no longer belong to them, and it will be completely controlled by the user. The user can read all of the target's memories and control their thoughts, actions, and memories. Upon success, the effects will last forever. Upon failure, the user's Comprehension will be permanently reduced by 30%, and their mental energy will enter an exhausted state. Consumes 12,500 MP, can only be used once per day. Maximum number of uses in total = [Current Level/20] (rounded down), number of uses left: 3/3.

Although Ling Chen had heard about the [Soulkilling Curse] from Xiao Feng Chen, Ling Chen couldn't help but breathe in a breath of cold air after seeing it personally,

The [Soulstealing Curse] was already incomparably fearsome – upon success, no matter how powerful the target was or how noble their status was, they would submit to the user forever. However, at least with the [Soulstealing Curse], the user would merely leave a mark on the target's soul, but the target's soul would still belong to them. On the other hand, however, the [Soulkilling Curse] was much more frightening. Once someone was affected by it, their soul would no longer belong to themselves – their thoughts, actions, expressions, voice… even memories, would be completely controlled by the user of the curse, causing them to become a puppet. Let alone resist, even if they wanted to die they wouldn't

be able to die unless the user of the curse gave their permission.

“There was actually such a scary Feng Chen Curse… this is simply outrageous!” Ling Chen read through the [Soulkilling Curse]’s effects again and again, and he imagined if he was affected by such a curse… this caused him to shiver as he almost broke into a cold sweat.

Ling Chen closed his stats page and threw the Forbidden Feng Chen Curses to the back of his mind. This was because no matter how evil one was, the Forbidden Feng Chen Curses were much too cruel; they were much crueller than even slicing someone with ten thousand blades, and they were so cruel that they shouldn’t even exist. Ling Chen felt that he most likely wouldn’t use this skill in his lifetime.

In order to pick more [Young Psychic Flowers], Ling Chen walked around the edge of the Underworld Blood Lake. He squatted down, and if he moved his right hand a bit further, he would touch the Underworld Blood Lake’s water. Looking at the terrifying water nearby, Ling Chen hesitated before taking off his gauntlets and curiously stretching out a finger…

Chi!!

-420,000!

An extremely scorching pain blazed through Ling Chen’s finger. The pain caused Ling Chen to grit his teeth, and he pulled his hand back as fast as lightning. The damage was countered by the Evil God’s Mask, causing a gigantic damage figure to rise up.

This damage figure caused Ling Chen to feel incredibly shocked, and he hurriedly stumbled back a few steps, trying to stay as far away from the lake as possible. The Underworld Blood Lake had refined countless high-tier Undead’s bodies and energy, and the amount of energy of death that it contained was simply astounding. However, Ling Chen hadn’t expected it to be to such a degree – by merely touching it with a single finger for an instant, it

had dealt 420,000 damage. If he fell in, he would be destroyed in an instant, and even his bones wouldn't be left.

Ling Chen then took out one of the Gold grade equipment that the Demon Skeleton Dragon had dropped and threw it into the Underworld Blood Lake. The instant it came into contact with the water, a sizzling sound could be heard as the durable Gold grad equipment disappeared into a puff of smoke, completely gone.

Ling Chen deeply gulped and subconsciously took a few steps back, instantly feeling even more depressed. If the Orb really was in the Underworld Blood Lake, how could he take it out... did he really have to ask the Underworld King? As for the Orb, could it have been corroded by the lake already? Ling Chen couldn't help but worry. The Underworld Blood Lake contained immense power, but surely it wasn't more powerful than a heaven-defying item like the Lunar Scourge's Orbs. Back then, even the 3 Moon Goddesses were unable to cause any damage to the Orbs, and they could only split them up and take them away from the Lunar Scourge.

Ling Chen frowned as he continued to walk around the Underworld Blood Lake. After walking for a while, he suddenly sensed something and he hurriedly turned around. He found that Leng'Er wasn't by his side, but that she was instead still where they had been initially. She was staring at the water with a blank gaze, and she had not followed him this entire time.

"Leng'Er!" Ling Chen immediately returned to Leng'Er's side and looked at her abnormal state with surprise, "What's wrong? Did you find something strange?"

A hazy look appeared within Leng'Er's eyes. After Ling Chen returned to her side and spoke to her, she acted as if her soul had been stolen, and she did not even hug the doll in her arms very tightly. She dumbly stared at the Underworld Blood Lake, and only after a long time did she finally respond to Ling Chen. She gently moved her lips as she spoke incredibly softly, "What a familiar feeling... I haven't come here with master before... so why do I feel

like it's so familiar..."

"Familiar?" Ling Chen felt quite surprised, "You feel as if you've come here before?"

"Mm..." Leng'Er nodded.

Ling Chen frowned and thought for a while before smiling and replying, "Maybe Leng'Er really has come here before in the past, which is why this place feels familiar. Maybe it'll help Leng'Er remember many of her forgotten memories."

Leng'Er did not reply, and she continued to stare at the Underworld Blood Lake's water, lost in her own thoughts.

"Let's go and see more places. Maybe those places will help Leng'Er think of something."

After Ling Chen spoke, Leng'Er still did not turn to him. Just as Ling Chen was about to reach for her hand, her body suddenly floated up and drifted towards the bubbling Underworld Blood Lake.

"Leng'Er, don't touch the lake; it's very dangerous!"

As Ling Chen called out, he rushed over to stop Leng'Er. They were now right above the Underworld Blood Lake, and below them was the bubbling, blood-red water.

After being stopped by Ling Chen, Leng'Er did not go any further, but she instead quickly descended. As Ling Chen stared in shock, she stopped when her feet were right above the lake as she bent down and touched the water with a finger.

"Don't touch it!!" Ling Chen cried out with worry, and he hurriedly tried to stop her. However, he was too late, and by the time he caught Leng'Er's arm, her finger had already dipped into the water, causing his pupils to dilate.

Chapter 659 - Leng'Er's True Awakening

However, Ling Chen did not hear any sizzling nor did he see any damage figures appear. Most importantly, there were not any changes to Leng'Er's body or expression. As Ling Chen stared in shock, Leng'er slowly pulled out her finger from the water. Her finger was covered with the dark-red water, but in an instant, the water strangely disappeared from her finger... no, more precisely, it silently entered her finger.

"This..." Ling Chen felt quite surprised. He had just witnessed how terrifying the Underworld Blood Lake was, and its effects should apply to both living creatures and the Undead because it was created by devouring Undead. However, Leng'Er evidently seemed fine.

"It feels so nice and warm..." Leng'Er muttered as she looked at her finger. She then looked down at the blood-red water as a look of desire appeared within her dark eyes. Finally, she put away the doll that was in her embrace as her body continued to descend. Her cute feet in their black shoes entered the lake followed by her legs... her entire lower body... chest... and she was finally completely submerged in the Underworld Blood Lake.

The Underworld Blood Lake continued to bubble, and Ling Chen continued help but continue to stare at where Leng'Er had descended, not sure what to think.

When he had touched the Underworld Blood Lake, he had taken a massive amount of damage. And yet, when Leng'Er had touched it, she had said that it was 'nice' and 'warm'. Just what was going on? Why did she enter the Underworld Blood Lake? Could it really be that the water was so inviting to her?

While Ling Chen was confused, a stream of system announcements rapidly sounded out in succession:

"Ding... because of unknown reasons, your pet Leng'Er's

dormant power has awoken, Magic Attack Power+107.”

“Ding… because of unknown reasons, your pet Leng’Er’s dormant power has awoken, Darkness Resistance has been increased 110%.”

“Ding… because of unknown reasons, your pet Leng’Er’s dormant power has awoken, Water, Fire, Wind, Lightning, Earth Resistance+…”

“Ding… because of unknown reasons, your pet Leng’Er’s dormant power has awoken, Magic Attack Power+260…”

In the span of a few seconds, a number of system announcements rang in Ling Chen’s ears, causing him to feel quite shocked. He quickly looked down at the lake, and he found that it looked exactly the same. There was nothing different or special where Leng’Er had descended, but the system announcements continued to wildly sound out…

Ding… because of unknown reasons, your pet Leng’Er’s dormant power has awoken, MP+563.”

“Ding… your pet Leng’Er’s dormant power has awoken, skill [Summon Undead] has been levelled up to LV3.”

“Ding… your pet Leng’Er’s dormant power has awoken, skill [Darkness Spike]’s maximum level has been increased to LV10, and she has received the evolved skill [Darkness Touch].”

“Ding… your pet Leng’Er’s dormant power has awoken, skill [Darkness Spike] has been levelled up to LV8, [Darkness Touch] has been levelled up to LV4.”

“Ding… because of unknown reasons, your pet Leng’Er’s dormant power has awoken, Magic Attack Power+439, Movement Speed+17.”

“Ding… your pet Leng’Er’s dormant power has awoken, skill [Sin Lock] has been raised to max level.”

“Ding… your pet Leng’Er’s dormant power has awoken, skill [Soul Lock] has been raised to max level.”

“Ding… your pet Leng’Er’s dormant power has awoken, and she has unlocked the darkness destructive skill [Deathly Moon].”

“Ding… because of unknown reasons, your pet Leng’Er’s dormant power has awoken, MP+1,069, Magic Attack Power+227, Movement Speed+12, Darkness Resistance has been increased to 138%, Water Resistance has been increased to 62%, Fire Resistance has been increased to 70%, Wind Resistance has been increased to 68%, Lightning Resistance has been increased to 59%, Earth Resistance has been increased to 66%.”

“Ding… your pet Leng’Er’s dormant power has awoken, darkness destructive skill [Deathly Moon] has been levelled up to LV5, unique undead forbidden skill [Eternal Death] has been unlocked.”

“Ding… your pet Leng’Er’s dormant power has awoken…”

“Ding…”

……

……

Before one system announcement had finished, the next one would begin. They soon became so dense that Ling Chen couldn’t even hear the contents of the system announcements properly. He knew that after descending into the Underworld Blood Lake, many of Leng’Er’s stats and abilities had crazily increased, and her dormant power was quickly awakening…

The Underworld Blood Lake’s water not only did not harm Leng’Er, but it also helped her quickly become more powerful. Surprisingly, this water, which had devoured countless Undead, could not devour Leng’Er, and it seemed as if its power was being devoured by Leng’Er!

The system announcements continued to chaotically mix with each other, and Ling Chen temporarily forgot about finding the

Orb as he hesitantly looked down at the Underworld Blood Lake, worrying that something might happen.

5 minutes later, the system announcements finally stopped, but Leng'Er still did not come out of the water.

"Leng'Er! Leng'Er!!"

Ling Chen started to call out, and after calling out about 7 or 8 times, he did not receive any response. He tightly frowned, praying that nothing had happened to Leng'Er. He then opened Leng'Er's stats page to see how much stronger she had become over the past 5 minutes.

As soon as Ling Chen took a glance, he felt incredibly shocked.

[Leng'Er]: Type: Humanoid Pet, Level: LV62, Grade: None, Owner: Ling Tian. An irregular girl from the Eerie Castle at the heart of the Forest of Bones. Her background is unclear, and she only has half a spirit and an illusory body. She was not willing to leave the Forest of Bones, and she is always carrying around a doll. She has a terrifying love for dolls. Stimulated by an unknown power, the dormant power within her body has started to awaken, and her dormant memories have also started to recover.

[Relationship with master]: A connection created by a Soul Sacrifice Contract, which cannot be terminated. Does not need to obey her owner's commands, and the damage taken by her will be transferred to her owner. Her level will always be equivalent to her owner's, and she will live and die with her owner.

[Favourability to owner]: 42 (Liking) [Note: -100: Irreconcilable Hatred, -80: Hatred, -60: Despising, -40: Loathing, -20: Distrusting, -10: Disliking, 0: Neutral, 10: Closeness, 20: Trusting, 40: Liking, 50: Affectionate, 60: Infatuation, 70: Adoration, 80: True Love, 90: Together Forever, 100: To Death Do Us Part.]

Stats: HP: ????, MP: 132,800, Physical Attack Power: 1, Magic Attack Power: 35,600, Defence: 500, Critical Chance: 0, Pierce

Chance: 0, Movement Speed: 290, Elemental Resistances: Water: 75%, Fire: 75%, Wind: 75%, Lightning: 75%, Earth: 75%, Light: -50%, Darkness: 200%.

Passive Ability: 1. Illusory body: Ignores all physical attacks and Darkness attacks. Immune to all abnormal statuses and stat debuffs. Can float up to 100 metres high.

2. ???? (Strength insufficient, unable to unlock)

3. ???? (Strength insufficient, unable to unlock)

Special Attributes: Owner can choose whether she is visible or invisible. When she is visible, Leng'Er can be seen and heard by other beings. When she is invisible, only her owner or beings with extremely high magic or spirit can see or hear her. Moreover, only her owner can come into contact with her body.

Skills:

[Summon Undead]: Current Level: LV3, Highest Level: LV5, Requirements to level up unknown. Uses the death energy from corpses as mediums to summon medium grade Skeleton Soldiers from the Underworld. The Skeleton Soldiers assume the profession of the corpse, have the same level as the summoner, and have grades of 2 Star Elites. The Skeleton Soldiers will fully obey all commands from the summoner. Every corpse can only be used to summon 1 Skeleton Soldier. Every summon costs 50MP, and multiple Skeleton Soldiers can be simultaneously summoned from multiple corpses. There is no limit to the number of Skeleton Soldiers that can be in existence. Every Skeleton Soldier lasts for 20 minutes, and it will immediately disappear once killed.

[Darkness Spike]: Current Level: LV10, max level. A Darkness element attack that uses Darkness elemental energy to create 2 Darkness Spikes within 50 metres around the caster. Silently and stealthily pierces towards a target or targets. Base attack damage is Magic Attack Power x 500%. Upon being hit, the target has a 5% of instant death. Costs 30MP, no cooldown.

[Darkness Touch]: Current Level: LV10, max level. A skill unlocked from the [Darkness Spike], releases an eerie Darkness energy to entangle multiple targets within 30 metres, causing an explosion of Darkness energy to cause massive Darkness element damage. Base attack damage is Magic Attack Power x 300%, and it can be used on 12 targets maximum. Has a 10% chance of adding a [Darkness] abnormal status for 5 seconds. Costs 60MP, no cooldown time.

[Darkness Lock]: ... (no change)

[Underworld Lock]: ... (no change)

[Sin Lock]: Current Level: LV5, max level. Uses Darkness energy to surround the 50 metres around the target and attack the target's spirit, causing them to release the hidden evil side in their hearts and enter the "Berserk" status for 20 seconds, attacking everything around them furiously. Costs 300MP, cooldown time: 60 seconds.

[Soul Lock]: Current Level: LV5, max level. Uses dark underworld power to bind a single target's soul within 50 metres, allowing you to completely control their mind and soul for 30 seconds. Base rate of success is 35%. Consumes 320MP, cooldown time: 60 seconds.

[Deathly Moon]: Current level: LV5, max level. Uses deathly aura to create a moon, mercilessly devouring all light and life. Effects: Deals Magic Attack Power x 1500% Darkness element damage to all targets within 100 metres, turning the damage dealt into HP and MP for the user, master, and other pets. Has a 100% chance to add a [Darkness] abnormal status for 5 seconds. When casting, the entire region falls into complete darkness. Costs 8300 MP, cooldown time: 10 minutes.

Ultimate Skills:

[Doll Grenade]: No change.

[Eternal Death]: Darkness Forbidden Skill, cannot be levelled up. Summons deathly aura from hell, dispelling all holiness and

auspiciousness. The moment the demonic eyes are opened, a misfortune from the abyss will descend on the mortal realm. Effects: All targets within 3000 metres, regardless of level or grade, are afflicted by a [Curse] abnormal status for 3 minutes. Costs 120,000 MP, cooldown time: 1 month.

Chapter 660 - An Unprecedented Crisis

In just those few minutes, Leng'Er's overall stats had skyrocketed by more than 10 times, and she was now comparable to even Xi Ling in terms of magic stats. Most of her skills had become vastly more powerful, and she had even unlocked some even more powerful darkness skills. Ling Chen never thought that there would be such immense changes. This also made him realise that Leng'Er most likely had some sort of special relationship with the Underworld Blood Lake. At the very least, just like she had said, she most likely had come here before and was familiar with this place.

After a long period of silence, Leng'Er still did not come out from the Underworld Blood lake. Just as Ling Chen was about to start searching for the Orb again, a thundering voice boomed in his ears, "Who dares to intrude into the Underworld Blood Lake?"

The Underworld Blood Lake suddenly started to surge, causing large waves of blood-red water to ripple. The dark ground around him trembled, and even the entire space seemed to shake from the thunderous voice. Ling Chen felt as if his ears were going to explode, and his head buzzed, making him feel incredibly dizzy.

Ling Chen quickly turned around, preparing to move to a safer space... suddenly, just as he moved, his body froze as a look of shock appeared within his eyes... his entire body had been tightly locked down by an irresistible force, and no matter how much he struggled, he couldn't budge an inch.

Ling Chen looked up and saw an orb of black light descend, revealing a tall and muscular figure. This person was more than 2 metres tall, and he had powerful-looking limbs. He was wearing a jet-black robe, and the muscles that were exposed bulged outwards, giving off a sense of explosive strength. His skin was white with a hint of green, and he had a savage and fierce looking face like that of a beast's. His furious eyes were completely black

without any white at all. What was most striking was the jet-black crescent moon on his forehead, which gave off a dark light.

The instant he appeared, the entire space fell silent as Ling Chen terrifyingly started suffocating. Ling Chen stared at the Undead giant in front of him as he thought of a name that even the 3 Moon Goddesses were wary of, the person he wanted to meet least in the Underworld...

The Underworld King!!!

.....

Ling Tian City.

After Xuanyuan Dia Wu logged on, she immediately went to the Administrative District's meeting hall and found that many of the elders of Ling Tian City, apart from Ling Chen, were all present. She immediately asked worriedly, "Could it be that something big has happened?"

"That's right! And it's something very bad... the situation is even worse than that battle when Ling Tian City was about to be completed," Li Xiao Xue replied with a frown on her face. Everyone present looked incredibly serious, and there was a hint of worry and anger on their faces.

"What happened?" Seeing everyone's expressions, Xuanyuan Dia Wu had a bad feeling.

Yun Meng Xin sighed before slowly speaking, "Although we expected this, they came too quickly... at around 9am, a teleportation channel appeared about 30 kilometres west of the city. Large numbers of the Forgotten City's soldiers started to arrive, with the lowest level being LV70. More than half of them are at least LV80, and some of them are even above LV90. An hour after the teleportation channel appeared, at least 50,000 soldiers were gathered. Followed by this, the Silver Corps and Gold Corps arrived as well as their incredibly powerful leaders... at 12pm, the

Forgotten City's Forgotten Emperor personally came as well!

"By noon, there were more than 100,000 soldiers from the Forgotten City, and they keep arriving."

"Could it be..." A hint of killing intent appeared within Xuanyuan Dia Wu's beautiful eyes.

"Although they haven't moved out from their original position, the situation is quite clear. Ling Tian City has been doing too well and has suppressed the Forgotten City in every way, causing everyone to desert the Forgotten City, resulting in them losing face. Before, the Forgotten Emperor couldn't take it anymore and personally came here. Although he had left after being shamed, his words were very threatening," Li Xiao Xue said in a low voice as she looked towards the west, "However, he tried to threaten Ling Tian, and you know what his personality is like. The Forgotten Emperor achieved the opposite of what he wanted. Under Ling Tian's instructions, not only did Ling Tian City not act reservedly, but Ling Tian City also became more oppressive... this time, the Forgotten City finally couldn't take it anymore."

"We can only say that greed and envy are terrifying sins," Yun Meng Xin said anxiously.

"But aren't there rules preventing them from attacking players and player's cities without reason? Won't they be punished by the system?" Xiao Qi asked with her fists clenched.

"If it was anyone else, that would naturally be the case. However, this is the Forgotten Emperor," Li Xiao Xue said as she frowned. "He's the emperor of the Forgotten Continent's human world, and he controls some of the power that decides certain rules. Moreover, with his status and authority, he can throw many crimes on our heads... such as that we've constructed a city against the rules, or that the development of Ling Tian City has brought disaster to the Forgotten Continent's residents. With his authority, he can find an abundance of 'witnesses'. He could also say that

we've broken many of the rules and disturbed the order between the Forgotten Continent's human world and the player's world."

Xiao Qi gnashed her teeth as she angrily said, "How can they do that? Ling Tian City has developed based on our own efforts, and we didn't break any rules or do anything bad. Instead, we've given players and NPCs a higher standard of living, so what reason do they have to attack us? That's right! Isn't there a Moon God Representative who oversees the peace and order of the continent? Won't she do anything about this?"

"Qi Qi, your thinking is too naïve," Xiao Qiu Feng said with a cold expression as he shook his head. "The Forgotten Continent's Moon God Representative can't always be familiar with the happenings of the Forgotten Continent. After everything's said and done, whose side do you think she will stand on when she finds out about this: the Forgotten City's or a player's city? Moreover, even if she knew who was in the right and who was in the wrong, would she truly punish the Forgotten City?"

The atmosphere in the meeting hall chilled as everyone deeply frowned. This was because the crisis that Ling Tian City faced this time was simply too great, and it was much greater than even the previous crisis by many times. This was because those attacking Ling Tian City were not players, but rather the Forgotten Continent's NPCs! They had the Forgotten Emperor personally leading them, making this an attack from the Forgotten Continent's central royal city! Their power was on a completely different level to players, and it was something that players could not defend against.

By now, more than 50 guilds with at least 100,000 players had joined the city, and adding on the small to medium-sized guilds, Ling Tian City had around 20,000,000 players. As Ling Tian City's guilds expand, this number will greatly increase. However, putting aside the fact that they would not be able to command even half of these players, even if they could command them at will, they

would not be able to defend against the 100,000 soldiers from the Forgotten City. This was because even the weakest of these soldiers would be like a powerful Boss to the players, and with those powerful leaders, they could cause mass destruction with the flick of a wrist... if they wanted to kill tens of thousands of players in a single strike, it would take an incredibly small amount of effort. With the players' strength, facing off against the Forgotten City's army of elites was like smashing an egg against a boulder.

"Everyone, don't be too pessimistic. I think that the Forgotten Emperor wouldn't attack Ling Tian City unless the situation was absolutely dire for him. When he does this, he at least risks being punished by the Moon God Representative. For his army to have arrived so long without moving, his intent is very clear – he wants to force us to negotiate and then sign an agreement that is detrimental to us," Li Xiao Xue said steadily as she looked around the meeting hall. All of Ling Tian City's leaders were present except for Ling Chen. However, when facing such a big crisis, he would not be able to change much even if he was here. This was because once the battle started, it was not something that could be changed by players.

"Perhaps..." Li Xiao Xue lightly breathed in as she spoke seriously, "And this is just perhaps, but if our negotiations with the Forgotten Emperor break down, Chief Greenwood, we'll be relying on your power to defend the city."

The players simply did not have enough strength to contend against the army, and if they really did start fighting, they would be relying on the powerful Fairies... it was just that the other side had at least 100,000 soldiers as well as many peak-level experts that they didn't know about. Although the Fairy Clan was incredibly powerful, there were only a measly 2,000 of them. Although they were far stronger individually, they were still at a great disadvantage.

"If it really comes to that, we won't allow the Ling Tian City to be

destroyed even if we have to kill!" Greenwood said darkly, his eyes as piercing as swords. For a Fairy who loved peace and hated conflict to say such words, it was evident how furious he was toward the Forgotten City for attacking Ling Tian City.

"Why would they do this? We used our own hands and sweat to build our home, so why would they attack us?!" Chief Dilo was extremely emotional. His eyes were red, and his voice was filled with fury and disbelief, "They're also humans, so why are their hearts like those of demons!"

Li Xiao Xue closed her eyes and said in a low voice, "Not all humans are like this. It's our misfortune to have offended the humans' Emperor like this."

"Ding..."

Li Xiao Xue's communication device sounded out. She listened for a while and her expression became serious. After hanging up, she said to everyone else, "They're coming closer... we should go meet them. No matter what the other side says or does, everyone needs to remain calm. Meng Xin and I will talk with them."

Chapter 661 - Total Loss

Ling Tian City's West Gate.

100,000 soldiers marched in grandiose fashion towards Ling Tian City. Although there were only 100,000 of them, the might they radiated was much more powerful than those of the attackers' in that previous battle. The instant they stopped in front of Ling Tian City's gates, an incredibly imposing might covered half of Ling Tian City, making countless players who had no idea what was going on feel that something was suppressing their bodies.

The 100,000 soldiers were dressed in full sets of equipment, the worst of which was Silver grade. Their eyes were as cold and sharp as knives – evidently, they had made full preparations before coming here. Those at the front were normal soldiers, and the powerful Silver Corps was behind them. The Gold Corps was also behind them, and their members had at least the strength of a Lord Grade Boss. Their Commanders and Supreme Commanders all had Celestial if not Heaven's End grade power, and since the Forgotten Emperor had personally come, it was possible that even peak-level Mysterious God grade experts were present.

When Li Xiao Xue and Yun Meng Xin arrived and faced the overwhelming might of the army, they looked at each other and simultaneously decided... they definitely couldn't allow the two sides to fight. With the aura that this army was displaying, even if the entire city retaliated, they had no chance at winning.

Within the army, a Knight wearing an entire set of Gold armour with eagle-like eyes walked forwards. He pointed the spear in his hand towards the city gates as he roared, "Where is the Lady of Ling Tian City? Come out and greet His Imperial Majesty!"

Xiao Qiu Feng, Yun Feng, and the 3 Heavenly Kings were used to ordering others around, and they had never been yelled at like this before. They instantly became incredibly furious. Winter of That

Year nocked an arrow on his bow with a 'whoosh', preparing to shoot the Knight in gold. Li Xiao Xue glanced at them and coldly said, "Calm down! Don't you remember what I said just a few moments ago?"

Li Xiao Xue's words contained the most weight and power in Ling Tian City. As such, they could only swallow their anger and glare at the soldier.

"Dia Wu... you go," Li Xiao Xue said to Xuanyuan Dia Wu in a low voice. "And also... reduce their morale a bit!"

Xuanyuan Dia Wu understood and slightly nodded before expressionlessly advancing. She stood about 20 steps away from the Knight in gold, staring at him silently. Back when she was the Sword Emperor, her aura had been as sharp and cold as a sword. Anyone would feel as if there was sharp blade pressed against their throats when being stared at like this by her, feeling an iciness throughout their bodies. However, she was no longer that Sword Emperor – she had reached an extreme realm, and she could perfectly conceal her sword intent. No matter if it was her eyes or her sword intent, anyone who came near would only feel that she was an ordinary and cold woman. It was just that because Xuanyuan Dia Wu didn't conceal her face, the Knight was momentarily stunned by her beauty. He hurriedly bit his tongue as he shouted out, "Are you the Lady of the City?"

"Are you the Forgotten City's Emperor?" Xuanyuan Dia Wu coldly asked in response.

The Knight in gold stared and then loudly replied, "I'm the Commander of the Imperial Army's 19th Knight Regiment, Su Zhi Zhan..."

Before he could finish speaking, Xuanyuan Dia Wu coldly harrumphed, "A mere Commander of a Knight Regiment thinks he has the right to meet our Lady? If you want to meet our Lady, ask your Emperor to invite her himself."

“Impudence!” The Knight in gold frowned as he roared, “His Imperial Majesty is the highest authority in the Forgotten Continent’s human world; how could he be someone your lowly Lady has the right to talk with? With your players’ pitiful strength, I can defeat all of the players in your city by myself! As the Commander of the 19th Knight Regiment, inviting your Lady is already giving you an incredible amount of face!”

Yun Feng and the other men’s gazes became strange. They suddenly realised why Li Xiao Xue had asked Xuanyuan Dia Wu to meet with the Knight in gold called Su Zhi Zhan... facing these ‘weak’ players, even an ordinary soldier had the right to be arrogant, let alone the Commander of a Knight Regiment wearing a full set of Gold grade equipment.

However, no matter who he was arrogant towards, he shouldn’t be arrogant towards the Sword Emperor, who was not much weaker than Ling Tian...

“Defeat all the players in our city by yourself?” Xuanyuan Dia Wu’s eyes narrowed in condescension, “You?”

The Knight in gold started to laugh wildly as he spun the spear in his hands, causing the air to spin around it, “I don’t put your players’ strength in my eyes at all. Saying that I can defeat all of the players in the entire city by myself can even be considered to be praise. Anyone in my Knight Regiment would be invincible to all of you, hahahaha.”

The Knight was not arrogant enough to say the entirety of Ling Tian City, but only its players. After all, he knew about the Fairies – the Fairy Clan had powerful might and healing abilities, and in front of the Fairy Clan, he didn’t have any right to be arrogant. However, in front of players, he could be as unbridled as he wished. This was because he fully believed that even the experts among the players could be easily crushed by anyone from his Knight Regiment, let alone himself as the Commander.

Xuanyuan Dia Wu flipped over her hand as a slim, silver long sword appeared in her hand. It looked as if the sword was covered with crystal powder, and it glittered with an icy glow – it was truly an exquisite weapon. She pointed the sword down at the ground as she calmly replied, “If that’s the case, then let me personally witness the power that can defeat all of the players of our city.”

“You?” The Knight in gold stared at the weapon and the incredible beauty in front of him as if he had seen something unbelievable. He then started to laugh uproariously, “Hahahaha… you… want to challenge me? Ahahahaha…”

The Knight in gold laughed so hard that he was bent over backwards, and his spittle flew everywhere. At the end, he almost couldn’t breathe, and the army behind him also laughed as if they had heard the funniest joke in the world.

The Knight in gold spent a great deal of effort calming himself down, and he placed the spear on his shoulder as he wagged a finger on his other hand towards Xuanyuan Dia Wu. “Come, little girl, didn’t you want to challenge me? Come, attack me however you want…”

However, that was all the Knight in gold could say. In the next second, he couldn’t even laugh anymore.

Xuanyuan Dia Wu suddenly moved. Although her explosive speed wasn’t as fast as Ling Chen’s, it was at an incredibly shocking level to most people. The Knight in gold only saw a blur as the cold-looking woman suddenly disappeared and 7 sharp auras flew at him from different directions, causing his entire body to feel incredibly cold… he was completely unprepared, and adding on the fact that the attacks were simply too fast, he was hit by the 7 rays of sword qi.

-12,694, -12,633, -12,620, -12,543, -25,138, -12,229, -25,202.

As a Knight with Gold grade equipment, his Defence was incredibly high, but despite this, each of Xuanyuan Dia Wu’s

attacks had dealt at least 10,000 damage. The 7 damage figures caused the Knight in gold to become incredibly dismayed, and the Forgotten City's soldiers stared with bulging eyes, unable to believe what they had just seen.

The Knight in gold was incredibly flustered. After taking those attacks, even if he was an idiot, he could tell that this player girl was not as simple as she seemed. He instantly roared out in anger as he brought the golden spear in front of him and quickly searched for Xuanyuan Dia Wu's position... however, before he could find where Xuanyuan Dia Wu had moved to, the 7 swords that had pierced through him once again flew over, stabbing towards his head, neck, back, waist, chest, and legs... unless he could move faster than these swords, it would be impossible for him to dodge or block these attacks even if he had 3 heads and 6 arms.

Chi, chi, chi, chi, chi, chi, chi... the Knight in gold was once again hit by the 7 swords. After passing through his body, the 7 swords flew out for a few metres before turning and flying towards him for a third time... this time, the Knight in gold had finally realised what was happening, and he was so scared that he felt as if his soul was going to escape from his body... it was common to see people throw their weapons to attack, but for weapons to attack and fly as if they had a life of their own, he felt as if he had seen a ghost!

After 3 rounds of attacks, they were followed by a fourth, then a fifth, a sixth, and a seventh... the 7 swords flew like meteors, continuously piercing through the Knight's body, their trajectories unable to be followed. They were able to hit him every time. Under the perfect combined attacks from the 7 swords, the Knight in gold was forced back repeatedly, and in a short period of time, he had been stabbed an innumerable number of times, causing him to scream. He desperately swung his spear around, and he would occasionally be able to hit 1 or 2 swords away, but after flying out a few metres, they would quickly return and once again savagely

pierce through his body.

This sort of situation was much more terrifying than 7 sword experts surrounding him and repeatedly attacking him. This was because he could knock the people back and defend against their attacks. Moreover, people could feel pain and be killed, while these swords could not. They could not die, they didn't fear his attacks, and he couldn't predict their trajectory from the wielder's hands. The Knight in gold continuously screamed as he was attacked by the swords, feeling incredibly bitter. Let alone counterattack, he was unable to even come close to Xuanyuan Dia Wu... in fact, he didn't know where Xuanyuan Dia Wu was even now.

"Arghhhh! Bastard!!!"

The Knight in gold, who had been tortured to the point that he wanted to die, roared out as he raised his hands, stabbing the golden spear in front of him, creating a large storm of energy. This was his strongest skill, and under the might of the Celestial grade power, the ground in front of him was split as sand filled the air, knocking the 7 swords away... however, before they fell to the ground, they once again rose up to the same position.

In the air standing on the back of the Lightning Falcon, Xuanyuan Dia Wu flicked her right wrist as the 7 swords gathered, piercing down towards the Knight in gold at a terrifying speed. The power of the 7 swords became one and passed through the energy storm released by the Knight in gold, heavily piercing his chest and causing him to be sent flying from his mount. He flew tens of metres and crashed into the army behind him, knocking a few soldiers to the ground.

Xuanyuan Dia Wu slowly descended from the air and looked forwards extremely calmly. The 7 swords returned to her side, floating around her and pointing at the Forgotten City's army, giving off incredibly sharp sword qi.

The Forgotten City's army was completely dumbfounded, and

they stared at Xuanyuan Dia Wu with shock and disbelief… the powerful Gold Commander, Su Zhi Zhan, had lost at the hands of a tiny player, and he didn't even have the strength to retaliate. What's more, the enemy was a young girl… how was this possible? How could something like this happen… weren't players the weakest existence in the Forgotten Continent? How could a player be so strong?!

To Ling Tian City, this sort of result was completely expected. Yun Feng bent over backwards laughing, "Hahaha… that was too funny… that slap to their faces was even louder than thunder, hahahah…"

Chapter 662 - The Ling Tian City's 3 Unforgiveable Crimes

The Knight in gold pitifully crawled up from the ground, his face bright red from fury. He hurriedly patted the ground around him, but found that he didn't even know where his golden spear had landed. He felt incredibly ashamed, and in his anger, he almost coughed up blood. He pointed with a trembling hand towards Xuanyuan Dia Wu and roared, "You... You damned little girl, you dared to launch a sneak attack! If you have the guts, then fight properly with this Commander!"

When he said this before the people from Ling Tian City, they all started laughing. The Forgotten City's army all lowered their heads... he had evidently claimed that he could defeat all the players from Ling Tian City by himself, and he had arrogantly wagged his finger, telling her to attack. And now, he had claimed that she had launched a sneak attack... all of the soldiers, especially the Commanders, felt that all of their face had been lost.

"Oi! Aren't you ashamed?" Xiao Qi walked out as she mercilessly mocked. "You were so arrogant just then, and you provoked our side. Trying to bully those weaker than you is already shameless enough, but now that you weren't able to defeat big sister Dia Wu, you actually dared to say that she used a sneak attack? Are your Forgotten City's Commander's faces on your bottoms?!"

After being humiliated like this in front of countless soldiers and the Forgotten Emperor, Su Zhi Zhan felt so ashamed that he could die. He felt an incredible amount of hatred towards Xuanyuan Dia Wu, but he also felt deeply fearful. Now that another female player had jumped out and started mocking him, he became incredibly furious and grabbed a silver spear from a Berserker near him as he roared, using the throwing skill 'Meteor Spear' as he launched the spear towards Xiao Qi.

“Goddamn!” Countless soldiers cried out together. Xiao Zhi Zhan’s attack was simply too sudden, despicable, shameless, and contemptible. He had just falsely accused Xuanyuan Dia Wu of launching a sneak attack on him, and he had just launched a true, gutless, sneak attack. What’s more, as a Commander of a Knight Regiment, he had attacked a female player – there was nothing more shameful than this.

Actually, after Xiao Zhi Zhan launched the attack, he immediately regretted it. Even though he was arrogant, he would never do such a thing normally. It was just that in his anger and humiliation he had lost all reasoning, and by the time he regretted it, it was already too late. The spear was already right in front of Xiao Qi. He was sure that female player would die from the strike, but even if she died, it would simply bring more shame upon him.

Seeing that the girl in red was about to die, some of the Forgotten City’s soldiers sighed. However, at that moment, a red glow flashed as her body burned with a crimson-red flame. Following this, the majestic cry of a bird sounded out from somewhere as a wave of flames burst forth from the young girl’s body towards the spear.

In an instant, the spear was completely drowned by the crimson-red flames, and as everyone watched on with dilated pupils, it melted into nothingness. The flames then continued forwards, bringing with it a scorching heat and slamming into Su Zhi Zhan’s chest...

-104,280!

Su Zhi Zhan was knocked to the ground by the flames as a damage figure of more than 100,000 rose from his body. However, that was not the end. After the flames hit Su Zhi Zhan’s body, it suddenly coiled around his body like a snake, turning into a ball of fire that continued to burn on his body...

-8000, -8000, -8000, -8000...

Su Zhi Zhan, who had turned into a fire-person, rolled on the ground screaming and wailing as damage figures quickly and continuously rose from his body. However, no matter how much he rolled and beat at himself, the crimson-ball of flames continued to burn. In fact, they became more and more intense, and the heat caused those around him to retreat in fear. They looked at the girl with 7 swords floating around her and the girl burning with fire in shock... wasn't it said that players were incredibly weak? Why were these 2 so ridiculously strong to the point that the Commander of a Knight Regiment... had been beaten black and blue by 2 girls!

"Hmph, I'll burn you a bit for now, but I'll incinerate you to nothing if you dare to keep doing such shameless things." Xiao Qi brought her hands back as the flames around her and Su Zhi Zhan's body died down.

After the flames were extinguished, Su Zhi Zhan's golden armour had been half-destroyed. After all, Xiao Qi's Vermillion Bird's Flames had a moderate Destruction effect. After escaping from the fire, Su Zhi Zhan did not immediately get up, but instead he lay on the ground, his eyes dimmed and his face deathly grey. He had been incredibly arrogant in front of the players before, but he had been utterly humiliated by these 2 girls. In fact, he had only survived because the other side had shown mercy to him. In just those few minutes, his entire world had collapsed, and his mind had gone completely blank. During the silence, a few people walked out and dragged Su Zhi Zhan's body back within the army.

As Su Zhi Zhan's body was dragged away, the atmosphere around Ling Tian City greatly changed. The Forgotten City's army, which had seemed so high and mighty, started to avert their gaze, feeling as if they were inferior to the players. This was why Li Xiao Xue had asked Xuanyuan Dia Wu to meet Su Zhi Zhan – to kill their morale. Landing a blow on Su Zhi Zhan was not very important, but the massive decrease to the army's morale was key. With Xiao

Qi joining in, things had gone even better than Li Xiao Xue had hoped.

On the battlefield, morale heavily influenced whether an army lived or died. When the Forgotten City's army had arrived, their morale had been extremely high, and they were completely confident in their victory. If they started fighting, Ling Tian City would not even have a chance at defending. However, now that the Forgotten City's army's morale had been decreased by half, the players' morale was greatly boosted, greatly decreasing the pressure on Ling Tian City.

Seeing this, the Forgotten Emperor had to personally come out. As the army parted, a middle-aged man with the air of a revered leader came out on a large warhorse. He was wearing a purple-gold robe, and he had sword-like eyebrows. He also radiated a sense of might and dignity – indeed, this was the Forgotten Emperor. Beside him was the mysterious elderly man in white as well as a man in black with an expressionless face. The two of them flanked the Forgotten Emperor on either side, neither of them giving off any aura. If they weren't by the Forgotten Emperor's side, no one would have even given them an extra glance.

"Can the Lady of the City come out now?" The Forgotten Emperor looked at Xuanyuan Dia Wu and Xiao Qi with great interest, an amicable expression on his face. There was no fury or fear on his face, and it was as if nothing had just happened.

Yun Meng Xin nodded at the crowd and walked out, flanked by Mu Bing Yao and Ying Xue to face the Forgotten Emperor. She did not say anything, and she instead waited for the Forgotten Emperor to speak.

After meeting with her last time, the Forgotten Emperor knew that the beautiful young Lady of the City was not so easy to deal with. As Yun Meng Xin approached, his expression became colder as he said in a voice filled with an imposing air, "Lady Yun, we meet again. Although I didn't want to see this day come, I have the

duty to maintain the peace and order of the Forgotten Continent's human world as the Emperor of the Forgotten Continent's humans. As such, I had no choice but to come again. Lady Yun, do you know of the 3 unforgiveable crimes committed by Ling Tian City?!"

3 unforgiveable crimes? A slight smile of condescension appeared on Yun Meng Xin's face, but she did not say anything, waiting for the Forgotten Emperor to finish speaking. Her lack of anger, rebuttal, or even any mocking or ridiculing surprised the Forgotten Emperor, and he didn't dare to meet her gaze as he forced out Ling Tian City's '3 unforgiveable crimes':

"The first crime is that Ling Tian City has used other clans' skills and resources on a large scale without the consent of the Royal City, causing the order of the markets of the human world and player's world to fall into chaos. The Forgotten City has been greatly harmed, and even some of the things left by the glorious Moon God Representative have been affected. The effects could last for over 100 years, which is a grave sin."

"The second crime is that although we don't know what you did, Ling Tian City bewitched the masses, poisoning people's hearts and tricking people to move from White Tiger City and Vermillion Bird City to Ling Tian City. This has caused divisions within the White Tiger City and Vermillion Bird City, and it has negatively impacted both cities greatly. This cannot be forgiven."

"The third crime is that not only was Ling Tian City constructed without the approval of the Royal City, but also, according to our investigations, the process of construction, the scale of your city, and the scale of development all clash with the Forgotten Continent's laws. In other words, the existence of Ling Tian City is a crime!"

"Lady Yun, do you admit guilt to these crimes?"

Hearing these '3 unforgiveable crimes', let alone Li Xiao Xue, Yun

Feng, the others, and even the players who had come to spectate, they all almost laughed out loud. What did it mean by ‘one can always trump up a charge against another’, or ‘those without shame are invincible under the heavens’, or ‘speaking with one’s eyes open while saying blind words’. In those few sentences, the Forgotten Emperor had become the manifestation of all of those things, allowing everyone present to experience the ‘grace’ and ‘dignity’ of an Emperor.

Regarding the first unforgiveable crime, anyone who came to Ling Tian City and didn’t have a negative IQ would know that it was a load of rubbish. Ling Tian City had the help of the Fairy Clan and Dwarf Clan, but they provided a higher standard of living and only brought benefits. Chaos? Negative effects lasting for a hundred years? Was the Forgotten Emperor mentally unstable or was he blind?

The second ‘unforgiveable crime’ was also extremely laughable. The reason many residents had moved from White Tiger City and Vermillion Bird City was because Ling Tian City was superior to those 2 cities in many ways. More importantly, the White Tiger’s Representative and the Vermillion Bird’s Representative were both in Ling Tian City, and by residing there they could be closer to them. Living in the same city as these Representatives was a great honour for the residents of those cities. Moreover, all of the residents had taken the initiative to move here without anything done by Ling Tian City, so how could it be said that they bewitched them or poisoned their hearts?

As for the third unforgiveable crime... the clashes with the Forgotten Continent’s laws – list them out! Even if you have to twist some of them, at least list them out!

The people from Ling Tian City could only stare at the Forgotten Emperor in amazement and respect... it must have taken him a great deal of effort and time to make up these ‘3 unforgiveable crimes’, and it must have taken an astoundingly thick face to say

them with such conviction... respect, respect!!

No less than expected from the Emperor. Even a fart from him was extraordinary.

Chapter 663 - The Underworld King's Daughter (1)

If Ling Chen were present, he would only have a single word to say to this Emperor: Scram!

Ling Chen did as he pleased, and any consequences were of secondary importance. Even if he destroyed his relationship with all of the humans of the Forgotten Continent, he would find a solution. However, Yun Meng Xin was different from Ling Chen – as a woman with meticulous thinking and the Lady of the Ling Tian City, there were far too many things she had to consider. Moreover, her decisions and words not only represented herself but also the entirety of Ling Tian City.

Yun Meng Xin looked away, unwilling to directly look at the mad Emperor as she calmly replied, "Since the Forgotten Emperor has already decided this for us and brought an army, why does it matter if Ling Tian City admits it or not? Forgotten Emperor, you directly said how you wished to 'sanction' Ling Tian City."

"Very well!" The Forgotten Emperor nodded, feeling quite pleased with Yun Meng Xin's response. "Looks like Lady Yun has woken up – this is great. Ling Tian City's crimes cannot be forgiven and have enraged all of the humans of the Forgotten Continent, and Ling Tian City should have been destroyed. However, Ling Tian City is, after all, a player's city, so it's understandable that you don't understand many of our Forgotten Continent's laws.

"Moreover, considering Ling Tian City's scale as well as the number of the Forgotten Continent's residents and players that have moved into it, many people will lose their homes if we destroy it. As such, although Ling Tian City's crimes are unforgiveable, we do not wish to destroy it unless it is absolutely necessary. If Ling Tian City submits to the Forgotten City, not only can Ling Tian City be saved, but your position as Lady of the City,

as well as the management elders, can also be kept.

“What the Forgotten City wants is to be able to monitor and manage Ling Tian City. We will manage Ling Tian City when you are in violation of any of the Forgotten Continent’s laws or bring negative effects to the Forgotten Continent, preventing your sins from becoming greater. As for Ling Tian City’s current development, we will not hinder it. After all, Ling Tian City is a player’s city, and we shouldn’t involve ourselves too much with it.” After the Forgotten Emperor finally finished speaking, everyone from Ling Tian City felt as if their lungs were going to burst from anger.

Monitor and control? Shouldn’t involve yourselves too much with it? Pshaw! When all was said and done, the Forgotten City would effectively have complete control over Ling Tian City – the so-called ‘shouldn’t involve ourselves too much with it’ was merely a fart that not even an idiot would believe!

Although the ‘3 unforgiveable crimes’ had already shown everyone just how shameless the Forgotten Emperor was, everyone wanted to throw hot dung at his face after they heard what he had said… if the Forgotten Emperor’s face were shaved off and laid on the ground, it would be enough to circle the Forgotten Continent twice and tie a knot as well!

Facing the Forgotten Emperor’s shameless and despicable words, Yun Meng Xin remained calm as she replied, “If the Forgotten City wishes to destroy Ling Tian City, it’ll be difficult for us to save it. If everything is as the Forgotten Emperor said, we can at least allow Ling Tian City to continue to exist, so your conditions are not unacceptable. However, Ling Tian City is not only owned by me, so I need some time to talk with others before giving the Forgotten Emperor a reply.”

“Lady Yun is indeed wise and intelligent; no wonder why you are hailed as the Lady of the City at such a young age,” The Forgotten Emperor nodded in satisfaction. “Since it’s like this, I will give

Lady Yun some time... however, I will only give you one day. Tomorrow, I will come back to this place to hear Lady Yun's answer at this time. Whether or not Ling Tian City exists after tomorrow will depend on Lady Yun's answer... I trust that with your intellect you won't let me down." After speaking, the Forgotten Emperor raised a finger as the massive army instantly started to retreat.

Before the Forgotten Emperor left, he said seriously to Yun Meng Xin, "Remember, this is the Forgotten Continent, and you players are only outsiders."

After the Forgotten City's army left, everyone came and surrounded Yun Meng Xin, a heavy expression on their faces. They all knew that Yun Meng Xin definitely wouldn't agree to the Forgotten Emperor's conditions; she had merely bought them some time.

"Big sister Meng Xin, what should we do?" Xiao Qi asked worriedly.

"Ai," Yun Meng Xin lightly sighed. "Looks like this battle is unavoidable."

"Indeed, things are not looking good for Ling Tian City," Li Xiao Xue helplessly smiled.

Although a single day's worth of time is quite short, it should be enough to move people and make preparations," Yun Meng Xin turned around and seriously said. "Big brother, Alliance Master Xiao, immediately notify all of the guilds that all players are to gather elsewhere and wait for orders. Xiao Xue, close the Class Change Hall within 10 hours and tell the 10 elders to make preparations for certain matters. Seal the Business Street, turn off all business and entertainment facilities, and take the residents to the safe region. Chief Dilo, immediately gather the entire clan and move them to the Nameless Ridge within 15 hours. Also, remember to take the things that cannot be abandoned."

“No! We definitely won’t go! We built Ling Tian City with our hands and sweat, and it gave us hope and a future. How can we desert it in this crisis?” Chief Dilo furiously shook his head as he clenched his fists.

Yun Meng Xin shook her head and said in a soft voice, “Chief Dilo, I can fully understand the Dwarves’ passion and emotions, but this isn’t escaping from fear. The Dwarf Clan has no battle strength, so you won’t be able to help and may cause many Dwarves to die… you’re different from us players in that you only have a single life. If you’re alive, we still have hope to rebuild our home with your talent and wisdom even if Ling Tian City is destroyed. If you all die in the battle, there will not be any hope for rebuilding, and you will only endanger your clan, making you the greatest sinner of the Dwarf Clan…”

Chief Dilo lowered his head as he said in pain, “I know… but Ling Tian City definitely won’t be destroyed! The gods will punish those evil humans!”

Yun Meng Xin turned to look at Greenwood, not knowing how to start. Greenwood nodded at her, saying, “Lady of the City, rest assured, the Fairy Clan’s average strength is higher than that of the humans by at least two grades, and apart from the elderly and the young, we have a thousand Fairies who won’t let them do as they wish.”

“And me…”

A voice as low and heavy as a mountain came from beneath their feet, shocking everyone. Chief Dilo suddenly raised his head as he excitedly cried out, “Lord guardian god!”

“They have shown me the greed and wickedness of humans, making me feel disgusted. As the guardian of Ling Tian City, I will do all I can to fulfill my duty. They will not easily pass the land I protect.”

“Thank you, Mountain Giant,” Yun Meng Xin earnestly said as

she looked at the ground.

What had happened in front of the city gates quickly spread throughout the entirety of China and then the entire world, creating massive waves. The system's Royal City had been suppressed by a player's city, forcing them to threaten to destroy the player's city... this had never happened before in the history of virtual games.

The atmosphere in Ling Tian City greatly changed, and as the second day drew closer, the ever-bustling Ling Tian City became quieter and quieter...

.....

Underworld, Underworld Blood Lake.

"You're... the Underworld King?!" Ling Chen gritted his teeth, using all of his strength to try to escape from the invisible bindings around him. However, this was futile, and he was unable to move even a finger.

"Apart from this Underworld King, who else could tear open a passage to this space?" The Underworld King's voice boomed like thunder, causing the Underworld Blood Lake to tremble continuously. The Underworld King was evidently enraged – the power that could suppress even the Undead War God made it so that the blood within Ling Chen almost stopped flowing. "Over the past thousands of years, you're the first person to reach the Underworld Blood Lake without this Underworld King's permission. The Fire Purgatory has collapsed, and Chi Xuan Wu Hen's aura is gone. It looks like you defeated him. For you to be able to defeat the Undead War God and have the power to reach here, this Underworld King never thought that you were not one of the Undead of my Underworld but a living creature!"

It was normal for the powerful Underworld King to be able to recognise that Ling Chen was not an Undead. His gaze turned towards the Underworld Blood Lake behind Ling Chen as he

furiously said, “Although I don’t know how a living creature like you was not affected by the deadly miasma and reach here safely, you must die for daring to intrude into the Underworld forbidden area no matter who you are! And after you’re dead, you’ll be melted in the Underworld Blood Lake!!”

The Underworld King stretched out his hand towards Ling Chen as a ball of black energy gathered in his hand and then covered Ling Chen. Under the terrifying bindings, Ling Chen was unable to move at all, and he could only feel the sense of death coming closer and closer.

Was this the power of the Saint Destroyer grade? It was so oppressive that it made him despair!

“Die. You’re the first person to die under this Underworld King’s hand and be buried in the Underworld Blood Lake in thousands of years. Whether or not you can become an Undead of my Underworld will depend on your luck!”

The darkness in the Underworld King’s hand began to take shape, and in the next second, it would send Ling Chen into the abyss of death. At this moment, a petite figure broke through the water of the Underworld Blood Lake and rose up into the air as a system announcement sounded in Ling Chen’s ears.

“Ding… your pet Leng’Er’s Underworld King power has awoken, and all of her stats have been greatly increased. Her Underworld King power and Underworld King soul has awoken, and she has unlocked the Underworld King’s secret skill [Underworld Blood Moon Samsara].”

“Leng…Er…” Ling Chen subconsciously called out as a confused thought entered his mind: Leng’Er? Underworld King power? What did that mean? What was going on…

The Underworld King’s shock was much greater than his, and he roared out, “Who is it? Who is it that can enter the Underworld Lake!! Wait… how can you have the same aura of the Underworld

Royal Clan as me?!”

The blood-red water quickly fell from the petite figure, revealing Leng’Er’s face and body. Leng’Er looked just as she had been before, and only her dark eyes looked deeper.

When the Underworld King saw Leng’Er’s appearance and the aura from Leng’Er’s body, he felt as if he had been struck by lightning, and he froze on the spot. His face started to twist as his entire body trembled, and the darkness energy that he had been gathering immediately disappeared. He stared at Leng’Er with a pair of incredibly wide eyes… time seemed to stop, and after a long while, he finally spoke with a trembling voice, “Chan’Er, is it you… my Chan’Er… is it really you…”

After saying these few words, the Underworld King choked up with emotion. This peak-level existence in the Mystic Moon world, who controlled the entire Underworld and was someone that even the 3 Moon Goddesses dared not to offend, was trembling like a willow in the wind. Tears streamed down his savage-looking face, and his gaze fell on Leng’Er’s face, not looking away or even daring to blink, feeling that this was a dream…

Chapter 664 - The Underworld King's Daughter (2)

The Underworld King started to move towards Leng'Er, staggering along. Facing the Underworld King, who seemed to have lost himself, Leng'Er remained just as calm as normal. As the Underworld King came closer, she gave Ling Chen a questioning gaze, as if she had been scared by the Underworld King's face. She lightly floated over to Ling Chen and hid behind him.

The Underworld King stopped walking and gazed at the emotionless Leng'Er as he cried out, "Chan'Er, it's me! Don't you recognise me? I'm your father! I've been desperately looking for you all these years, and every day I've dreamed of bringing you back... the heavens have truly pitied me and brought you back... you're finally back... I'm your father, the Underworld King! Can you not... recognise me anymore?"

Ling Chen's eyes widened.

Father...

The Underworld King was Leng'Er's father... and Leng'Er was the Underworld King's daughter?

The chaotic emotions within Ling Chen mixed into 4 words: What... the... bloody... hell?!

"Fa... ther...?" Leng'Er looked up at Ling Chen and asked in a small voice, "Master, what... is a father?"

Ling Chen was speechless. He didn't know how to answer her question.

"M-Master?! You're calling him master?!" The teary-eyed Underworld King reacted as if he had been smashed in the head by a brick, and he became incredibly furious as he stared at Ling Chen with a burning gaze, "You... You damned human! Do you know who she is? She's my daughter, the Underworld King's daughter!

She’s the next Underworld Queen who will inherit my position, and yet... and yet, a measly human like you told her to call you master! Preposterous! Unforgiveable!! You... You... if it weren't for the fact that Chan’Er was here, this Underworld King would have destroyed you into ten thousand pieces!”

“Destroy me into ten thousand pieces? I’m afraid you won’t be able to,” Ling Chen had calmed down and gathered his thoughts by now, and he spoke neither fast nor slow.

“What did you say?” The Underworld King was furious, and killing intent filled the space around them as he gathered darkness energy and prepared to smash it towards Ling Chen.

However, Ling Chen calmly looked at him before slowly saying, “Underworld King, could it be that you haven’t noticed that there is a Soul Sacrifice Contract between us that she forced onto me? Moreover, it’s her second Soul Sacrifice Contract. If it were the first time, she would be fine even if I died. However, this is her second, and last, Soul Sacrifice Contract. With this contract, my life determines her life, and my death determines her death. We essentially share a life. If I don’t die, she won’t die, but if you kill me, she’ll also die! Are you sure you still want to kill me?”

“You!” The Underworld King furiously roared, unable to lower his raised hand.

“Moreover, you seem to not have realised that only half her soul – no, not even half of her soul – is remaining. Not only that, she doesn’t have a real body,” Ling Chen continued to speak. Qi Yue had told him all about the Soul Sacrifice Contract and Leng’Er’s state when he had first met her. “Although I don’t know why she’s like this, it’s evident that she must have received massive damage in the past, causing her body to be destroyed and her soul to be mostly destroyed. She’s only able to continue existing because she has a special Undead body and the Soul Sacrifice Contract. If it weren’t for the Soul Sacrifice Contract allowing her to bind herself to someone’s life, she would have vanished from this world long

ago. However, because her soul is damaged, she's unable to remember all of her memories, and she only has her subconscious left. When I met her, she had forgotten all of her past, and she only knew that she loved dolls."

The Underworld King's hand fell powerlessly, and all of the fury in his eyes was replaced with sorrow and self-blame. He looked at Leng'Er carefully, and he found that everything Ling Chen had said was true. He held his head as he painfully screamed, "It's all my fault for being so useless! Even as the Underworld King, I was unable to protect my daughter. If it weren't for my Underworld Royal Clan's 'Underworld King Never Dies' and 'Soul Sacrifice', I would have lost Chan'Er and caused the Underworld Royal Clan's lineage to end..."

"Although it's been so many years, the heavens have finally brought my Chan'Er back." Emotions of joy and grief mixed chaotically within the Underworld King's heart. He wanted to come closer to Leng'Er, but he was also afraid of scaring her. He stretched out his large and coarse hand, wiping away his tears as he warmly smiled at Leng'Er and spoke in a gentle voice, "Chan'Er, I know you've lost your memories and don't remember your father, but don't worry. Now that the heavens have brought you home, I'll do my best to help you remember the things from the past... just close your eyes and let me see what you've gone through in the outside world, alright?"

With the Underworld King's status and temperament, it was the first time in 10,000 years that he had spoken in such a tone. When Leng'Er heard his voice, she continued to stare at Ling Chen, so Ling Chen said to her in a small voice, "Leng'Er, close your eyes and don't think about anything."

"Mm..." Leng'Er was very willing to listen to Ling Chen, and she closed her eyes.

At that moment, the Underworld King also closed his eyes and stretched out his palm towards where Leng'Er was. A very dim,

grey light was released from his hand until it touched Leng'Er's body, connecting the Underworld King and Leng'Er.

Ling Chen knew what the Underworld King was doing, and he did not make any noise. The space fell into silence, and initially, he could see some anger on the Underworld King's face, but it was then replaced with pain, which gradually disappeared until his expression calmed down.

Less than a minute later, the Underworld King opened his eyes. At that moment, Ling Chen felt the bindings around him disappear, and he regained his freedom. The aura and killing intent weighing down on him also disappeared. Ling Chen hurriedly stretched his body, then looked at the Underworld King. He found that the way the Underworld King looked at him had greatly changed – all of the rage and killing intent was gone, replaced by warmness and a hint of gratitude.

"Young human, please forgive my rudeness from before."

The Underworld King's words shocked Ling Chen. The powerful Underworld King had actually apologised to him... just 2 minutes ago, he had been roaring about destroying him into ten thousand pieces.

"Members of our Underworld Royal Clan can read each other's memories, and I've seen everything that she went through," The Underworld King's voice became calm. "During these past years, I've never given up on looking for Chan'Er because I felt that she was still in this world. I've searched the place that she was in, the Forest of Bones, before; however, I never thought that not only was her body destroyed, but her soul was also damaged. I would never have imagined that she would use a Soul Sacrifice Contract with the Warring Palace Skeleton to survive. As such, her Underworld King aura completely disappeared, so it was impossible for me to find her by her aura..."

After a long sigh, he walked forwards and patted Ling Chen's

arm, “Thank you, young human. I can see from her memories that you saved her. Although the Soul Sacrifice Contract was forced on you, you treated her very well after you brought her away. You treated her so well that I feel ashamed as a father. Moreover, you brought her here, allowing me to finally see my daughter again… I, the Underworld King, never like to owe anyone, but I owe you so much that I don’t know how to repay you.”

From Leng’Er’s memories, he could see countless years of darkness, fear, and loneliness. After Ling Chen came, there were many pleasant memories – he gave her the dolls she loved so much every day and many other toys and told her all sorts of stories. He taught her about things that she didn’t know about, and he did his best to make her happy… the Underworld King could tell that Ling Chen was incredibly good to her and had no ulterior motive.

If someone was good to the Underworld King, he wouldn’t feel anything. After all, there were countless beings that wanted to curry favour with him to the point that he felt annoyed. However, this was different for anyone who treated his daughter truly well. He felt like he had failed Leng’Er, and it was Ling Chen who had taken her out of the lonely Forest of Bones, given her a new life, and made her happy every day. And now, he had brought her back to his side.

This was the first time the Underworld King had ever felt so grateful to someone, despite the fact that he was a human.

Ling Chen smiled. “No need to thank me. Since she follows me and calls me ‘master’, I have to take responsibility for her. Everything I did was something I should have done, so there’s nothing to thank me for. Moreover, Leng’Er’s is very cute and good, so anyone would want to be good to her. Coming here was merely a coincidence… it’s just that… are you completely sure Leng’Er’s your daughter?”

“She’s definitely my daughter. Let alone 10,000 years, I would still recognise her even if 100,000 or even a million years had

passed," The Underworld King said sorrowfully. "The fact that she was able to enter the Underworld Blood Lake is solid proof. The Underworld Blood Lake will devour all living and dead creatures in the world, even the Moon Gods of the Moon God Clan. However, only the Underworld Royal Clan does not fear it, and we can instead absorb energy from the lake. The Underworld Royal Clan has always only had a sole successor, so she is the only Underworld Queen of her generation. How could I mistake her aura? And also... weren't you curious as to why you weren't affected by the miasma when you entered the Underworld? It's because the Underworld Royal Clan possesses great resistance of miasma, so the miasma won't harm you no matter how dense the miasma is with her by your side. That's why you were able to arrive here safely."

Chapter 665 - Being Forced Into A Marriage

Ling Chen slowly nodded. “So it was like that... wait! You just said that you and Leng’Er... err, your daughter, have been separated for 10,000 years?”

“That’s right.” The Underworld King heavily nodded. “10,000 years... a whole 10,000 years. 10,000 years have passed in the blink of an eye, and if Leng’Er’s body hadn’t been destroyed and her soul hadn’t been damaged, she would have already matured and may have become the next Underworld Queen... however, it’s already good enough that she’s back.”

10,000 years... it had actually been such a long time. To humans, 10,000 years was something that they could not even comprehend. Ling Chen thought for a moment before hesitantly asking, “Then is it possible for you to tell me how you and Leng’Er were separated... after being with Leng’Er for so long, I want to know about her past.”

“The Shura’s Devastation,” The Underworld King answered. Because of the things he had seen from Leng’Er’s memories, he was incredibly thankful to Ling Chen, and he also deeply trusted him. “I’m sure that with your experiences you already know what the Shura’s Devastation was. Countless beings died, bringing disaster to the entire Forgotten Continent. In the end, even the Underworld was caught in it. Chan’Er and I were mercilessly attacked by the Shura without any preparation. The Shura was simply too powerful, and even despite fighting with my full strength, I was unable to stop him. I was heavily wounded, and I lost my ability to fight for a long time.

“Luckily, my Underworld Generals Warring Palace and Warring Star were able to escape with Chan’Er. Afterwards, I could not find them, but because of the connection between our bloodlines, I knew that Chan’Er was still in this world... after the Shura’s Devastation, the Demon Beast Clan tried to bring more disaster.

The Underworld had been greatly weakened, so we could only close all of the Underworld Doors, and I, who had temporarily lost the ability to fight, could only hide like a turtle in the Underworld Blood Lake to recover my strength, and I was unable to look for Chan'Er."

"Finally, after the Demon Beast Clan had finally been vanquished, I had recovered some of my strength, and I started to desperately search for Chan'Er. Afterwards, we found Warring Star's remains at the Demon Beast Clan's battlefield, but I could not find Warring Palace and Chan'Er... from then onwards, I searched for 10,000 years, but I was unable to find Chan'Er... 10,000 years!" The Underworld King raised his head. After feeling immense joy from finding his daughter, he was filled with immeasurable sorrow and aggrievement.

Ling Chen didn't know about Warring Star, but he clearly remembered Warring Palace. Evidently, they had been attacked by the Demon Beast Clan 10,000 years ago. Warring Star had died to stop the Demon Beast Clan while Warring Palace took Leng'Er and escaped. As they escaped, its lifeforce was about to run out and was about to turn into a skeleton, but its undying will allowed him to continue to remain by Leng'Er's side as a skeleton. Even after 10,000 years, he still had the willpower to protect her... until Xi Ling used the Heavenly Wrath of the 9 Suns to kill it and was once again killed by Ling Chen afterwards.

Ling Chen couldn't help but respect the Underworld General called 'Warring Palace'.

"Regardless, the father and daughter have been reunited. Although Leng'Er's currently unable to remember her past, as long as she has enough time after she's returned to the Underworld... Oh! Right, Underworld King, did you say there were methods to help her restore her memory? Is that true?" Ling Chen looked over at Leng'Er behind him, who had no idea what they were talking about. His expression was calm, but the shock within him was

unable to be calmed down... Leng'Er, who he had coincidentally picked up and spent every day making happy, was actually the Underworld King's daughter, and she was next in line to become the Underworld Queen. How could he feel calm in the face of such a terrifying truth?

Even more importantly, because of the Soul Sacrifice Contract, Leng'Er was his humanoid pet! An Underworld Queen was his pet, bound by an inviolable contract, sharing a life with him... Ohmygod!

This journey to the Underworld had simply been too eventful! Just what else could happen?

"There are indeed many methods." The Underworld King nodded, but then he frowned and looked at Leng'Er before turning his gaze to the Underworld Blood Lake. "Chan'Er has lost her memories because her soul is incomplete. As long as we can awaken the damaged portion of her soul, she will naturally recover her memories, feelings, intelligence, and speaking abilities. Ai, although the Underworld Blood Lake can heal part of our power, it's unable to heal our souls. Although there are many ways to repair one's soul, not only are they incredibly tough, they also need an incredibly long time."

"How long?" Ling Chen asked as he frowned.

"The shortest takes 30 years, while the longest takes 70 or so years," The Underworld King calmly replied.

Ling Chen was speechless. Perhaps this amount of time didn't mean much to the Underworld King, but that was an incredibly long time to humans.

"Not only that, the soul will be greatly stimulated throughout the repairing process, causing pain to the soul. Moreover, there's a chance of failure," The Underworld King continued. However, Ling Chen strangely felt that the Underworld King seemed incredibly calm as he spoke... as if he had some other method. He

definitely wouldn't be willing to use those methods on Leng'Er.

"Could it be that there are better methods?" Ling Chen asked.

"There are! Of course there are!" The Underworld King turned and looked at him with a burning gaze, making Ling Chen feel quite uncomfortable. The Underworld King smiled, "Before looking at Chan'Er's memories, I definitely wouldn't have used such a method. However, there's no problem..." The Underworld King's smile became deeper and stranger, "Not only will the effects be evident within a short period of time, but there also aren't any side-effects or pain. Moreover, not only will it restore Chan'Er's soul, but it will also slowly repair her body, turning her from a half-soul, half-corporeal existence into a true fleshly being."

"What's more, the only person who can help her with this is you, who Chan'Er has the Soul Sacrifice Contract with," the Underworld King said as he gave Ling Chen a deep look and patted him on the shoulder.

"Me?" Ling Chen asked in surprise.

"That's right. This is because Chan'Er made a Soul Sacrifice Contract with you, and it's the last one she can use in her lifetime. With the Soul Sacrifice Contract, her body and soul are both attached to you. You should know that no one else can touch Leng'Er but you because of the Soul Sacrifice Contract. As such, you can use your soul and life force to awaken the dormant part of Chan'Er's soul and help her slowly regain her body... only you can do it!"

Although he had heard every word the Underworld King had said, Ling Chen felt incredibly confused, and he asked, "What should I do then?"

"Very simple." The Underworld King tapped his chin before saying in a low voice, "Consummate with her."

"Consummate?" Ling Chen frowned in confusion, and after

falling silent for a while, his eyes widened as he asked, “By consummate, you couldn’t mean… mean…”

The Underworld King grinned. “Nonsense! What else could it mean? Most of Chan’Er’s memories are filled with you, and although she doesn’t know it, she’s heavily dependent on you. Although you’re a human, I can tell that you’re quite extraordinary from Chan’Er’s memories. For you to be able to defeat even the Undead War God, even I feel some respect towards you, so I suppose you’re good enough for Chan’Er! Most importantly, you’re very good to Chan’Er and adding on the fact that your consummation can help her regain her soul and body, I think this is perfect.”

“B-B-B-But…” Ling Chen started to stammer.

“What do you mean, ‘but’?” The Underworld King glared at him. “Could it be that the Underworld King’s daughter, the next Underworld Queen, is not good enough for you?”

“That’s not the problem!” Just as Ling Chen was wondering if his journey could be any more eventful, it had suddenly become plenty more eventful. The Underworld King’s words shocked Ling Chen out of his wits, making him feel at a loss as to what to say. “Don’t you think… Leng’Er’s still too young… she’s still a child, so how could she…”

“Young? How is she too young? My daughter is 10,823 years old this year! Even your great-great-great-great-great grandfather would think she’s too old! How could she be too young?” The Underworld King roared.

Ling Chen choked on his words… although Leng’Er looked like a young girl, she was actually more than 10,000 years old, so he was unable to use this excuse anymore. He scratched his head as he hurriedly said, “Underworld King, you should know that I’m a human, while Leng’Er belongs to your Underworld Royal Clan and is, therefore, an Undead. For a living being and an Undead to…

err…”

“Undead? Who told you that the Underworld Royal Clan are all Undead?” The Underworld King retorted before pointing at Leng’Er. “Leng’Er is my daughter. Have you heard about Undead having children before?”

Ling Chen was speechless… indeed, he had never heard of such a thing before.

However, wasn’t the Underworld King the Emperor of countless Undead in the Underworld? As the Emperor of Undead, how could he not be an Undead? Moreover, from Leng’Er’s attacks, he could tell that they were evidently Darkness-attributed.

The Underworld King calmly replied, “The Underworld Royal Clan are not Undead, nor are we living beings. Our ancestor was the ancient… forget it, this is my Underworld Royal Clan’s secret, and there’s no need for you to know. You can think of it as the Underworld Royal Clan having an affinity with the aura of death and the power of death but with a living body and an Undead soul! Furthermore, I can promise you on the honour of the Underworld Royal Clan that there will be no problems with an Underworld Queen consummating with a living creature. Even having children will be no problem!

Ling Chen: “…..” (What the hell is that supposed to mean?!)

The Underworld King suddenly became infuriated. “You keep looking for reasons to refuse this. Could it be that you look down on the Underworld Royal Clan and think that my daughter isn’t good enough for you?”

“No! Of course not!” Ling Chen immediately waved my hands,

“Could it be that you don’t want to save my daughter?” The Underworld King became even more furious.

“Of course not…” Ling Chen almost felt like crying… what was this progression of events?!

“Then what are you hesitating for?” The Underworld King grabbed Ling Chen and roared at him, almost causing his eardrums to burst, “I’ve been separated from Chan’Er for 10,000 years, and I’ve been dreaming for her to call me father. And now, she’s right in front of me, but she doesn’t recognise me. A young man like you who hasn’t been a father before wouldn’t understand this sort of pain.”

“I don’t want to wait for even a second! I’m going to immediately announce to the entire city that I’ve found my Chan’Er and that I’ve also found a son-in-law! Tonight, you’re going to get married and help Chan’Er recover her memories so that she can at least call me father. If her memories haven’t come back by tomorrow, t-t-t-then… don’t even hope of leaving!”

Ling Chen: “@#$%…”

Chapter 666 - The Princess' Grand Wedding

The ordinarily quiet and heavy atmosphere in the Underworld Royal City became raucous and bustling because a shocking piece of news had spread throughout the city in half a day... the Underworld King's daughter, who had been lost for 10,000 years, was back!

Just this alone would have caused the entire city to celebrate for 3 days and 3 nights, but that wasn't all... not only had the Underworld King found his daughter, but he had also found a son-in-law, and the wedding was going to be today at the Underworld King's Residence!

Even the stupidest and slowest Undead would feel that this was a bit too sudden! They had been separated for 10,000 years, and now after finding her, he was immediately arranging a marriage?! Many Undead wondered whether it was that they had become unfamiliar with the times or if the Underworld King was a bit too hasty!

No matter what, the marriage of the Underworld King's daughter was set in stone. Right after noon, the entirety of the Underworld Royal City was filled with glowing lights, and there were people hurrying around the Underworld King's Residence, hurriedly making preparations, creating a bustling scene. Moreover, the Underworld King had personally given the order that all preparations were to be ready by 7pm even if all the high-grade Undead were to be used as labourers as well, or the consequences would be dire.

This was no laughing matter!

However, as the other main character of this event, the Underworld King did not care about Ling Chen's opinion at all, and he had completely ignored it.

"Underworld King! This is an incredibly important event for

your daughter! How can you rush through it like this?" Ling Chen yelled at the Underworld King.

"It's because she's my daughter that I'm in such a hurry! Otherwise, why else would I go through all this hassle?" The Underworld King roared back.

"Fudge! When has there ever been a father who throws his daughter at another man? Even if you don't feel bad about this, I feel bad about it!"

"Who cares if you feel bad! You have the Soul Sacrifice Contract, and Chan'Er won't ever be able to leave you. Apart from you, who else can she marry? It's going to happen sooner or later, so I might as well make it happen sooner! That way, Chan'Er's soul and body can be restored earlier! I don't want to wait even an extra second! Can you understand the feeling of having your daughter in front of you but not able to recognise you? Can you?!"

"But..."

"The hell are you still saying 'but' for?! There's no way to get rid of the Soul Sacrifice Contract; could it be that you want my Underworld King's daughter to follow you for life without even officially having a title? If you continue to try to push this off... do you think I wouldn't dare to tell the Moon God Clan that you have the Lunar Scourge?!"

"How did you know?!"

"Of course it's from seeing Chan'Er's memories! Even if she doesn't recognise the Lunar Scourge, do you think I wouldn't recognise it?"

"....."

"I've already announced my daughter's marriage to the Underworld, and everyone knows about it. All of the Mayors and Underworld Lords are hurrying here, and the Underworld Royal City has long since started preparing. Even the bridal room has

been prepared! If you don't marry my daughter, what will happen to my face as the Underworld King? How will I continue to stay in the Underworld?! Even if the sky falls, you and my daughter will still be getting married tonight!!"

Ling Chen could only give up. If he continued yelling at the Underworld King, it would all be futile.

Ling Chen found that he couldn't talk any sense into the Underworld King in front of him, and he had seen all of the preparations in the Underworld Royal City. Even if he still felt conflicted, all he could do was cry to himself. He hadn't agreed to this whole thing, nor could he agree. However, the Underworld King didn't even need him to agree, and he had announced the matter to the entire Underworld, and everyone had started making preparations. Now, even if Ling Chen wasn't willing, there was nothing he could do. If he continued to refuse, he would cause the Underworld King to lose face in front of the entire Underworld, and it would make the situation much, much worse.

Forgetting that this was within the virtual game and in the Underworld, the other party was Leng'Er... how could he do this?

On the other hand, Leng'Er silently sat next to Ling Chen obediently, hazily and curiously looking around the Underworld Royal City and the Underworld King' Residence. She couldn't understand the words being said between Ling Chen and the Underworld King at all, and she didn't know that she had just been given away by her father who she had been separated from for 10,000 years.

Sitting in one of the rooms in the Underworld King's Residence, Ling Chen could only plead, "Underworld King, can I leave for a bit...?"

He was unable to contact the outside world in the Underworld, and the outside world was unable to contact him. He hadn't logged off for a whole day, and he should probably log off to at least meet

with the others for a while. However, before he could finish his sentence, the Underworld King furiously roared back, “No way! You’re not allowed to go anywhere! If you go, my Chan’Er will leave with you. If you don’t make it back for the wedding, what will we do? Absolutely not! Before Chan’Er’s able to remember me as her father, I won’t allow you to take even half a step outside the Underworld King’s Residence!

As such, Ling Chen could only obediently stay inside. Fight? How could he fight the Saint Destroyer grade Underworld King?! Run… where could he run? And even if he got away, the Underworld King would be completely infuriated, and running would cause him to lose great face. The consequences would be unimaginable. The old fellow was evidently using this to give him pressure.

Although the Underworld King was in a rush to help Leng’Er recover her memories, this old fellow’s actions… were evidently pushing him to screw his daughter! It simply didn’t feel right!

Very soon, it was 7pm, and as Ling Chen was still desperately thinking of ideas, the time for the wedding arrived. The process in the Underworld was completely different to what Ling Chen was used to. Once it was time, he was pushed by a smiling Undead granny into a large hall, and Leng’Er was also naturally by his side.

As soon as he entered the hall, an extremely dense deathly aura flooded towards him. The Underworld King’s face was red and ruddy, and he sat in the highest position. There was also countless other high-grade, powerful Undead gathered. When Ling Chen and Leng’Er appeared, the hall burst into noise, filling with cheers, praising, and flattering…

“Congratulations Lord Underworld King for finding the Princess and a suitable suitor. These two simultaneous happy events are a blessing to the Underworld!”

“The heavens blessed the Underworld by bringing our lost Princess back. What a wonderful occasion! I wish the Princess

every happiness!”

“Lord Underworld King is wise and mighty, and the Underworld will forever be at peace! I wish the Princess and Lord Son-In-Law to be eternally in love!”

“Lord Son-In-Law… err, although your deathly aura is quite weak, you still look like an extraordinary fellow! Congratulations Lord Underworld King for finding a son-in-law!”

Hearing these words, the Underworld King waved his hand as he laughed, saying, “My son-in-law doesn’t have much deathly aura because he’s not an Undead but a regular human. Although he looks quite young, he’s quite extraordinary. The matter with the Fire Purgatory collapsing was because of him, and even Chi Xuan Wu Hen died at his hands. Otherwise, how could this Underworld King allow him to marry my daughter? Hahahaha.”

The thing that had caused the Underworld King to be incredibly furious was now something he boasted greatly about. A useless son-in-law and a son-in-law who could defeat the Undead War God were completely different. Once the Underworld King said that, the way that the Undead looked at Ling Chen completely changed… the Undead War God Chi Xuan Wu Hen was more powerful than even the 8 Underworld Gods, and he was second only to the Underworld King in the entire Underworld. It wasn’t too surprising that the Underworld King’s son-in-law was a human – after all, the Underworld King’s wife had been a human too. However, this human looked so young and weak, yet he had defeated the Undead War God?

Many of the powerful Undead who knew how powerful the Undead War God was felt quite doubtful, but since the Underworld King had said so, that was that. Instantly, a new wave of praises burst forth:

“As expected from Lord Underworld King’s son-in-law! Not only is he handsome and heroic-looking, but he's also so accomplished

at such a young age! He's simply shocking and incomparable!"

"Only such a person is good enough for our Princess!"

"Congratulations Lord Underworld King for obtaining such an excellent son-in-law! The days ahead for the Underworld look bright!"

.....

Ling Chen stood there like a puppet while listening to the cacophony of voices. Looking at the hall full of high-grade Undead, Ling Chen found that they were just like living humans. Although they were Undead and were incredibly powerful, they would still flatter and try to curry favour with their overlord.

However, this wasn't too surprising. After all, high-grade Undead had an intellect that was not inferior to normal humans. In that case, the way they did things was most likely quite similar to the human world's way of doing things. It was just that the process for this wedding made Ling Chen almost cough up blood.

This was how the Princess's Grand Wedding went:

The first step was for the Underworld King to use his thunderous voice to announce that his daughter, Ming Xiao Chan, and the Forgotten Continent's Ling Chen were now married.

The second step was to loudly declare... for them to be taken to the bridal room!

Following this, the marriage ceremony came to a conclusion.

All that remained was for the Undead to wildly celebrate, none of which concerned Ling Chen and Leng'Er. When Ling Chen was pushed into the bridal room by the Undead granny, he desperately wanted to rush over to the Underworld King and roar into his face, "How the hell is this a wedding for the Princess of the Underworld? Could you make it even simpler? It ended before it even goddamn began!!!

In actuality, this was already quite complex for an Underworld marriage. This was because everyone within the Underworld was an Undead, and although there were both males and females, they didn't have the passions and desires that living beings had. Very few high-grade Undead had those sorts of desires, so marriages were quite rare. In the entire Underworld Royal City, many years would pass by without even a single pair of Undead getting married. As such, the wedding ceremonies had become 'Underworld-ised'. The first step was to declare the wedding to the public with enough Undead bearing witness, and the second step... there was none.

There seemed to be some sort of noise-sealing barrier in the room because even though the Undead outside were incredibly loud, they couldn't hear their voices anymore once they entered the 'bridal room'. The instant they entered the bridal room, Ling Chen stared in shock while Leng'Er's eyes lit up, dumbly staring at everything in the room.

It was a very large bedroom with a very large bed and... many, many dolls.

The dolls all looked quite old, and they were not very aesthetically-pleasing, but they were arranged nicely without even a speck of dust on them. The different types of dolls seemed to fill every corner of the room, and walking into here made one feel as if they had walked into a world of dolls.

"So many dolls... so many..." Leng'Er softly muttered as she looked ahead of her. However, she did not rush over to touch and hug them. Instead, she just stared, her eyes looking quite hazy... because a feeling told her that it wasn't the first time that she had seen this bedroom and all of these dolls.

"This was the Princess's room in the past, and no one has lived in here for over 10,000 years," The Undead granny said. "All of the dolls here are part of the Princess's collection, and they're all still here. Over the past 10,000 years, Lord Underworld King would

come here every few days and use his power to maintain the room and everything inside it so that none of the dolls would decay. Over the years, the Underworld King's Residence has gone through hundreds of renovations, but Lord Underworld King would never allow anyone to touch this room, much less the things inside it, nor has he allowed anyone to enter.

After speaking, the Undead granny's eyes misted up. "Lord Underworld King has missed the Princess so much over the years. He hasn't been happy for a whole 10,000 years."

As she wiped her tears, the Undead granny left and closed the door. Within the peaceful room, only Ling Chen, who was filled with melancholic feelings, and Leng'Er, who continued to stare around her, were left.

Chapter 667 - A Night In The Underworld Royal City

The things that the Underworld King had done today had been completely incomprehensible to Ling Chen, but now that he had time to calm down and think about it, he was unable to feel any condescension.

Even though he was the Underworld King, he was a father, and definitely wouldn't do anything that would harm his daughter. This room, that he had maintained for 10,000 years, showed a father's love for his daughter, which was as steady as a mountain. There were many reasons for him to make the somewhat-ridiculous decision that he had made today. He said that one of them was to help Leng'Er recover her memory, but a more important one was that after reading Leng'Er's memory, he knew about Ling Chen's status, background, as well as the fact that he had the Lunar Scourge. He also knew Ling Chen's purpose in coming to the Underworld, as well as that he was unable to stay here.

Moreover, becoming the Lunar Scourge meant that he would become a Shura – this was something that both Qi Yue and the White Tiger had told him about. As the Underworld King who had personally experienced the Shura's Devastation 10,000 years ago, he also knew this. In that case, the 'Shura' was definitely one of the considerations for wanting to hurry this entire matter so much.

Alright, all of these things weren't important. The important thing was... how were they going to spend this night?

The Underworld King had raged about Ling Chen helping Leng'Er recover her memories so that she could at last call him 'father'. However... However...

Leng'Er's appearance was undoubtedly extremely cute and

pretty. She liked dolls, and she herself looked like an exquisitely beautiful doll. However, even though she was over 10,000 years old, her mind was still like that of a young girl's, so Ling Chen simply didn't know how to act.

Leng'Er had already begun floating around the room, continuously caressing each of the dolls. Her eyes were incredibly hazy, and it was evident that although her soul was incomplete and her memories were dormant, she still felt that these dolls were quite familiar. This was the same as when she had stared at the Underworld Blood Lake. After a while, she floated towards the large bed and landed on the blanket, which was embroidered with many beautiful pictures... the blanket was an extremely luxurious item that most Undead in the Underworld had never seen before.

"Do you feel like this place feels quite familiar?" Ling Chen sat on the bed and spoke to Leng'Er, who was caressing the blanket.

"Mm..." Leng'Er looked up and softly replied before moving over and resting her head against his right arm, saying in a gentle voice, "Master, tell stories."

After her favourability towards him rose to 40, Leng'Er liked to be close to him when they were along together, and she would practically stick onto him as she listened to stories.

Ling Chen was still feeling conflicted as to whether he really would do anything with Leng'Er. After all, it was so quiet here, and there was a bed. His father-in-law 'forcing' him was also stuck in his mind. As Leng'Er came near, a faint fragrance entered his nose, causing all sorts of thoughts to rush into his head as his breathing became somewhat ragged.

He turned to look at Leng'Er, who was incredibly close. She was kneeling on the blanket, resting the top half of her body against Ling Chen's arm. In her position, her clothes naturally hung loose, and as Ling Chen turned to look at her, he could see a white suppleness as well as an alluring, shallow valley, causing him to

stare.

Leng'Er looked at Ling Chen's strange expression with confusion. She followed his gaze and looked at her chest, then coyly swung Ling Chen's arm as she repeated the request she made every day, "Master, tell stories."

Ling Chen gulped down a mouthful of saliva as some wicked thoughts spread in his mind like a flood, unable to be stopped. He looked at Leng'Er's pure and naïve face as he asked, "Leng'Er, let's not listen to stories today. How about we play a game?"

"Game...?" Leng'Er looked quite confused.

"Mm, it's a game... that Leng'Er will like a lot." It didn't matter to Ling Chen whether Leng'Er understood at all. Facing Leng'Er, he found that the obstructions in his heart were gone – perhaps there had been no obstructions from the start apart from the reluctance to give in to the Underworld King.

"We need to take off our clothes to play this game... Leng'Er, can you take off your clothes?" Ling Chen looked into Leng'Er's pure eyes, speaking as if he were a big grey wolf tempting a little white rabbit.

"Take off... clothes?" Leng'Er lowered her head and looked at her clothes before blinking with her black eyes as she naively asked, "Is master... also going to take off clothes?"

"Mm, we're both going to take off our clothes... Leng'Er, do it like this." Ling Chen gave a pure smile, but there was a hint of wickedness within it. As he spoke, he unequipped all of his equipment... in the virtual world, taking off one's clothes was much faster than in the real world – it took only an instant.

Seeing Ling Chen take off all of his clothes, Leng'Er's lips parted and dumbly stared at him for a while. Afterwards, she lowered her hands as a black light appeared around her clothes, and her clothes disappeared along with Ling Chen's...

Instantly, a petite, snow-white, and flawless figure was revealed to Ling Chen's eyes.

The Underworld King had clearly told him that although the Underworld King was the Emperor of the Underworld, they were not Undead but a very confusing type of creature. Leng'Er's skin was not at all like those of an Undead's – it was not horrifyingly white nor white-green, but it was instead snow-white like white jade and so supple that anyone would want to touch it. Although the Underworld King had repeatedly said that Leng'Er was over 10,000 years old and therefore hundreds of times older than Ling Chen, she still looked like a petite young girl. She had two small mounds on her chest without any proud curves. However, she still looked incredibly beautiful with her 2 small jade bowls, and the 2 dots on them glistening with a pink colour, looking like gemstones.

Her slim waistline was simply exquisite, and she had 2 slim and long legs. They seemed to be tightly closed in anxiousness, but Ling Chen could still see how white they were. Her 2 small, white feet lay on the blanket, her toes like fresh flower petals and delicate as gems.

Ling Chen's breathing became more hurried. He never thought that such a beautiful figure would be underneath her black dress. Although flames of desire burned within him, he didn't dare to move too quickly for fear of scaring Leng'Er. Instead, he gradually leaned forwards, bringing his face closer and closer to Leng'Er's. Leng'Er had no idea what was going on, but remembering the 'game' Ling Chen mentioned, so she did not try to escape. While she was wondering about what was going on, her small, pink lips were kissed by Ling Chen... just like that, she had given away her first kiss.

Leng'Er's lips were soft, tender, and slightly cool. Ling Chen opened her nervously-closed teeth with practised ease and sucked Leng'Er little tongue, causing her sweet saliva to flow into his mouth...

The strange feeling made Leng'Er breathing become ragged, and she did not move at all as her tongue entwined with Ling Chen's. Without realising it, her body became softer, and she hurriedly pushed Ling Chen again, feeling incredibly flustered.

"Leng'Er..." Being pushed away by Leng'Er like this, Ling Chen regained some clarity and looked at Leng'Er, who had a hazy look in her eyes, and he couldn't help but feel guilty. Leng'Er deeply breathed in and out, not knowing why she felt so flustered, and she didn't know why her body felt so soft. She looked at Ling Chen with a dazed expression before taking the initiative to kiss Ling Chen's face... after lightly touching his face with her lips, she quickly ducked away and continued to stare at Ling Chen. "Is this... a game?"

"Mm... is it fun?" Ling Chen lightly touched the place where Leng'Er had kissed him.

Leng'Er thought for a long time, thinking back to that strange feeling, before lightly nodding. "It's fun."

"Then shall we... continue playing? It'll become more fun." Ling Chen's eyes burned as he looked at Leng'Er, his hand stealthily creeping towards her soft breasts. A round softness entered his hand, and her breasts were so supple that he felt as if they had been covered with sweet and refreshing spring water. He rubbed the small bud with his palm, causing it to become perkier as he rubbed it.

"Is this also... part of the game?" Feeling a strange sensation from her chest, Leng'Er's body started to tremble. She spoke with a misty voice, and she could feel her heart beating faster and faster as her body became hotter and hotter. Her body also started to subconsciously twist around.

Ling Chen put his arms around Leng'Er's tender body and pressed her against his chest, using his body to feel her silky and tender skin as he moved his hand around her body. No matter

where his hands felt, they were filled with a cool softness. After kissing her snow-white face, he softly spoke into her ear, “Of course it is. However, this is only the beginning of the game.”

Leng’Er felt an itchiness spread from her ears to the rest of her body, and her petite frame became taut from the strange new feelings. As Ling Chen continued to move his hands around, her heart tensed and relaxed repeatedly.

She completely didn’t understand what sort of game this was, but she allowed Ling Chen to do as he wished. Slowly, her body and mind were immersed in the game, and she subconsciously desired that the game would continue and not stop. In the end, her mind felt incredibly fuzzy, and both her body and mind had completely entered her first ‘game’. It was not until she felt a sudden hint of pain that she opened her eyes and stiffened her body, tightly wrapping her arms around Ling Chen’s neck.

“It hurts…” Leng’Er’s eyes were filled with tears as she curled up against Ling Chen’s body like an injured kitten, looking incredibly wronged.

“It’s okay, it won’t hurt anymore soon. In the future when we play this game, it won’t hurt anymore,” Ling Chen said in a soft voice as he petted Leng’Er’s soft back, not moving at all.

A few tears fell from Leng’Er’s eyes, and after a while, she spoke with an incredibly lovable voice that could break anyone’s heart, “Mm…”

……

Just like in the Forgotten Continent, there was no darkness in the Underworld… or to put it another way, it was always night in the Underworld. The ‘night’ in the Underworld merely referred to a period of time. During the first night Ling Chen spent in the Underworld Royal City, he spent the first half of the night gently playing the ‘game’ with Leng’Er, and he played for a long time. During the latter half of the night, he hugged Leng’Er’s soft and

petite body as they slept together.

By now, all of the high-grade Undead that had celebrated in the Underworld King's Residence for most of the night had left. The Underworld King was still wide awake, and he sat in the central hall of the Underworld King's residence, standing guard against anyone who could possibly dare to disturb his daughter and son-in-law. He muttered to himself, "... Surely that boy can do it... what do I do if he doesn't do anything during the entire night... hmm, maybe I should ask Qian Gun Gun to go to the Forgotten Continent and buy some high-grade aphrodisiac..."

Chapter 668 - Do Your Best, Son-In-Law!

When Ling Chen woke up, it was about 8:45am, and it was already daytime in the real world.

No matter what time it was, it was always quite dark in the Underworld. When Ling Chen woke, his movements also disturbed the girl in his embrace. During the night, she had not been sent back to the Pet Space, but she had instead cuddled with Ling Chen as they slept. She had woken up earlier than Ling Chen, and after feeling Ling Chen's movements, she opened her eyes and started mumbling. She stretched out her body, revealing her jade-like body as she hugged Ling Chen's arm. She then once again closed her eyes, feeling incredibly safe and peaceful.

Looking at Leng'Er beside him and thinking back to what had happened during the night, Ling Chen spaced out for a while. When he came back to his senses, he looked at the time and then at the light from outside, gently lifting the blanket covering them and saying, "Leng'Er, it's time to get up."

After the blanket was lifted up, her petite and flawless body was revealed. Her skin looked just as white even under the dim lighting, causing Ling Chen to stare. He couldn't help but stretch his hand towards her body and feel her suppleness, and after feeling this, he felt reluctant to move his hand away. He started to greedily play with her naked body, and his groping became more and more intense, causing the half-awake Leng'Er begin breathing raggedly.

"Ahh..." Leng'Er softly moaned like a kitten's mew, and she opened her eyes, looking at Ling Chen hazily, and spoke with a soft voice, "Master... are we going to play the game again?"

"Err... does Leng'Er like playing that game?" Ling Chen softly played with her cotton-like chest and gem-like buds, feeling the slight trembles through her body as an undetectable lecherous

smile appeared on his face.

“Mm…” Leng’Er nodded, looking incredibly pure.

Ling Chen smiled. “Compared to hearing stories, which one does Leng’Er prefer?”

Leng’Er blinked as if she was trying to compare the two. However, not too long later, she said in a soft voice, “Playing the game…”

“Do you want to play the game regularly then?” Ling Chen smiled wider as he moved his hand from Leng’Er’s chest towards her legs.

Leng’Er’s trembling became even more intense, and she subconsciously caught Ling Chen’s hand between her thighs. A pink glow appeared on her face as she breathed deeply, saying the answer Ling Chen wanted to hear, “Okay…”

Ling Chen grinned and tossed the blanket away. Leng’Er helped as he lifted her bottom up, spreading her tender, white legs on either side of him, saying, “Let’s play now then.”

After the previous night’s experience, Leng’Er knew what was about to happen, and she started to pant as she tightly closed her eyes. Her cheeks became red as she raised her bottom in nervousness and anticipation, her small feet continuously trembling…

…….

Ding… your pet Leng’Er’s favourability towards you +12.”

……

By the time Ling Chen took Leng’Er back to the hall, it was past 10am. Leng’er was dressed the same way as before and had the same expression, but there was a subtle hint of something extra in her gaze, the traces from the ‘game’ she had played. Her face was no longer pure white, and it instead had some hints of pink,

making her look incredibly cute and enchanting.

The Underworld King seemed to be waiting for them, and when he saw Ling Chen and Leng'Er come out, he immediately went over and laughed as he yelled out, "How did son-in-law do... err, sleep last night?"

Before Ling Chen could reply, the Underworld King leaned over and looked at little Leng'Er, looking hesitant as if he was afraid that his loud voice would scare her. "Chan'Er, did you sleep well last night? Was the bed comfortable?"

Even though the Underworld King had done his best to look as warm and affectionate as possible, his appearance, which could scare any young girl, caused Leng'Er to subconsciously retreat behind Ling Chen. The Underworld King stared, and he started pulling at his hair, looking incredibly downcast.

Ling Chen couldn't stay calm, and he asked in a small voice, "Underworld King, didn't you say... ahem, if we did that... you know, Leng'Er would regain her memories? How come she still doesn't recognise you? Last night, I did exactly as you said!"

When Ling Chen said these things, he felt a bit guilty and angry. Guilty because he had slept with his daughter, a girl who looked too young. Angry because... he had slept with her, but it was because of what the Underworld King had said! It was the Underworld King who had said her memories could be recovered! It wasn't his fault that her memories weren't back.

The Underworld King waved his hand, giving a nonchalant 'oh', and casually replied, "Her memories aren't back yet? That's alright. How could they come back so easily?"

Ling Chen instantly felt as if he had been played, and he took a step forwards as he unhappily said, "Underworld King! You mean... you knew that Leng'Er wouldn't regain her memories today? So you were lying to me yesterday?"

The Underworld King gave him a sideways glance as he replied, not feeling guilty at all, “How could it be so easy to restore a soul that was damaged 10,000 years ago? Even if a True God still existed, it would take them at least 3 to 5 days!”

“Then were the things you told me about Leng’Er being able to recover her memories and remember you as her father if I consummated with her all a load of nonsense!?”

“Err…that, I was too happy to see Chan’Er yesterday, and I remembered incorrectly. Mm, that must have been what happened.” The Underworld King was indeed someone who had lived for a long time, and his face didn’t become red nor did his heart beat faster. “I checked the Underworld King Collection last night and found that even if she consummates with the person who she has a Soul Sacrifice Contract with, it’ll be impossible for her soul to recover in a short period of time… However,” The Underworld King patted Ling Chen’s arm, giving him a look of encouragement and pleading, “this is the best method that doesn’t have any risks or side-effects.”

“… Then how long will it take?”

“Let me think… if you consummate once every day, it’ll take about a year,” The Underworld King said in a deadly earnest manner.

“I….” Ling Chen started.

“Good son-in-law, I’ll leave this to you. For my daughter, and for your life, do your best.” The Underworld King patted Ling Chen’s shoulder, looking at him deeply.

Ling Chen felt his mouth twitch and couldn’t speak for a while… encouraging a man to ‘do’ his best, and he had mentioned that they needed to do it once per day… this father was so goddamn… fudge!!!

If Leng’Er didn’t have the Underworld King’s power, Ling Chen

would have begun to suspect whether the Underworld King really was her father.

“That’s right; I saw the reason why you came to the Underworld from Chan’Er’s memories. You seem to be seeking the Lunar Scourge’s orbs. The Lunar Scourge…” When he said that name, the Underworld King’s eyes flashed. “The Lunar Scourge is an incredibly terrifying yet desirable item. Back then, the cause of the Shura’s Devastation was the Lunar Scourge. The Shuras it can create can cause even the heavens to tremble. It’s said that if one is controlled by the Lunar Scourge, he will become a Shura who only wants to kill. However, if one can instead control the Lunar Scourge, he will be able to use the Lunar Scourge’s power while also possessing the Shura’s power. After hearing various legends and seeing the power that the Shura displayed back then, I once wanted the Lunar Scourge. Afterwards, that desire gradually disappeared.

“However, I can see that although you have the Lunar Scourge, you’re not controlled by it. In that case, it must be that you have controlled the Lunar Scourge. The Underworld King looked at Ling Chen deeply as he said, “Good son-in-law, well done.”

Ling Chen: “……”

“You came to the Underworld to search for the Lunar Scourge orbs, right? Could it be that the orb you want is in the Underworld Blood Lake? If that’s the case, you can go look for it at any time. Take these scrolls; they’ll allow you to directly reach the Underworld Blood Lake’s boundary.”

As he spoke, the Underworld King took out 3 scrolls and handed them to Ling Chen.

[Spatial Scroll – Underworld Blood Lake]: A special spatial scroll created by the Underworld King’s powerful Underworld King power. After crushing the scroll, the user will tear open a spatial tunnel to the Underworld Blood Lake. Can only be used while not

in battle.

Ling Chen put away the scrolls and said, “Thank you, Underworld King. Just like you said, I’m here to look for the Lunar Scourge’s orbs. There might be one within the Underworld Blood Lake.”

The Underworld King frowned before complaining, “You’ve already wedded my daughter; shouldn’t you be calling me father-in-law?”

“Err… this… can you please answer one of my questions?” Ling Chen earnestly asked.

“What is it?” The Underworld King replied.

“What was the real reason… why you wanted to marry Leng’Er to me so eagerly?”

The Underworld King looked at Ling Chen deeply and used a tone that Ling Chen couldn’t recognise, “The true reason… when the day comes, you’ll naturally know. You only need to know that I’ll never harm my daughter. Because my daughter’s life is tied to yours, I will never harm you either.” The Underworld King stopped speaking, and his tone changed as he impatiently yelled, “Alright, go do what you need to do! Go find that orb or go take a walk around the city. I have things to do, so I won’t be staying with you any longer.”

After speaking, the Underworld King swung his sleeve and strode away, afraid that Ling Chen would continue to ask him questions.

Chapter 669 - Leo, Capricorn (1)

The Underworld Royal City was quite large, and it wasn't smaller than the Forgotten City. As a living creature, Ling Chen was an extremely rare existence in the Underworld Royal City... of course, that was with the exception of the Underworld Merchant Qian Gun Gun. And now, his status had become even more special... the Underworld King's son-in-law!

As such, when Ling Chen and Leng'Er appeared in the Underworld Royal City, all of the high-grade Undead treated them extremely respectfully and would hurry over from a great distance away to pay their respects. There was even a large group of high-grade Undead fighting to take Ling Chen and Leng'Er for a tour around the Underworld Royal City.

The Underworld Royal City wasn't a very lively place, and it had a heavy deathly aura everywhere. After walking around for a while, Ling Chen started to feel bored, and he started to head towards the Business Street. There were not many shops on the Business Street; at most there were some small stalls with strangely dressed Undead selling all kinds of weird things. Ling Chen walked to the first stall and looked at some strangely-shaped... loudspeakers.

[Low Sound Quality Speaker]: A low-quality speaker made from poor-quality Underworld Sound Stones. When speaking into it, one will be be able to transmit their voice to the surrounding 10 kilometres. Price: 3 Underworld Coins.

[High Sound Quality Speaker]: A high-quality speaker made from high-quality Underworld Sound Stones. When speaking into it, one will be able to transmit their voice to the surrounding 100 kilometres. Price: 20 Underworld Coins.

[Super Quality Sound Cannon]: An ultimate speaker made from super Underworld Sound Stones. It has unimaginable broadcasting

abilities – when speaking into it, one will be able to transmit their voice to the surrounding 1,000 kilometres. Price: 600 Underworld Coins, can only buy 1.

After casually looking through their effects, Ling Chen, who was just about to leave, suddenly stopped... speakers that could transmit one's voice to 100 or even 1,000 kilometres! What superb items! Ling Tian City needed a way to conveniently give announcements throughout the entire city. With these speakers, this problem would be perfectly solved.

Ling Chen looked at his Underworld Coins. After killing large numbers of vampiric Undead in the Path of Darkness and the 3 Heaven's End grade Bosses in the Ice Purgatory, Ling Chen currently had 23,000 Underworld Coins. As such, he unhesitatingly bought 10 High Sound Quality Speakers and 1 Super Quality Sound Cannon. After returning, he would give each of the leaders of the city a speaker, making it incredibly convenient for them to make city-wide announcements.

At the second stall were all sorts of strange stones. After looking at the first stone's description, Ling Chen was shocked:

[Void Underworld Stone]: A stone that can release a mysterious space under certain conditions. They are found under the Underworld's tall mountains and are extremely hard to find. They are even worth the value of entire cities. After putting it into one's bag, it increases the item space by 60,000 spaces. Price: 6000 Underworld Coins.

60,000 spaces... this mysterious stone could increase the number of spaces in his bag by a whole 60,000! This essentially meant that Ling Chen would have an unlimited inventory!

Ling Chen currently had the Emptying Rock that he had bought from Qian Gun Gun for a high price, which gave him an extra 300 spaces. Ling Chen already had the largest expansion for his bag, but he obtained items too quickly. Even with the Emptying Rock,

he was unable to keep everything. As such, he often needed to throw away equipment and items. However, with this Void Underworld Stone, he would never have to worry about his inventory again.

Although the Void Underworld Stone costed an expensive 6000 Underworld Coins, it was definitely worth it, so Ling Chen instantly bought it.

As Ling Chen walked from one end of the Business Street to the other, he felt more surprise and shock with every step he took. The things here were weird and wonderful, and they had all sorts of effects. What's more, most of these things were quite common in the Underworld and not very useful to the powerful Undead. However, to Ling Chen, who came from the Forgotten Continent, they were completely different. Most of the things here were complete trash in the Underworld, but in the Forgotten Continent, especially to players, they would be apart of an incredibly rare treasure trove!

Why was the Underworld Merchant Qian Gun Gun famous everywhere under the heavens? Why did countless people desire to meet him and buy the things he had to sell? It was because Qian Gun Gun had many items from the Underworld that living beings could not obtain by themselves. The living world and the undead world were 2 completely different worlds, and the things that appeared within them were naturally different. Ordinary things in one world could very well be priceless treasures in the other. Standing at the end of the Business Street, Ling Chen's eyes lit up...

A business opportunity! A massive business opportunity!!

The rubbish that Qian Gun Gun could casually find in the Underworld was all sold for astronomical prices in the Forgotten Continent, and there were countless people fighting to buy them, causing his name to be incredibly renowned. In that case, what if he bought things en masse from the Underworld and sold them in Ling Tian City?

This was naturally impossible for other people because living creatures couldn't even enter the Underworld and Undead who left the Underworld would become zombies that could only follow the Underworld King's command. After so many years, the only person who could do this was Qian Gun Gun, and to the current Ling Chen, wanting to do this was simply too easy! With Leng'Er's Underworld King power, he could safely enter the Underworld. What's more, he was the Underworld King's son-in-law! This was a status that was recognised by the Underworld King himself, and everyone in the Underworld knew about it!

Ling Chen thought of ways to bring things from the Underworld to Ling Tian City in bulk as well as how to bring some of the Forgotten Continent's ordinary things to the Underworld. That way both sides would benefit, and adding in Leng'Er's relationship with the Underworld King, how could he refuse?

After making this decision, Ling Chen decided to think about this matter in the future... it would be no problem gaining the Underworld King's approval, so it would be quite easy to facilitate the trade.

After bringing Leng'Er to take a look around the Underworld Royal City, Ling Chen took out one of the Spatial Scrolls that the Underworld King had given him. Before leaving the Underworld Royal City, he subconsciously looked up at the unnatural-looking red sky to the west of the Underworld Royal City before crushing the scroll.

"Ding... you have arrived in the dangerous region 'Underworld Blood Lake'."

As the space around them changed, the Underworld Royal City was replaced with the Underworld Blood Lake. Within Ling Chen's vision was the bubbling water, and after coming here again, Ling Chen's feelings were completely different. He no longer felt any danger or worry – after all, he could come to this Forbidden Area whenever he wanted, and he could leave whenever he wanted.

“Xiao Hui, Snow Cherry.”

Ling Chen put Xiao Hui onto Snow Cherry’s back as they lifted off into the air. Xiao Hui stood on Snow Cherry’s neck, his horn lighting up as soon as he appeared. Ling Chen immediately asked, “Xiao Hui, have you found it? Hurry and find its location.”

Ling Chen softly barked and turned around a few times before pointing his horn towards Ling Chen’s right. Snow Cherry immediately changed direction towards where Xiao Hui was pointing. The further ahead they flew, the brighter the glow on Xiao Hui’s horn became. When the brightness reached its maximum, Xiao Hui barked and Snow Cherry stopped there.

“Is it here?” Ling Chen looked down at the blood-red water, and after confirming the place, he said to Leng’Er, “Leng’Er, we’ll be relying on you.”

Out of all of them, only Leng’Er could go into the Underworld Blood Lake. After playing the ‘game’ with Ling Chen all night, she became much more obedient. She meekly nodded and lightly floated down, submerging into the Underworld Blood Lake. Ling Chen looked down and waited excitedly... which orb would it be this time?

Out of the Mysterious God grade orbs, the Leo Orb, Capricorn Orb, and Aries Orb were still left. Qi Yue said that the Leo Orb was for Physical Attack Power, the Capricorn Orb was for Magic Attack Power, and the Aries Orb... was useless before becoming a Shura, but after becoming a Shura, it would be more useful than the 3 Saint Destroyer grade Orbs. So which one would it be?

Ling Chen didn’t have to wait too long. As the water rippled, Leng’Er broke through the water. Just as Ling Chen was about to call out to her, his expression froze... because Leng’Er wasn’t holding an orb, and the Lunar Scourge on his wrist wasn’t giving off any light.

What was going on? Xiao Hui’s detection abilities had never

failed him before. Could it be that the Underworld Blood Lake was too deep and there were too many things submerged underwater so Leng'Er couldn't find it or couldn't bring it out?

"Leng'Er, you didn't find it?" Ling Chen held Leng'Er's hand as he asked in a comforting tone. However, he suddenly saw that Leng'Er was holding a heavy, jet-black piece of metal.

"What's this?" Ling Chen took it into his hands. The instant it came into contact with his hands, the incredible feeling of heaviness suddenly appeared, causing Snow Cherry's body to fall by half a body position before stabilising. Ling Chen spent a great deal of effort holding it, and he found that it was not completely black. It actually contained a layer of dark-red within the blackness. The dark-red colour made him think of the colour of extremely thick blood after it had dried.

It was fairly flat and thick, but it had a hidden sharpness. It had a zigzag running along it, making it look like a fragment of a large sword.

Wait... this colour, heaviness, and shape... could it be...

[Shura Emperor Sword Shard 4]: 10,000 years ago, the famous 'Chi Xuan Sword Emperor' fell into the way of the Shura, and the sword he used became the [Shura Emperor Sword] after being bathed in the blood of countless beings. After becoming a Shura, the Chi Xuan Sword Emperor's sole purpose was to slaughter, and he massacred countless creatures, causing a disaster everywhere under the heavens. In the end, he was punished by the heavens, and he was attacked by the Void Dragon God and the 3 Moon Goddesses Fate, Order, and Freedom, dying at their hands. The 3 Moon Goddesses tried to completely destroy the [Shura Emperor Sword], but they were unable to do so, so they split it into 5 segments and separated them so that they could never be brought together.

As expected!!

This was yet another shard of the strongest sword from the legends, the Shura Emperor Sword that the Shura had used to take countless lives!

Together with the ones he had already obtained, this was the fourth shard.

He had obtained the first one from the forgotten cave in the Novice Village. The second one was found at the War God's Trial Grounds, and the third one was found in the Dwarf's Palace. Now, he had obtained the fourth shard. He had heard many stories about the Shura Emperor Sword, and he felt a sense of curiosity towards it. He had never actively tried to find the sword's shards, but they seemed to be attracted to him.

After putting the shard away, Ling Chen's attention once again fell on Xiao Hui. After Ling Chen obtained the Shura Emperor Sword Shard, Xiao Hui's horn dimmed, but the glow did not disappear when Ling Chen put it away. Xiao Hui once again turned, and he faced towards the centre of the Underworld Blood Lake this time.

Xiao Hui's detection abilities were extremely reliable and precise, but he could only determine where the items were, not what they were. In other words, what he had pointed them towards before was the Shura Emperor Sword Shard, so this time it should be the Lunar Scourge's Orb!

Chapter 670 - Leo, Capricorn (2)

When they arrived above the centre of the Underworld Blood Lake, the light on Xiao Hui's horn became incredibly bright. Ling Chen looked down at the peaceful lake and thought: Su Su's information has never been wrong before. Just then we coincidentally obtained a Shura Emperor Sword Shard, so this time it should be an Orb.

"Leng'Er, we'll have to trouble you again."

Leng'Er lightly nodded and once again sank into the Underworld Blood Lake. Half a minute later, she rose up with something in her hands. This time, the Lunar Scourge on Ling Chen's wrist suddenly let out a piercing silver glow.

"You found it!" Ling Chen cheered. This was the reaction that the Lunar Scourge gave when an Orb was nearby! He quickly pulled Leng'Er over and saw the silver-white orb in her hands. Its shape, colour, and faint light that it gave off meant that it was definitely one of the Lunar Scourge's Orbs.

Ling Chen immediately took it into his hands - this was now the tenth Lunar Scourge Orb that he had found. Finding the Lunar Scourge's Orbs had seemed like an impossible task, but in less than a year, because of various factors and a lot luck, he had come closer and closer to achieving it. Ling Chen brought the orb in front of him and looked at its stats:

[Leo Orb]: Type: Energy Orb, Grade: Mysterious God, Attributes: Fire. Equipment Requirements: Can only be socketed in the Lunar Scourge. Effects: Physical Attack Power+100% for user and pets.

Ling Chen marvelled silently.

The lion was the king of beasts, and it represented might and vigour. Its powerful battle abilities allowed it to stand above hundreds of other kinds of animals, so it was not surprising that its

effects were to increase Physical Attack Power. Qi Yue had told him about this before, but the amount it gave still shocked Ling Chen. An 100% increase to Physical Attack Power meant that his Physical Attack Power would be doubled! And this was not only for himself, but also for his pets as well!

This Orb boosted his and his pets' Physical Attack Power to a whole new level!

Ling Chen's attacks were dependent on his Physical Attack Power, and in his strongest state, his Physical Attack Power was incredibly terrifying to the point that it had reached the Mysterious God grade level! With the Leo Orb, his Physical Attack Power was now close to the Saint Destroyer grade! It was as if he had shed his mortal body and exchanged his bones.

After happily looking at the Leo Orb, Ling Chen took off the Super Strength Crystal and prepared to socket the Leo Orb. However, at that moment, Ling Chen noticed something else in Leng'Er's hands. It was the same size and shape as the Leo Orb, and it glowed with the same light. The only difference was that the symbols on them were different, causing Ling Chen's eyes to widen.

Ling Chen stared at the Leo Orb in his hands and then gulped as he stretched his hand out and put the other object next to the Leo Orb, dumbly staring at the 2 Orbs in his hands that Leng'Er had found.

Could it be... that this was also...

[Capricorn Orb]: Type: Energy Orb, Grade: Mysterious God, Attribute: Water, Equipment Requirements: Can only be socketed in the Lunar Scourge. Effects: Magic Attack Power+100% for user and pets.

Ling Chen's jaw dropped as he stared for a whole 3 seconds before dumbly saying, "Goddamn... this is incredible!!"

The Leo Orb and Capricorn Orb... 2 orbs!! He had found 2 orbs at once within the Underworld Blood Lake!

Obtaining each of the Lunar Scourge's Orbs was incredibly dangerous and difficult. Each step he had taken to restore the Lunar Scourge was incredibly arduous. However, he had never thought that he would suddenly take 2 steps in one go this time!

What's more, the Leo Orb and Capricorn Orb had similar effects: one greatly increased Physical Attack Power while the other greatly increased Magic Attack Power, and they both affected his pets as well. Now that he thought about it, it was only fitting that they appeared together.

The Capricorn Orb's boost was only useful for Ling Chen's [Thunder God's Bulwark], but it was incredibly useful for his pets. Out of his 5 pets, Cai'Er, Leng'Er, and Xi Ling were all pure Magic Attack types. The Capricorn Orb greatly boosted their healing, crowd control, and attack abilities. Snow Cherry's Physical Attack Power and Magic Attack Power weren't weak either, and she also benefited greatly.

The simultaneous discovery of 2 orbs was an extremely pleasant surprise for Ling Chen, making him feel incredibly happy. He kissed Leng'Er's soft, pink face and then socketed the Leo Orb and Capricorn Orb onto the Lunar Scourge.

"Ding... the Leo Orb has been successfully socketed, Physical Attack Power+100% for you and your pets."

"Ding... the Lunar Scourge's unique lunar skill [Eternal Moon Shadow] has been unlocked."

"Ding... the Capricorn Orb has been successfully socketed, Magic Attack Power+100% for you and your pets."

After socketing the 2 orbs, he had also unlocked a new lunar skill. Now, out of the 12 Mysterious God grade Orbs, he had found 11 of them. Apart from the socket for the Aries Orb, which still had a

Super Speed Crystal, all of the other sockets had a Mysterious God grade Orb within them. Ling Chen looked at the Lunar Scourge before excitedly looking at the new lunar skill...

[Eternal Moon Shadow]: Creates a shadow that can cover all creatures under the bright moonlight. When the moonlight is integrated with the Lunar Scourge's Moon Shadow, it causes all beings to fall silent.

Effects: A super-large range freezing technique, range is determined by the size of the moon. Cannot be used when there is no moon, [New Moon], or [Crescent Moon]. Maximum range for [Half Moon] is 3000 metres, maximum range for [Waxing Moon] is 10,000 metres, maximum range for [Full Moon] is 30,000 metres, and maximum range for [Broken Moon] is 600,000,000 metres. Once activated, unless the moonlight disappears, the effects will not end. Costs 3 MP, cooldown time: 1 month.

The [Eternal Moon Shadow]'s effects shocked Ling Chen.

Moon Shadow's effects were incredibly powerful – it was able to freeze even Mysterious God grade beings for a whole 5 seconds, making it one of the skills that Ling Chen relied on the most. When facing powerful enemies, it had been of great assistance time and time again. In fact, it could be said that if Ling Chen didn't have the godly Moon Shadow skill, it was likely that he wouldn't have been able to get where he was now in such a short amount of time.

The Eternal Moon Shadow's effects were the same as Moon Shadow's. However, while Moon Shadow only lasted for 5 seconds, the effects of Eternal Moon Shadow... could last forever! The description had clearly stated that if the moon did not disappear, the effects would continue! Everything would remain frozen unless the moon disappeared.

This sort of skill was simply terrifying... if Ling Chen used this skill, even if he were facing a Saint Destroyer grade expert, he would be able to freeze them permanently and kill them as he

wanted. As long as he could cast this skill, there would be no enemy that could stand up against him. Even if he met the Moon God Clan's 3 Moon Goddesses, he wouldn't have to fear them.

Every time that the Lunar Scourge received an extra orb, it became more powerful. However, although it was incredibly powerful, it was not to a level that was unacceptable, nor did it reach the 'invincible' level that Qi Yue had talked about. However, now that Ling Chen had returned 11 orbs to the Lunar Scourge, Ling Chen saw just how heaven-defying it truly was. This shocking skill had a heaven-defying effect, yet it only had a 1-month cooldown time.

However, it hurt to see that the Eternal Moon Shadow required at least a [Half Moon] to activate. Right now, he could only release a [New Moon], not even a [Crescent Moon]. This meant that he could look at the skill but not use it!

Ling Chen wanted to savagely curse at the Lunar Scourge: Why'd you unlock it if I can't even use it yet? Are you trying to piss me of?!

What was even worse was that after obtaining 11 orbs, the Lunar Scourge could still only release the [New Moon], and it had not upgraded to the [Crescent Moon]. Surely it wouldn't take all 12 Mysterious God grade Orbs to upgrade it to [Crescent Moon]? In that case, didn't it mean that he would need at least one of the Saint Destroyer Orbs to upgrade it to [Half Moon]?

Now that Ling Chen had obtained the 2 Mysterious God grade Orbs from the Underworld Blood Lake, his goal in coming to the Underworld Blood Lake was complete. He did not stay at the Underworld Blood Lake, and he instead used a Spatial Scroll to return to the Underworld Royal City.

Since he had achieved his goal, it was time to leave. It seemed that the Underworld King knew that Ling Chen would take Leng'Er and leave after achieving his goal. Perhaps that was one of

the reasons why he had quickly arranged for them to be married. As such, he probably wouldn't force him to stay.

It was just that Ling Chen decided that he should talk some business as well as take care of some other things before leaving.

Returning to the Underworld King's Residence, Ling Chen saw the Underworld King sitting on a gigantic skeleton chair, holding an ancient text in his hands. When he saw Ling Chen and Leng'Er come over, he casually threw the ancient text to one side as he smiled at Leng'Er, but he found that he still scared her. As such, he turned his gaze to Ling Chen. "Did you find what you came for?"

"Mm, I found it," Ling Chen replied in a straightforward manner.

"That means..." The Underworld King paused and took a secret glance at Leng'Er, who was hiding behind Ling Chen, as if he didn't want to say the second half, "you're going to leave with Chan'Er?"

"That's right," Ling Chen nodded, "but don't worry – with Leng'Er, I'll be able to come here as often as I please. If you miss Leng'Er, I can bring her at any time."

The Underworld King fell silent for a moment, and his expression suddenly became annoyed as he waved his hand. "Whatever, whatever, if you want to leave, then you can just piss off then. This old man never said he was going to force you to stay here. My own daughter doesn't even recognise me as her father, and my son-in-law doesn't even call me father-in-law... if you want to go, then go! Otherwise, I'll feel annoyed just looking at you!"

Ling Chen was speechless... the old Underworld King's eyes had become red after seeing that Leng'Er was going to leave, and he started to chase them out.

At that moment, the sound of hurried steps sounded out as the person called out before he even entered the room, "Lord

Underworld King! Things are bad… something big has happened!”

“What are you making a fuss about?” The Underworld King sat with his back straight as he looked at the elderly Undead who had just rushed in.

The elderly Undead knelt before the Underworld King’s seat, breathing incredibly raggedly as he pointed outside and cried out, “Things are bad! Lord Blue Darkness, who has been standing guard at the Underworld Volcano in the west, just passed on information that the Underworld Volcano has erupted…”

“What?!” When the Underworld King heard the word ‘erupted’, he shot to his feet, looking incredibly shocked.

“It’s 100% true! A massive flame shot into the sky from the Phoenix Mountain in the west, which can be seen anywhere within the city. Everyone in the city is incredibly scared, saying that it’s the beginning of the Underworld Volcano exploding. When the time comes, it’s possible that the entire Underworld…”

Before the elderly Undead had finished speaking, the Underworld King rushed out with a berserk gust of cold wind.

Chapter 671 - The Forgotten City's Soldiers Arrive

The Underworld Royal City's streets were filled with different types of Undead. All of them looked at the red sky in the west, their faces filled with shock and fear. Because of the shocking scene developing in front of them, none of them even detected the Underworld King when he came beside them.

"Underworld King, what's going on with the 'Underworld Volcano' that you were talking about?" Ling Chen asked as he looked towards the sky in the west. When he had first come to the Underworld Royal City, he had felt quite strange about the redness in the sky. This was because the sky he had seen was dark-grey from the east of the Underworld to the Underworld Royal City, while the sky to the west of the Underworld Royal City was a strange red colour. Furthermore, the temperature at the Underworld Royal City had been much higher than all of the other places he passed, which he had thought was linked to the red sky in the west. However, since Undead feared fire, how could there be such a hot place near the Underworld Royal City?

By now, the sky in the west was no longer dark-red but a shocking crimson-red colour, and it looked as if it was burning. Looking over, one would find that there was a pillar of fire that extended to the sky quite some distance away that was spiralling around like a gigantic dragon. It was this that caused the Underworld Royal City's temperature to rise.

"Ai, this is the Underworld's fate. No matter how we run, we can't escape from it," The Underworld King said as he gave a long sigh. "About 10,000 years ago there was a large explosion around 400 kilometres away from the Underworld Royal City that could be heard even from the Underworld Royal City. I personally went to have a look and found a crater. Within the crater was something

that shouldn't exist in the Underworld – lava.

"Undead fear fire, and because the Underworld Royal Clan possesses the power of death, we also fear fire. With the dense deathly aura in the Underworld, it's extremely strange that lava would appear in the Underworld. However, I didn't pay it much heed back then because the lava of unknown origin soon disappeared. Because it was quite hot there, I quickly ordered people to seal off that region to prevent Undead from going in and being harmed, and I subsequently forgot about it.

"Not only did the lava not disappear, but it also silently grew. 10 years later, a large fire erupted from there, and the temperature of the flames were simply terrifying, melting the surrounding ground and mountains. After the fire started burning, it was never extinguished, and it gradually spread more and more. It was only tens of metres at the start, but now it's a sea of flames over 200 kilometres long and has become the 'Underworld Volcano'.

"Undead are naturally fearful of fire and can be seriously injured by fire. Moreover, that fire isn't any ordinary fire, and it has extremely high temperatures. Even the 8 Underworld Gods are unable to go near. Not only this, but the fires never die down, and I've tried countless methods to suppress the fire. I even used my Underworld King power to suppress it, but I was only able to stop it temporarily. Soon after, it started to spread quickly again. In the end, there was nothing I could do, so I just let it be. I told the 8 Underworld Gods to stand guard at places near the Underworld Volcano in order to monitor it every day.

"The Undead residents in the West have all been relocated. It looks like the Underworld Volcano's eruption this time will be even more intense than in the past 10,000 years... looks like we'll have to also move the Underworld Royal City," The Underworld King deeply sighed, feeling quite reluctant. "Although I'm the Underworld King and don't fear any of the experts in this world, I don't have the power to fight against nature. However, we don't

know what the source of this fire is even to this day. If it continues to grow, in less than 10,000 years... no place in the Underworld will be safe for Undead."

"It's that serious?" Ling Chen felt quite surprised. He never thought that the mysterious and terrifying Underworld would be in such a large crisis.

The Underworld King waved his hand at him. "Forget it, you shouldn't be concerning yourself with such matters. Go do what you need to do, and we'll figure some way to handle it. Unless the situation is incredibly dire, we won't move the Underworld Royal City... if it really comes to that, we'll just create a new Underworld!"

When Ling Chen saw the deep frown on the Underworld King's face, he knew that 'creating a new Underworld' wasn't as easy as he had made it sound.

At that moment, Ling Chen felt a restless stirring within his mind, and he called out, "Xi Ling, what's wrong?"

"Master, where are we?" Xi Ling's voice came from the Pet Dimension.

"We're in the Underworld Royal City. We haven't left the Underworld yet," Ling Chen replied.

"Underworld... so why..." Xi Ling sounded quite confused.

"Did you discover something?" Ling Chen asked.

"... I can feel something calling me in the west, and my heart has been beating incredibly fast," Xi Ling said hazily with some hesitation.

"Hm?" Ling Chen looked at the crimson-red sky in the west and suddenly asked, "Xi Ling, are you able to put out fires?"

"Put out fires?"

"Like... for example, a large sea of flames. Are you able to absorb

those flames or extinguish them in any way?" Ling Chen asked.

"Of course I can. I excel in controlling Fire elemental essence. No matter if it's creating fire or extinguishing fire, I can do it easily," Xi Ling confirmed.

"Good..." Ling Chen slowly nodded. "Then let's go to the West and see if we can find who's calling Xi Ling."

Ling Chen then said to the Underworld King, "Underworld King, how about you let me go to the Underworld Volcano to have a look. Perhaps I'll be able to find the source of the fire."

"You?" The Underworld King looked and him before waving his hand. "Absolutely not! That's not a place you can go! You're underestimating the Underworld Volcano... the flames there aren't ordinary flames, and they can melt even the ground and mountains. Even I don't dare to get too close. Going would just be throwing your life away."

"Don't worry." Ling Chen patted his chest. "My body doesn't fear flames; there are no flames that can harm me."

What Ling Chen said was true. After Xi Ling reached the Mysterious God grade, she gave Ling Chen and all of his other pets the heaven-defying status of not fearing flames. Because Xi Ling's body simultaneously contained the Golden Crow, Phoenix, and Vermillion Bird's flames, she was undeniably the sovereign of all flames. With Xi Ling's protection, Ling Chen would not have to fear any flames in the world. However, these words sounded completely ludicrous to the Underworld King, and he instantly roared, "What a load of nonsense! Do you think you're the ancient Phoenix or Golden Crow? You don't fear flames? Even those 3 women from the Moon God Clan don't dare to say such arrogant words. Don't think that you're invincible just because you killed Chi Xuan Wu Hen; even I, your father-in-law, wouldn't dare to touch those flames! You'll be turned into dust if you go!"

Ling Chen smirked and did not say anymore. He summoned

Snow Cherry and jumped onto her back as he flew towards the West. “Underworld King, wait for my good news... if I can’t do anything about it, I’ll immediately leave and won’t cause any harm to your daughter.”

“Oi! Where are you going? Fudge, are you crazy? Goddamn... he’s really going!”

Snow Cherry was simply too fast, quickly becoming a white dot in the Underworld King’s sight. He stamped his feet, his beard bristling. “This brat is simply too unruly! Mm... although he has a good heart. Looks like I didn’t marry my daughter to the wrong person.”

.....

All of the city gates and teleportation channels were tightly shut. Even the Revival Point was closed, and the bustling streets of Ling Tian City were completely empty, making Ling Tian City look like a dead city.

The atmosphere in the Central Meeting Hall was extremely grave.

“Big miss Li, can you honestly tell us what our chances are?” Skyfall asked while frowning deeply. They could not participate in this battle because they simply didn’t have the right to participate. Only the Fairy Clan had the power to stop the Forgotten City’s soldiers. However, not many people were familiar with the Fairy Clan’s power, but from Yun Meng Xin and Li Xiao Xue’s serious expressions, anyone could tell that the situation was quite grim.

“We don’t have a chance at all... we can only make a bet,” Li Xiao Xue slowly replied, “Within the Fairy Clan, Chief Greenwood is at the Mysterious God grade, there are 14 Fairies with Heaven’s End grade power, and there are 103 with Celestial grade power. There are also 900 other Fairies who are able to fight and are also quite strong.” After speaking, Li Xiao Xue lightly sighed, “If we purely compare the Forgotten Continent’s human’s power to the Fairies,

humans are unable to fight against the Fairies at all. However, all of the soldiers are the Forgotten City's elites, and not only do they have superior numbers, but they might even have peak-level experts who are also at the Mysterious God grade. The difference in strength between the elite soldiers and the Fairies was already quite far apart, and there's also a massive difference in numbers.

"Our only hope is if the other side does not have any Mysterious God grade experts. If that's the case, Chief Greenwood may be able to keep the situation under control with his power so that we at least won't be broken through within a short period of time. Adding on the Mountain Giant's help, it's possible that we'll be able to successfully defend the city. However, if the other side also has Mysterious God grade experts who can tie Chief Greenwood up..."

Li Xiao Xue did not continue to speak, but everyone understood the implications... if the other side also had Mysterious God grade experts, there would be no hope in protecting Ling Tian City.

However, even if they couldn't save the city, they wouldn't give in to the Forgotten City. Even if they lost, they wouldn't give up their dignity!

An urgent sound came from Li Xiao Xue's communication device. She quickly glanced at it and frowned, saying in a serious tone, "They're coming."

A minute later, everyone gathered on the West gate's walls, looking at the Forgotten City's army that was quickly advancing from 10 kilometres away. The Forgotten Emperor had evidently guessed what Yun Meng Xin's reply would be and had brought his army of 100,000 soldiers. It was split into 3 columns with roughly 30,000 soldiers in each. Their levels and professions were all evident from their attire.

Chapter 672 - Turning The Heavens And Earth Upside Down

Time passed second by second, and as the Forgotten City's soldiers came closer and closer, the formless pressure that they gave off became stronger and stronger. 1,000 Fairies stood in ranks on the city walls, everyone holding a jade-green longbow. The Fairies' Light Magic was focused on Healing and Buffs, and their Nature Magic was focused on crowd control. Their main source of attack power was focused on archery because every Fairy was a natural-born Archer.

In the distance, the Forgotten City's Army finally arrived within the field of vision of those in Ling Tian City. At the front was a mass of cavalry – the Knights. The Fairies raised their hands and drew the bowstrings back. Nature Arrows formed from Light energy materialised, pointing towards the evildoers who wanted to destroy their home.

The Knights stopped about half a kilometre away from the city gates, and a Knight wearing jet-black armour rushed out. He came before the city gates and yelled, "His Imperial Majesty wishes to give you another chance. Will you submit or resist?"

Yun Meng Xin coldly replied, "Tell your Forgotten Emperor that we'd rather have Ling Tian City be destroyed then for it to be ruined by him!"

The Knight roared back, "Very well, I'll go and report your words to my lord! Since you must obstinately pursue the wrong path, don't blame us for bringing judgment onto Ling Tian City."

The Knight returned, and soon an ear-piercing horn sounded out, signalling the Forgotten City's army to attack. Instantly, the peaceful ground started to tremble as the 100,000 soldiers moved like a jet-black thundercloud, advancing towards the city gates that did not have a single person in front of it.

“Attack… show no mercy!” The Fairies hated conflict, but Chief Greenwood maintained a cool expression when he gave the cruel command. They did not want to fight, but they had no choice but to fight. After all, only they had the power to protect Ling Tian City from the Forgotten City’s soldiers, who were like tigers and wolves. If they did not harden their hearts and fight, Ling Tian City would definitely be destroyed.

The densely-packed Nature Arrows fell like rain towards the Knights at the front. Against beings of about the same grade and level, the Fairies’ arrows were not incredibly powerful. However, their range, speed, accuracy, and precision greatly surpassed those of any other being’s. 100 metres away, the thousand Nature Arrows all found their targets. Not a single arrow missed its mark, causing more than 100 Knights to crash down from their warhorses, instantly causing mass-chaos. A second and third wave of arrows then descended…

However, although the Fairies’ Nature Arrows were powerful, there were only 1,000 of them – it was simply impossible for them to stop 100,000 soldiers. If they split up their attacks, they would not be able to affect the army at all, and if they condensed their attacks, they would only be able to put pressure on a small portion of the army. The 100,000 soldiers braved the rain of arrows, roaring as they quickly came closer. Soon, they were only 50 metres away from the city, and they swept towards the city gates with great momentum.

On the city walls, Chief Greenwood finally acted. He floated down from the walls and landed in front of the city gate, coldly looking at the large army in front of him. The green light that had been gathered in his hands for a long time were sent shooting down towards the ground.

In an instant, the ground trembled as the 200 metres in front of him erupted with countless green vines. They wrapped themselves around the warhorses’ legs, causing the horses to scream as they

fell while also heavily throwing off the Knights on their backs. The vines continued to grow madly, wrapping around warhorses and Knights alike, binding them to the ground. Within those 200 metres, thousands of Knights were thrown to the ground, and no matter how they struggled, all they could do was be killed by the Fairies' Nature Arrows.

"As expected from the Fairy Clan's Chief, he's so strong!" Xiao Qi shouted in shock, looking incredibly excited.

A Heaven's End grade expert could turn the tides of a battle, let alone a Mysterious God grade expert. Once Greenwood attacked, the momentum that the 100,000 soldiers had gathered was completely stopped. Adding on the Fairies' merciless rain of arrows, the Forgotten City's army started to suffer more and more casualties.

At that moment, a white figure suddenly flew out from within the Forgotten City's army, rushing towards Greenwood. Greenwood, whose entire body was covered with a green light, suddenly felt an incredibly sharp aura and a terrifying feeling from above him. He frowned as the green light around him became white, turning into hundreds of thick arrows of light that shot up towards the white figure that had suddenly appeared in the air.

When facing Greenwood's attack, the white figure did not panic at all. He didn't seem to move, but a silver light suddenly appeared in front of his body, drawing a gigantic arc. All of the Nature Arrows that touched the silver light were immediately destroyed. The white figure rushed through Greenwood's attack without taking any damage at all, shooting towards Greenwood like an arrow as a cold blade stabbed towards Greenwood's chest.

Cha!!

The ear-piercing sound of glass shattering sounded out as the ground split. Greenwood hurriedly retreated, crashing into the city wall behind him. He then straightened his body, coldly looking at

the white figure... he was only wearing very simple white clothes, and he had a face that could only be described as 'ordinary'. However, the aura he gave off caused Greenwood to feel a massive amount of danger, and the words 'Mysterious God' flashed in his mind.

"I won't attack any of the weak humans or Fairies; my target is you," The white figure said as he looked at Greenwood without a trace of emotion in his calm eyes.

Greenwood coldly laughed, "A Mysterious God grade expert appears within the humans about once every 300 years on average, and even the most powerful humans don't live past 2,000 years. In other words, there are never more than 10 human Mysterious God grade experts. With your power, you can rank within the top 10 in the Forgotten Continent, so as a peak-level expert, why would you give up your dignity and support this shameless robbery?"

The white figure's expression did not change as he calmly replied, "Dignity cannot be thrown away, but the Emperor's will must be obeyed. Don't worry, I won't attack anyone else – my duty is only to tie you down. After all, if I can tie you down, there won't be any hope in defending Ling Tian City... however, I can't say whether that other person will be as principled as me."

Just as Greenwood was about to ask who this 'other person' was, he saw the white figure suddenly raise the longsword in his hands, instantly slashing tens of arcs towards him. Greenwood's pupils contracted as he flashed away, and with a 'chi', tens of 2 metre long gashes appeared on the city walls. Every single one of them had completely passed through the city walls.

The white figure continued to launch lightning-fast attacks. He pointed with his longsword as 3 silver arcs flew out, instantly traversing tens of metres and cutting towards Greenwood from 3 different angles. Greenwood was forced to continuously defend and retreat... not only were the white figure's attacks incredibly sharp, but once he moved they seemed to be completely flawless

like flowing water, making Greenwood fall into a passive state. He had been suppressed to the point that he couldn't even retaliate, let alone worry about the other attacking soldiers.

Without Greenwood's power, the vines were quickly cut by the Forgotten City's soldiers, who rushed towards the city gates with anger in their hearts.

"Crap! They also had Mysterious God grade experts!" Li Xiao Xue said in a low voice as she frowned.

"The Fairies' power is focused on healing and protecting, and attacking definitely isn't their strength. Although they're both Mysterious God grade, Chief Greenwood's battle strength is definitely inferior," Yun Meng Xin anxiously said, looking at Greenwood who was being fiercely suppressed. Greenwood had continuously retreated against the white figure's attacks, and he was moving further and further away. They both knew that Greenwood was intentionally leading the white figure away so that he couldn't harm Ling Tian City... once their Mysterious God grade power was completely unleashed, it could easily destroy a large city.

The city gates were right in front of the Forgotten City's soldiers, and if they could destroy the gates, they would have completed the first step in taking down Ling Tian City. 100,000 soldiers rushed over like a great flood.

At that moment, a shocking yellow light appeared.

The powerful yellow light seemed to tear the sky, kicking up a gigantic, yellow sandstorm, and it rushed towards the Forgotten City's soldiers with an air of destruction.

"W-What is that?!"

Countless Forgotten City's soldiers cried out with shock and fear, and they were swept into the nightmarish yellow sandstorm. Their expressions and movements instantly froze – the yellow colour

spread from their feet to their chests and then to their heads, turning them into earthen-yellow statues, and they were then blown into nothing by the sandstorm...

When everyone on the city walls and the Forgotten City's soldiers saw this terrifying scene, they all deeply breathed in a mouthful of cold air.

Behind the yellow sandstorm, a 100 metre tall figure slowly appeared. The 2 eyes on its head gave off a piercing, white light, and yellow light surrounded its body. It raised its arms and its booming voice echoed to even 100 kilometres away, "Evil intruders, become the dirt beneath my feet!"

BOOM!!

The Mountain Giant's arms fell and stabbed into the ground as the yellow light from its body rushed into the ground. With a boom, the ground started to violently tremble, causing the thousands of soldiers at the front to fall to the ground and roll around, unable to stand up again. At the same time, a gigantic sandstorm started to blow, causing stones and sand to smash into their bodies, decreasing their HP, and making it so that they could not open their eyes.

"That's the... the... Mountain Giant?!" The 3 Heavenly Kings looked up at the gigantic rock giant, their eyes nearly popping out of their sockets. They had heard Yun Meng Xin talk about how powerful the Mountain Giant was, but they never thought that it was to such a degree.

"With such a large body and such monstrous strength, it's simply a meat grinder on the battlefield! If it were to attack players, even 10 Yan Huang Alliances would be completely trampled by it," Skyfall said with shock as he stared with wide eyes.

"No wonder why they didn't allow any players to participate in this battle. With such destructive power, we wouldn't even have the right to be cannon fodder if we joined in!" As Yun Feng spoke,

his teeth were chattering.

The Mountain Giant was like an immovable mountain blocking the Forgotten City's soldiers, sending them into complete chaos and inflicting serious losses. Some of the soldiers who had rolled over to the Mountain Giant’s foot used their weapons to fiercely attack, but their attacks only made clanging sounds and were unable to harm it at all. The Mountain Giant raised its foot and stomped down, sending thousands of soldiers who hadn’t been killed by the sandstorm flying, killing a third of them instantly.

“Beautifully done!” Yun Feng cheered. However, seeing Yun Meng Xin frowning next to him, he hurriedly asked, “Meng Xin, what’s wrong? The battle’s going quite well for us! Even though Chief Greenwood is tied up, the Mountain Giant’s so powerful, and with it standing guard in front of the city, the attackers won’t be able to attack at all.”

Yun Meng Xin’s frown became deeper and deeper as she said worriedly, “When the Forgotten Emperor came yesterday, they saw the Mountain Giant. Back then, the white figure tying up Chief Greenwood was also present, and with his Mysterious God grade power, he should be able to determine the Mountain Giant’s strength. I’m afraid that since they’ve come, they have some way of dealing with the Mountain Giant... I just hope that I’m overthinking things.”

Chapter 673 - The Mountain Giant's Fury

The Mountain Giant was a high-tier Heaven's End grade Boss, and although his power wasn't as strong as Greenwood's, he was able to do what Greenwood was not – completely stop the Forgotten City's army of 100,000. If it fought against Greenwood, it would definitely lose, but not even 5 Greenwoods would be able to compare to the Mountain Giant in large scale battles. Its massive body combined with its massive attacks made it difficult for the army of 100,000 to take even a single step forwards.

BOOM!!

A heavy fist punched the ground, causing the earth to split and rocks to fly into the air, as countless Forgotten City's soldiers were blasted 100 metres away.

BOOM!!

A massive foot descended, causing the soldiers on the ground and in the air to be assaulted by wild winds and flying sand. The soldiers pitifully screamed as they flew in various directions and were stunned by the ferocious attack.

Because its body was so big, the Mountain Giant could not attack very quickly. However, every move it made was a disaster for the Forgotten City's soldiers. Not only the normal soldiers but even the Silver Corps, Gold Corps, and Celestial grade Commanders were beaten back and injured by the Earth-type attacks. They stared at the gigantic figure with despair. After personally feeling its might, they couldn't help but feel that let alone 100,000 soldiers, even 200,000 or 500,000 would not be able to break through this terrifying fortress.

At the back of the Forgotten City's army, the Forgotten Emperor stared at the roaring Mountain Giant. No matter if it was his eyes or his expression, he was incredibly calm. His surroundings were quite clear, and only an elderly man dressed in black with a

piercing gaze was with him.

“It’s simply a war machine! Its strength would qualify it to be even the guardian for our Royal City. White Eagle was right. Although both of you can defeat it, no matter if it’s large scale battle abilities or defensive abilities, even the both of you combined will not be able to compare to it,” The Forgotten Emperor said after a while with both jealousy and envy.

“Since we can’t use it, then we should destroy it,” The elder in black said in a sinister voice.

“Destroy it? It’s an Earth element giant, and its defence and lifeforce are both incredibly powerful. Even though you can defeat it, it’ll be impossible for you to destroy it within a short period of time. Let’s do it according to the plan we discussed yesterday and seal it in the Moon God Barrier,” The Forgotten Emperor said calmly.

The elder in black replied, “The Moon God Barrier was a life-saving barrier given by the Forgotten Continent’s Moon God Representative to your majesty, and you can only use it 3 times. Using it to defeat an enemy… is simply not worth it.”

The Forgotten Emperor proudly replied, “With you and White Eagle, there is no one who can threaten my safety apart from the glorious Moon Goddess. Seal that rock giant and quickly finish the battle! We want them to be plunged into complete despair! We’ve brought all of our Forgotten City’s elites, so if we’re not able to break through the player’s city quickly, we’ll become laughingstocks!”

“Understood!” The elder in black slightly nodded and then raised his head. A gust of wind arose around his body, bringing him tens of metres into the sky, and he flew towards the Mountain Giant.

At the same time, 2 women were standing unnoticed in the sky elsewhere.

“Aiya, it’s only been 2 months, and after coming here again, the situation’s just like last time. That man’s city has so many problems that one can’t help but worry.”

The woman’s arms were around her chest, and her rose-like red hair was fluttering in the wind. Her red dress was tight around her snake-like waist, and it barely covered her large, round bottom, leaving her long, white legs exposed. Her entire body gave off a seductive air. As she spoke, she stretched out her five fingers on her right hand. There were red, yellow, and blue rings on her index, middle, and ring fingers respectively, adding another layer of beauty to her hand.

“Last time the enemy was players, while this time it's NPCs... but it looks like Ling Tian City isn’t in too much danger – that rock giant has made it so that the army is unable to advance at all. It should be that legendary guardian that Ling Tian City obtained from who-knows-where,” The young woman with golden hair next to her said as she looked on with shock.

“That’s not necessarily the case,” The woman in red said with her full, red lips as she moved her fingers around. “If I haven’t guessed incorrectly, that giant’s going to be in big trouble soon. Aiya, what makes me feel even more interested is that that man is never around when they need him. He’s so irresponsible that I want to tie him up and savagely slap his butt.”

The young woman with golden hair: “……”

“Alright, let’s see if that man’s going to come back at the most critical moment and act like the saviour again. This time, I have plenty of time to watch.” The woman in red’s eyes narrowed as if she was watching an interesting play.

By now, the elder in black had rushed in front of the Mountain Giant in a gust of berserk wind. There was a jade-green short staff in his hand, and as he waved it and chanted, the berserk wind rushed towards the Mountain Giant. Wherever the wind passed, it

would gather up the sand and stones from the Mountain Giant's sandstorm, rushing towards the Mountain Giant.

Wind was the counter to Earth, and this was especially so when it was a Wind attack from a Mysterious God grade Mage God. The berserk wind cut off the Earth element attack that the Mountain Giant was about to cast, causing massive damage figures to rise up from its head and all 4 limbs. The Mountain Giant's gigantic body leaned backwards and took 3 heavy steps back, almost falling to the ground.

"Mountain Giant!!"

Seeing that the Mountain Giant had nearly fallen over, those standing on the city walls cried out with worry. Not even mentioning that the city walls would have been smashed if the Mountain Giant fell down, if it was defeated, Ling Tian City would have lost its strongest shield, making it so that they had no chance of survival.

"It's Lord Wind God 'Black Demon'!"

"The Sword Saint and Wind God have both acted! We won't be stopped by anything! Charge!!"

The Mountain Giant being knocked back caused the Forgotten City's soldiers to cheer with excitement. With their morale restored, they rushed towards the city gates. The powerful Fairy Chief was tied down by White Eagle, and they trusted that Black Demon would be able to keep the rock giant occupied. All they needed to do was attack the city, and they could do so without any worries.

The Mountain Giant furiously shot out 2 rays of earthen-yellow light from its eyes and let out a heaven-shaking roar. Its gigantic arms smashed downwards, one towards the ground and the other towards the elder in black who was still gathering Wind elemental essence.

The elderly man in black narrowed his eyes, not making any effort to dodge. Instead, he coldly laughed as a green light exploded out from his body. A tornado that was even more berserk than the gust of wind from before rose up from beneath the Mountain Giant' feet, quickly spiralling upwards. It covered the Mountain Giant's enormous body, and... brought the Mountain Giant into the air...

That's right, the Mountain Giant, who was 100 metres tall and had an incredibly heavy body, had been lifted up completely by the tornado. It was brought 20 metres high in the air, and its 2 attacks were also dispelled by the tornado.

"Mountain Giant!!" Xiao Qi and Su'Er simultaneously cried out. Li Xiao Xue and Yun Meng Xin also stared in shock and horror. Looking at the dot in the distance surrounded by green light, they finally felt how hopeless their situation was... not only had the Forgotten City brought Mysterious God grade experts, but there were also 2 of them!

BOOM!!!!

The Mountain Giant fell from the sky like a small mountain, causing half of Ling Tian City to tremble. The elder in black looked down at the half-buried Mountain Giant and arrogantly said, "Against you, why would we need to waste the precious Moon God Barrier?"

As the Mountain Giant fell, the Forgotten City's soldiers furiously charged past the Mountain Giant towards the city gates.

"ROARRRR!!!!"

A world-shaking roar came from beneath the ground, deafening everyone who heard it. As it roared, the Mountain Giant's body suddenly disappeared, and at the same time, a dark-yellow light appeared in the 1,000 metres in front of the city gates. When the yellow light appeared, the elder in black floating in the sky stared before instantly realising what the Mountain Giant was going to

do. He desperately shouted, “Retreat! Immediately retreat!”

However, it was too late. Just as the Forgotten City's soldiers heard the elder in black’s voice, the earth had started to move, and the Mountain Giant once again stood up. As it stood... the land that was covered with the yellow light also rose up. The ground 1,000 metres in front of Ling Tian City was completely lifted up, and the land that was lifted was 20 metres thick. From a distance, it looked as if a 1,000 metre tall mountain was suddenly lifted up. This scene was simply too frightening, and it looked like something that only a True God could do. The Mountain Giant had fused with the land and furiously released all of its power. Slowly, the land was tilted by 90 degrees, and a scene that shocked the entire battlefield was revealed. The 1,000 metres of land was pushed over mercilessly towards the densely-gathered Forgotten City's soldiers.

The terrified screams sounded like a symphony from hell, and a countless amount of the Forgotten City's soldiers were instantly buried underneath the ground. No matter how fast they were, they were unable to avoid being crushed by a thousand metres piece of land. When the land was slammed down, it became a massive tomb, under which countless bodies were buried. Less than half of the Forgotten City's soldiers were lucky enough not to be caught up within the attack, while all of the normal soldiers who had been buried instantly died. More than half of the Silver Corps had died instantly, and the Gold Corps, through their powerful lifeforce and battle strength, did not immediately die, but by the time they could see the sun again, all they could see were corpses.

More than 50,000 of the 100,000 Forgotten City's soldiers were killed by the Mountain Giant’s furious attack, including many Elite grade soldiers. The elder in black was also smashed hundreds of meters away, and he cut a sorry figure as he tried to get the dirt and dust off his face. At that moment, he heard a furious roar from the Forgotten Emperor, “Black Demon!! What the hell are you doing?! Didn’t I tell you to seal that Mountain Giant with the Moon

God Barrier? Look at what you've done!!"

Looking down at the pitiful soldiers, Black Demon felt a chill throughout his body, and he knew that he had made a big mistake because of his arrogance. He could not allow this to go on, so took out a moon-shaped item and threw it at the Mountain Giant.

Immediately, a silver pillar of light descended from the sky, covering the Mountain Giant's body and making it shine with a faint silver glow. Immediately, the Mountain Giant's body was fixed in place before it was completely petrified, unable to move or make any noise. The silver light continued to cover the Mountain Giant, and it looked like it was not going to disappear any time soon.

"Oh? A barrier?" In the distance, the woman in red looked at the silver light covering the Mountain Giant's body and smirked. "This barrier doesn't seem to be all that much."

"Is big sis able to destroy it?" The young woman with golden hair asked.

"Easily." The woman in red wagged her finger while elegantly and enchantingly smiling.

Chapter 674 - Time Barrier

After the Mountain Giant was sealed by the barrier, Ling Tian City lost its solid defensive line. The Forgotten City's soldiers, who were previously scared witless, quickly reorganised and once again furiously rushed towards the city gates.

At that moment, the Fairy Clan’s 10 elders as well as all of the Celestial grade Fairies descended from the city walls, forming another defensive line. However, this defensive line couldn’t compare to the Mountain Giant. The instant they appeared, the 17 Heaven’s End grade Supreme Commanders and 60 or so Celestial grade Commanders rushed out, completely suppressing the 10 elders. The Fairies’ power was not suited for fighting, and there were more enemies of every grade. Just as the battle in front of the city gates began, the Fairy Clan’s experts were forced back repeatedly and were completely suppressed. They were unable to retaliate at all, let alone defend.

The Forgotten City's soldiers had essentially reached the city gates without any obstruction and started to attack the city gates...

Ling Tian City’s gates were forged by the Dwarf Clan from Chilling Star Iron, and they were supported by the Fairies’ buffs. It would be impossible for players to destroy these city gates. Even for the Forgotten City's soldiers, destroying the city gates within a short period of time was not possible. However, as countless weapon and magic attacks bombarded the city gates, which had been in perfect condition before, cracks started to run along them. However, as the Forgotten City's soldiers attacked the city gates, they bore the dense attacks of 900 Fairies, causing massive amounts of casualties every second.

“What a waste of time; all of you move out of the way!!”

A low voice came from the sky as the elder in black addressed as ‘Wind God’ appeared above the city gates. As he spoke, a berserk

look appeared in his eyes as he waved his Magic Staff, causing a berserk gale to sweep towards the Fairies on the city gates.

Whoosh~~

The gale from the Mysterious God grade Mage God was simply too monstrous, and all of the 900 Fairies, who were not weak at all, were sent flying far away. The closest they fell was 300 metres away, destroying the Fairies' arrow formation. The elder in black's gaze then turned towards where Yun Meng Xin and the others were standing on the city walls.

"Ignorant players who dared to resist our Royal City, go and die!"

The elder in black coldly laughed as a green light flashed around his body as a tornado swept towards the city walls... the attack from a Mage God was able to instantly kill everyone gathered there.

In the distance, Greenwood, who was fighting with the white figure, felt his eyes about to burst and he roared, "Hold it!!!"

However, to avoid damaging the city, Greenwood and the white figure had moved quite far away, and he was unable to return to protect them. He could only watch as the terrifying tornado roared towards the city gates. The white figure also stopped attacking and slightly frowned.

The instant the tornado was about to hit, everyone on the city walls could smell the scent of death... it was a completely overwhelming power, and although they were experts among players, they didn't have the power to resist or defend at all against a Mysterious God grade expert's attack.

In the distance, the woman in red's gaze became serious as she suddenly raised her right arm. The blue ring on her ring finger flashed with a light blue light, and a strange gaze appeared in her eyes as she lightly drew back her hand.

A snow-white figure of a woman appeared in front of the players

with her arms outstretched, hurriedly creating a defensive barrier. The tornado smashed onto the barrier, and the jade-green barrier only lasted for 2 seconds before shattering. The tornado, which had been weakened by half, smashed into the woman's chest, causing her to cry out. Her face turned pale, but she did not retreat, and she looked like a weak willow defending the front of the city walls, coldly glaring at Black Demon.

"Ying Xue..." Yun Meng Xin and the others, who had thought that they were definitely dead, let out a breath of relief and then looked at the Fairy Princess in front of them worriedly. The situation was incredibly extremely dire.

No one would be able to bear to attack the ice-cold Fairy Princess who was as beautiful as a goddess when facing her, and Black Demon was no exception. He turned his gaze towards the Fairy experts below and coldly smiled. "You think too highly of yourselves." After muttering, he flipped his palm, causing tens of sharp wind blades, that were sharper than even real knives, to descend toward a Fairy who was desperately fighting, slicing into his body.

It was a middle-aged Fairy who was at the Celestial grade. He had been surrounded and attacked by 3 of the Forgotten City's Celestial grade Commanders, and he had long since been heavily wounded. He couldn't defend against the Mysterious God grade Mage God's attacks at all, and the instant the tens of wind blades stabbed into him, his body stiffened as he silently fell.

"Greencloud!!"

"Uncle Greencloud!!"

"Greencloud!!"

Tens of sobbing voices cried out. The Fairies who saw this felt as if ten thousand arrows had pierced into their hearts, causing them to scream in anguish. They rushed past the enemies in front of them, desperately rushing towards the fallen Fairy hoping that he

had only fallen and had not died. The elder in black coldly laughed and raised his hands as a gigantic vortex of wind slowly gathered above his head.

“Bastard!!” Greenwood’s body trembled, his entire body feeling cold as flames of fury burned within his eyes. When he saw that the elder in black was about to attack again, he roared and took out the Fairy Clan’s strongest bow. Extremely furious, he unleashed an Endless Jade Arrow towards the elder in black.

The instant the Endless Jade arrow was shot out, it tore through the air like it was a thin piece of paper. The sound it gave off was so powerful that even the powerful man in white’s heart felt as if it had been twisted.

Black Demon, who was just about to unleash his attack, suddenly felt a heart-piercing sense of danger from behind him. Without even thinking about it, he used the power of the wind to quickly move, instantly appearing 10 metres above where he had been. The jade-green light immediately pierced through where he had been an instant ago, causing ripples of shock to appear within his heart. Just as Black Demon sighed in relief, his pupils contracted... because the jade-green arrow had suddenly changed direction and was shooting towards his chest.

This time, Black Demon was caught completely unprepared and was not able to dodge the arrow. When he was hit by the arrow, a ball of green light exploded as Black Demon cried out in pain. The berserk Nature energy from the arrow sent his body flying backwards, and even the Forgotten City’s experts below were caught within the shockwave. They were sent flying 100 metres away, and 30 or so Gold Corps warriors were instantly killed.

Greenwood tightly gripped the bow and was just about to rush towards Black Demon when the white figure blocked his path.

Greenwood coldly laughed, a mocking look on his face, “In order to destroy an innocent player’s city, the Forgotten City moved out

2 Mysterious God grade experts, what extravagance! I doubt that you spent that much effort 10,000 years ago in the battle with the Demon Beast Clan. What I never thought was that a Mysterious God grade peak-level expert would rush into the battlefield and shamelessly kill those weaker than him!!"

The white figure's eyelids flickered as he calmly replied, "I already warned you that the 'other person' would not be as principled as me. What he does has nothing to do with me; my duty is to tie you down. If you want to save them, you'll have to defeat me first."

Greenwood did not say anymore, and he released all of his Fairy power as he madly attacked the white figure...

"Bastard!!!"

The Wind God Black Demon, who had been injured by the Endless Jade arrow, was completely infuriated and roared, spinning in the air as he gathered a dark-green energy vortex, and after condensing it for 10 or so seconds, he narrowed his eyes as he shouted out, "All of you can go die!!"

The dark wind was like a demon's sickle, spiralling towards Ling Tian City's city gates.

Countless tearing sounds reverberated through the air, and the heavily-damaged city gates were finally destroyed, the Forgotten City's soldiers flooding into the city. The thick city walls had also been destroyed on both sides by the wind, allowing even more of the Forgotten City's soldiers to rush in. They started to destroy everything inside... the 8 Celestial grade Fairies who had been caught in it lasted only for a few seconds before their HP was cleared and fell to the ground.

Greenwood's furious roars sounded out from far away, but because of the white figure, he was unable to return. The 10 elders' eyes were completely red, and tears could be seen within them as they watched the Fairies fall. They almost burst into tears... the

Fairy Clan had been hidden away for thousands of years, and they had only died from old age. None of them had died from accidents or battles before. Because the Fairy Clan was in decline and only had 2,000 Fairies, they were incredibly familiar with each other and were like a massive family in which everyone knew each other.

This was the first time seeing their family dying in battle, and they roared with fury. Tears streamed out of their eyes, and their hearts dripped with blood...

With the city gates destroyed and the Forgotten City's soldiers swarming into the city, even if the Mountain Giant could regain its freedom, there was no chance of turning the tables. Yun Meng Xin could no longer hear anything, and her vision became hazy. When she saw the sight of Ling Tian City being destroyed, her body swayed, and she fell backwards from the massive psychological impact.

“Big sister Meng Xin!” Xiao Qi and Su’Er hurriedly ran up to support Yun Meng Xin’s body. When they saw that there were more and more of the Forgotten City’s soldiers entering the city, tears started to fall from their faces.

Far away, in the sky.

“Since the saviour hasn’t arrived, looks like I have to act,” the woman in red said as she looked towards the West, the smile gone from her face.

“You don’t seem to look very happy,” The young woman with golden hair replied.

“Indeed, although part of me wants to see him go crazy, it won’t make me happy,” the woman in red said as she raised her right hand, the ring on her middle finger starting to gather a dense yellow light.

“Go crazy? Why?” The young woman with golden hair asked

before adding, “There were so many people attacking last time and millions of defending players died, but he didn’t go crazy.”

“Ah, Yola, this time’s different from the last.” The woman in red shook her head as she pointed down at the chaotic scene below. “It’s completely different. Players can revive an infinite number of times. Even if they die 10,000 times, they won’t truly die. However, many Fairies died this time… after living creatures that belong to this world die, they’re not as lucky as us players, and they will die permanently, never to wake up again. Knowing how fiercely protective he is, what do you think his response will be after seeing this?”

Yola opened her mouth and lightly trembled as she replied, “I suddenly… somewhat pity the Forgotten City. However, how are you going to help them? Kill them all?”

The woman in red rolled her eyes. “Do you think I’m a god? I’m not even able to deal with that large crowd of Heaven’s End grade soldiers, let alone those 2 Mysterious God grade ones. All I can do is stall until that man returns… as for whether he can save Ling Tian City after he returns, that’s up to him.”

After speaking, the yellow light from the ring covered her entire right hand. She then pointed towards the Ling Tian City as she said in a low voice, “Lachesis, make everything here fall silent… Time Barrier!”

Chapter 675 - Undead Phoenix

As the woman in red spoke, a yellow light burst forth from the ring and covered the area beneath them. In an instant, the entire world suddenly fell silent.

The sound of killing, screaming, and explosions all disappeared. Even the sound of the gentle breeze completely disappeared. It was as if they had suddenly been transported from an incredibly raucous world into a completely silent world.

It wasn't just sound that disappeared. All of the people, Fairies, pets, weapons, arrows, magic attacks, rocks, and dust froze in place as time passed. This sort of strange scene continued to last, and not a single thing moved.

It was as if time had been stopped...

Stopping time was something that only appeared in stories, and it was something so against nature and the natural order of things that it should have been impossible. However, this was the terrifying reality. After all, the entirety of Ling Tian City, as well as the 30 kilometres around it, had truly been frozen in time.

Control over time was one of the heaven-defying abilities of the western godly item [Lachesis], and it was the only item capable of standing on the same level as the [Lunar Scourge]. While most of the Lunar Scourge's abilities were focused on fighting and destruction, Lachesis' abilities were more focused on control... control over all elemental essence, order, and fate in the world.

After the world below them had fallen completely silent, the woman in red pulled her hand back as the yellow ring lost its lustre and became dim. The woman's face also became incredibly pale, and her body swayed, almost falling.

"Ah... big sis!" Yola cried out as she hurriedly caught the woman. "A-Are you alright?"

“I’m… fine…” The woman in red replied, a trace of weakness in her voice as her face remained abnormally pale. She looked below as she softly said, “I wanted to use the Time Barrier to give him a surprise, but it looks like this surprise will have to wait for a few months… after casting such a large Time Barrier… the cost was much greater than I expected… I’m fine though, and I just need to rest for a while.”

The woman stretched out her right hand with great difficulty and said with a soft voice to the 3 different-coloured rings, “Mo’Er, come out.”

As she called out, the 3 rings simultaneously flashed with light as an orb of red, yellow, and blue light appeared. After spinning around a few times, the light dimmed and dissipated as a petite girl appeared on her hand!

The girl’s eyes were like stars, and she had flawless, white skin. Her hair and dress were red, yellow, and blue, and when looking closely, one would find that the girl looked about 10 years old, but was only 20 centimetres tall. She had no shoes on her pure-white feet as she stood on the woman in red’s hand. Looking at the woman, her dark eyes, which looked like stars twinkling, blinked before saying with a worried expression, “Master, you seem so tired. It’s not good for you to cast such a large Time Barrier.”

“I know; I won’t do it in the future.” While looking at the small girl, the woman in red did not seem as cold and proud, and her gaze and expression became warmer and gentler. “As such, I need Mo’Er to help me now.”

“Ahh… got it.”

The pocket-sized girl referred to as ‘Mo’Er’ nodded and floated down from the woman’s hand. She then cutely shouted as her body started to spin and shot out a 3-coloured light. The light gradually expanded until it became… a gigantic pterosaur!!

It was nearly 10 metres long, and it had well-defined horns on its

head. Its eyes were a deep yellow colour, and they could strike terror into anyone's heart. Its 10 metre long body was a flame-red colour, while its demonic-looking wings were blue and incredibly wide. They looked similar to a bat's wings, but when they were spread, they were even larger than its body. It softly beat its gigantic wings, and it came to where the woman in red and Yola were, effortlessly remaining in the air as the woman in red and Yola stepped onto its back.

Naturally, the woman wouldn't have summoned this 3-coloured Pterosaur before because of how big it was. Once it appeared, it would definitely give her and Yola away. However, now that those below them had been frozen in time, no one would discover the 3-coloured pterosaur. Sitting on the pterosaur's back, the woman in red gradually recovered, and she looked into the distance as she said in a low voice, "If you're able to get back before the Time Barrier disappears, I want to see how you will deal with this impossible situation. If you can once again salvage this situation, I'll have lost my confidence in beating you."

.....

Underworld, Underworld Volcano.

In the Underworld Royal City, one could only see the fiery sky, and only after going near it would one realise how terrifying the sea of flames was. When Ling Chen was still 3 kilometres away, his entire person had been dyed with a red light. The flames from the Underworld Volcano rushed to the sky – and this was no exaggeration at all. The flames were so ferocious and berserk that they extended up as far as the eye could see, and it was to the point that they really were in the sky.

With Xi Ling, Ling Chen was not afraid of the flames or heat at all. However, as he travelled over the incredibly red ground, he could tell that the temperature was high to an unimaginable degree. Xiao Hui and Leng'Er had returned to the Pet Space, and Xi Ling was in her humanoid form beside Ling Chen, looking at the

pillars of flames as a strange light flickered within her eye.

“Xi Ling, is that voice still calling you?” Ling Chen asked.

“Mm…” Xi Ling nodded. “And it sounds closer and closer.”

“What sort of voice is it?” Ling Chen asked.

“I’m not sure…” Xi Ling gently shook her head. “It sounds like a soul, and I’m unable to properly describe it. It’s just that… it sounds quite familiar… and it has a very, very special feeling to it…”

They started to walk slower as Ling Chen and Xi Ling came closer and closer to the Underworld Volcano’s boundary. In actuality, this place wasn’t so much a ‘volcano’ as a ‘sea of flames’. Continuing forwards, the ground became a pure crimson red colour, and it had become soft. As they walked over it, they left footprints behind. Looking ahead, Ling Chen slightly frowned… When he had first come here, the temperature had already been extremely terrifying. Even the Lava Purgatory that the Vermillion Bird resided in hadn’t been so intense! After the Phoenix Clan went extinct and the Golden Crow disappeared, the Vermillion Bird was the sovereign of flames, yet the flames here were even hotter than in the Lava Purgatory, and flames should not exist in the Underworld… just what was going on?

Moreover, even though Ling Chen himself didn’t fear the flames or the heat, it was still possible for his equipment to slowly melt because of the high temperature.

“Ahh!!” At that moment, Xi Ling suddenly cried out and looked upwards. Seeing this, Ling Chen also quickly looked up. In that moment, he also nearly cried out… because within his gaze, the pillar of flames suddenly twisted and formed an incredibly large dragon-shaped flame, which rushed towards Ling Chen and Xi Ling… Ling Chen and Xi Ling were completely covered by the blazing, crimson fire, and the only thing they could see was fire.

“Fudge!!” Although he knew that he wouldn’t be injured by the flames, it was still a shocking scene that was almost enough to scare his soul out of his body. Ling Chen only had time to curse, and he couldn’t even evade as both he and Xi Ling were devoured by the flames.

……

When Xi Ling opened her eyes, although her surroundings were blisteringly hot, she only felt a gentle warmth. Only flames existed above, below, and to her sides, and it was as if she had entered a world made purely of flames. What’s more, Ling Chen was gone from her side.

“Master… Where are you, master?” Xi Ling anxiously called out as she hurriedly ran around within the sea of flames, trying to find Ling Chen.

“Don’t worry, he’s receiving the Phoenix God Heavenly Flames’ blessings, which are incredibly beneficial to him. How could I harm the human you follow? I’m only giving him some more power to protect himself and you.”

A mighty, yet gentle, ancient voice sounded out from within the sea of flames. Xi Ling looked around her as she asked in confusion, “Who are you? Was it you who called me here?”

“Yes. Child… I didn’t wait 10,000 years for nothing; you’ve finally come. 10,000 years… it’s been a whole 10,000 years… you’ve already grown up… wonderful.” There was a mix of emotions within the ancient voice: relief, joy, melancholy, sorrow…

“You still haven’t told me who you are!” After Xi Ling calmed down, she did not try to find the origin of the voice anymore. “You mentioned the Phoenix God Heavenly Flames just then. Those are the extreme flames that only the Phoenix Clan’s Royal Clan possesses. Could you be a Phoenix? But didn’t the Phoenixes go extinct a long time ago?”

“Haha, that’s right, I’m indeed a Phoenix,” The ancient voice acknowledged this before deeply sighing, “and the Phoenix Clan has indeed perished. A long, long, time ago, the entire Phoenix Clan perished, while I’m just an Undead Phoenix that has also been dead for many years. I’ve relied on the Underworld’s deathly aura to keep the remainder of my soul and power intact.”

“Undead… Phoenix?” Xi Ling muttered in shock. Undead feared fire, so as an Undead, the Phoenix must have a Darkness attribute. It wasn’t that Darkness and Fire couldn’t co-exist, but that Darkness’ sub-branch Undead type was extremely weak towards Fire types, so it was illogical that an Undead creature could possess a Fire attribute. This voice had claimed that it was an Undead Phoenix, and living in this sea of flames was evidence that its control over fire was extremely powerful. However, it was an extremely unnatural existence.

Chapter 676-Fire God's Bulwark

"Why are you here then? And why... were you calling me? It feels like you seem to know me," Xi Ling slowly asked.

"Haha," the ancient voice laughed. "I was willing to become an Undead to preserve my soul so that I could wait for you to come here."

"Wait for me?" Xi Ling said in shock as she pointed at herself.

"That's right. You possess the Phoenix Royal Clan's final bloodline and power, and you are my final concern... my child. I'm your father."

"...!!" Xi Ling's mouth opened as she dumbly stared ahead. "Fath...er...?"

The concept of a father was very faint in Xi Ling's mind, and when she heard that the voice was actually her father, she felt shock and nothing else. This was because from when she was born, she had been by herself, without any parents or friends. There was no one who she could talk to or rely on. Just like that, she had grown up in loneliness. Afterwards, during the Demon Beast Clan's catastrophe, she had used up all of her yet-to-mature flames in order to save some innocent animals, destroying a wave of Demon Beasts. Her flames had shocked the Demon Emperor and the 10 ancient demon beasts, and under their attacks, she had been captured and locked up by them... for a whole 10,000 years.

From when she had been born to until very recently, she had spent her entire life with loneliness and darkness as her companions. The first person who had ever shown her warmth and kindness was Ling Chen, which was why she had vowed to forever follow him. Within her life, she had never had the concept of a father.

"That's right, I'm your father. Your mother was the Golden

Crow, who disappeared before your birth. My union with your mother was perhaps a mistake – at least, it caused great unrest within the entire Phoenix Clan, and it was the root of the Phoenix Clan's demise. However, I do not regret it at all. 10,000 years ago, in order to save the Forgotten Continent, your mother used all of her power to destroy the Demon Beast Clan and in the process severely wounded the Demon Emperor, causing him to die 5 years later due to the Flames of the Nine Suns that she left within his body. However, your mother was also severely wounded by the Demon Emperor and other Demon Beasts, and she died before you were born. However, your mother did not feel sad about dying – after all, there can only ever be one Golden Crow. If she didn't die, you would never be born.

"As for me, I died long before your mother. It's just that the Phoenix Royal Clan has a special Soul Rebirth, which allowed my soul to continue to exist long after my body died. This allowed me to watch over you. 2 months after your mother passed away, I saw you being born. 3 years later, I saw you accidentally enter the Demon Beast Clan's territory, and you were forced into dire straits by the Demon Beast Clan. By that time, the Demon Emperor was on his dying breath, and your flames evoked the fear of the Demon Emperor as well as all of the Demon Beasts. They did all they could to destroy you, so I used my soul origin energy to protect you so that they couldn't harm you at that time. However, in the end, they used a special Darkness power to seal you off... I tried to undo that seal for many years... and by that time, I was reaching my time limit."

"10,000 years ago, that mysterious power that prevented the Darkness energy from hurting me... came from you?" Xi Ling asked as she stared ahead. The question that had been burning within her heart for 10,000 years had finally been answered.

The Undead Phoenix warmly laughed as it continued to speak, "At that time, I was unable to save you. However, I didn't believe

that the Golden Crow and the Phoenix Royal Clan's bloodline would be extinguished like that. The Phoenix Clan has never committed any crimes, and the Golden Crow's power exists to destroy disasters in this world, so fate definitely wouldn't destroy our clans. As such, I always believed that you would one day escape or be saved by someone... In the end, I moved my soul, corpse, and origin energy to the Underworld that I had discovered not too long ago. I hoped that a miracle would happen, and I was not disappointed.

"The dense deathly aura turned my corpse into an Undead and also awakened the power within my body. A hundred years ago, my soul and consciousness were reawakened, allowing me to remember my former memories. The reason I would rather become an Undead than completely die is because our Phoenix Royal Clan's power awakens after one is 3,000 years old, and the new Phoenix God is guided by the previous generation's Phoenix God. After this happens, what they will have will no longer be normal Phoenix flames but the Phoenix God Heavenly Flames.

"As such, I continuously waited for you here, year after year. After becoming an Undead, my control of fire has been continuously weakening, and the origin flames within my body are no longer controlled by me. They're leaking out more and more, creating a sea of fire that grows larger and larger, which will cause disaster for the Undead. Luckily, I didn't wait for nothing, and you've finally come... my child."

"What Phoenix Royal Clan; what memories reawakening... I don't understand what you're saying." Xi Ling shook her head, her mind extremely chaotic.

The ancient voice paused for a moment before softly replying, "You don't need to immediately understand this. Just remember, my child, that all you need to do is live well. You possess the Phoenix Royal Clan's bloodline as well as the Golden Crow's bloodline, and you contain both our Clans' hope. Don't think

about using your power to save the world, and you should ignore those catastrophes. I just want you to be able to live well... if anything, I hope that you can remember that at least.

"Now, close your eyes and receive our Phoenix Royal Clan's most important Awakening Ceremony. To be able to see this day, the 10,000 years of waiting were all worth it. I don't have any more regrets. It's just that I've caused unforgiveable disasters in the Underworld, and I will not be able to make up for it..." The ancient voice gradually died down, and a piercing cry sounded out from within the sea of flames. Following this, boundless raging flames descended from the sky, falling onto Xi Ling's dazed body and completely enwrapping her...

At that moment, there was also a ball of fire burning around Ling Chen's body, which had persisted for a long time. The fire's temperature went from scorching, to boiling, to warm, and finally became incredibly comfortable. This caused Ling Chen's expression to go from being savagely twisted, to peaceful, and then to the point that he could close his eyes and moan.

"Ding... you have been baptised by the 'Phoenix God Heavenly Flames', and have received the special skill [Fire God's Bulwark]."

A system announcement sounded out in Ling Chen's ears as the flames around him quickly disappeared. Ling Chen opened his eyes and saw that the boundless sea of flames around him was quickly extinguishing, and most of the flames around his body were gone, with only a faint layer of fiery light around his body.

"Fire God's Bulwark? This name..."

Even until now, Ling Chen didn't know what had happened after he had been swept into the sea of flames, much less what the flames around him that had prevented him from moving were doing. As such, when he heard the system announcement and the mention of the Thunder God's Bulwark, his heart trembled as he quickly looked at the special skill's description:

[Fire God's Bulwark]: An ultimate blessing granted by the Phoenix Royal Clan's soul's power. The power can only be given once, and it will cause one's soul to take great damage. After receiving this blessing, the target will receive the Phoenix Royal Clan's bloodline's protection. Effect: Absorbs any type of Fire element damage. Can absorb Fire element damage and convert it into HP, MP, or store it within one's body to release at will, causing massive Fire damage.

Ling Chen's jaw dropped, and he felt flabbergasted.

When he had first heard the name 'Fire God's Bulwark', he had a feeling that it would be something like this, but after reading the skill's description, he was given a big fright. It was almost exactly the same as the Thunder God's Bulwark given by the White Tiger, and it was just as heaven-defying! With the Fire God's Bulwark, not only would Fire attacks not be able to hurt him, but it would also give positive effects. In other words, after receiving similar effects from the Aquarius Orb with respect to water and from the White Tiger with respect to Lightning, he could now do the same with Fire! What's more, he could store Fire attacks like with the Thunder God's Bulwark and release the stored Fire attacks into more powerful Fire attacks!

Ling Chen stared at the quickly receding flames, and he simply couldn't understand how such a good thing had just fallen into his lap for no reason! Back then, he had received the White Tiger's Thunder God's Bulwark, which Qi Yue had called 'fate that even the heavens would be jealous of', because the Thunder God's Bulwark was an ultimate blessing that might not appear for hundreds of thousands if not millions of years! After the White Tiger fell, it would be the final time. And now, he had received a similar blessing but with respect to Fire. What's more, it had come without any reason. Back then, he had helped the White Tiger, so it was not surprising for the White Tiger to give him such a thing. Today, he had not done anything, yet he had received such a big

gift; Ling Chen simply felt as if he was dreaming!

Wait, no way! He couldn't actually be dreaming, would h... Ling Chen pinched his face and then looked up as he stared in surprise. As the flames receded, a golden orb of light appeared within his vision.

"Xi... Ling?" Ling Chen muttered as he looked at the orb of golden light, his voice filled with uncertainty.

Xi Ling was standing about 10 steps in front of him, and had her eyes tightly closed, a peaceful look on her face. However, she had become about half a head taller, and her hair had grown longer. It was so long that it was to the point that it reached her perky bottom. Her face became more beautiful and less youthful, and she gave off a more mature air...Before, Xi Ling had looked like a 12 or 13 year old girl, but she now looked around 16 or 17 years old!

However, it was definitely still Xi Ling, causing Ling Chen to call out her name.

However, her flame-red clothes were gone, and they were replaced by a dress that was of the exact same style, but it was a dazzling golden colour! What's more, the fires burning around her were brilliant and beautiful golden flames.

Chapter 677 - Saint Destroyer grade Xi Ling

As if she heard Ling Chen's uncertain call, Xi Ling silently opened her eyes. Within her beautiful, crystal-like eyes, there was a faint crimson-golden light flickering.

Following this, system announcements began to ring out.

"Ding... your pet Xi Ling's grade has increased and has become a Saint Destroyer grade pet. All of her stats have been greatly increased, her passive abilities have become more powerful, and she has awakened her Phoenix God Heavenly Flames and Vermillion Bird's Flames. Her [Fire Attack] has become more powerful, her passive skill [Rootless Flames] has disappeared, and she has unlocked [Golden Flames]. Skill [Heaven-Burning Flames] has been upgraded into [Nine Inferno Heavenly Flames], [Solar Laser] has been upgraded into [Solar Deathray], [Burning Fire Array] has been upgraded into [Heaven-Burning Flame Sea], [Pale Flames] has been upgraded into [Extreme Pale Flames], [Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns] has become more powerful, [Dazzling Red Lotus] has been unlocked, [World Burning Heavenly Flames] has been unlocked, [Phoenix Sky Dance] has been unlocked, special barrier skill [Barrier – Golden Heaven] has been unlocked, illusory skill [Golden Phoenix God Transformation] has been unlocked, ultimate forbidden skill [Pale Aria] has been unlocked."

When the words 'Saint Destroyer' sounded out, Ling Chen almost couldn't believe his ears.

"That's right, he had heard 'Saint Destroyer'...they were 2 words that described the absolute peak for the Mystic Moon world. It was a level that the strongest beings in the Mystic Moon world, the Moon Goddesses, were at, yet Xi Ling had suddenly risen to such a grade.

Even though Ling Chen was just a player, he clearly understood what Xi Ling's step from the Mysterious God grade to the Saint

Destroyer grade meant, and he understood just how difficult it was taking such a step. However, Xi Ling had just reached the Mysterious God grade 2 months ago, and now she had reached the Saint Destroyer grade that all beings looked up to! Only a matured Golden Crow would reach such a level.

He had somehow received the Fire God's Bulwark for some reason, and Xi Ling had stepped into the unimaginable Saint Destroyer grade... Ling Chen stared at the extinguishing sea of flames, not understanding just what it was hiding.

Although Saint Destroyer grade Bosses were on a completely different level when compared to Saint Destroyer grade pets, it still represented the ultimate level that a pet could reach. As the system announcement sounded out, Xi Ling's stats appeared before Ling Chen's eyes, showing him just how powerful the new Xi Ling was.

[Crimson Spirit]: Type: Beast Pet, Level: LV62, Grade: Saint Destroyer, Master: Ling Tian. A descendant of the Golden Crow and Phoenix Royal Clan. After exhausting its lifeforce, it was brought back to life by the Vermillion Bird's soul flames, and it received part of the Vermillion Bird's strength, becoming a Fire spirit beast that possessed the 3 most powerful types of flames. It has a beautiful appearance and extremely powerful Fire attacks, and it can release pure golden flames at will.

Attributes: HP: 21,600, MP: 432,000, Physical Attack Power: 43,200, Magic Attack Power: 172,800, Physical Defence: 320, Movement Speed: 380. Elemental Resistances: Water: -30%, Fire: 200%, Wind: 90%, Lightning: 90%, Earth: 90%, Light: 90%, Darkness: 90%.

Passive Abilities:

- Can fly up to 100 metres high and carry many people.
- Automatically recovers 3% MP every second and is immune to all abnormal statuses debuffs, and restrictions on Magic attacks.
- Can absorb any form of Fire damage and freely convert it to MP or HP, and owner and fellow pets become immune to Fire damage.

[Flame Attack]: Normal attack, cannot be upgraded. Unleashes a golden flame that burns all targets within a 20 metre range with rootless flames. Damage dealt is equivalent to Magic Attack Power, consumes 10 MP, no cooldown.

[Golden Flames]: Current Level: LV2, max level. A passive skill awakened after combining the Golden Crow's bloodline and the Phoenix Royal Clan's bloodline, which is unleashed from and controlled by one's soul. It is an ultimate flame that does not require Nature's Fire elemental essence to act as a medium. It ignores any Fire Resistance that any creature or item has, and it has terrifyingly high temperatures and destructive abilities. Effects: Ignores all Fire Resistance, and all Fire Magic does not require any casting time. All Fire type damage+100%, and all Fire attacks contain a powerful Destruction attribute, easily destroying anything that is weak towards fire. Can destroy or even completely melt equipment below Heaven's End grade.

[Nine Inferno Heavenly Flames]: Current Level: LV5, max level. Unleashes boundless Golden Flames that mercilessly burn all targets within 100 metres, dealing 500% Magic Attack Power to the targets and has a 30% chance to add a 'Burn' effect for 10 seconds. After casting, even the entire sky will become golden. Consumes 700 MP, cooldown time: 2.5 seconds

[Solar Deathray]: Current Level: LV5, max level. Condenses Golden Flames into a bright and burning light from the sun, shooting down a searing deathray from the skies to a single target. It deals Fire damage equivalent to 1500% Magic Attack Power, and it has a 100% chance to add a 'Burn' effect for 10 seconds. Destroys all equipment Celestial grade and below. Once locked on, it cannot be evaded. Consumes 1800 MP, cooldown time: 5 seconds.

[Phoenix Arrow]: ..... (no change)

[Vermillion Judgment]: ..... (no change)

[Heaven-Burning Flame Sea]: Current Level: LV5, max level. Uses

Golden Flames to cover all directions, creating a destructive formation array of heavenly flames that burn all targets within its range. Covers 500 metres around the caster, dealing damage equivalent to (200,000 + Magic Attack Power x 10), and it has a 100% chance to add a 'Burn' effect for 10 seconds. Takes 2 seconds to gather flames for the array. Consumes 24,000 MP, cooldown time: 5 minutes.

[Nine Suns Rebirth]: ..... (no change)

[Phoenix Sky Dance]: Current Level: LV6, Highest Level: LV10, Level Required to upgrade to LV7: LV70. A unique spirit skill of the Phoenix Royal Clan that uses the Phoenix God Heavenly Flames to condense many golden Phoenixes that can be used to freely attack. The golden Phoenixes can release an attack comparable to one's [Flame Attack] every 3 seconds, and their attacks can be dispersed or focused. All of the golden Phoenixes cannot be destroyed, and the duration that they last for are equivalent to one's level (currently 62 seconds). At most, one can create 6 golden Phoenixes, and with [Pale Flames], one can create (6x7) golden Phoenixes. Costs 60,000MP, cooldown time: 10 minutes.

Ultimate Skills:

[Barrier – Golden Heaven]: Current Level: LV1, Highest Level: LV2, Level Required to upgrade to LV2: LV99. A barrier skill unique to Xi Ling. Releases a unique fire that turns the 2,000 metres around her into a golden world of flames. Within the barrier, all creatures' Fire Resistance is reduced by 100% regardless of level or grade (including Fire element beings). Causes those within range to take damage equivalent to Xi Ling's [Fire Attack] every second. Costs 6,000 MP per second, and the maximum duration that it can be cast for is equivalent to Xi Ling's level (currently 62 seconds). Can only be used once every day.

[Pale Flames]: Special skill, cannot be levelled up. A flame unique to Xi Ling that is created by combining the Golden Crow's Flames, Vermillion Bird's Flames, and Phoenix God Heavenly Flames,

creating a terrifying white flame. Once activated, all flames that Xi Ling releases become white, and they completely ignore the target's Fire Resistance, dealing 7 times the Fire damage and incinerating everything they come into contact with. After activating, all Fire skills can be instantly casted and do not cost any MP. Lasts for 30 seconds and can only be used once every day. After activating, Xi Ling's flames will become dormant for 24 hours.

[Golden Phoenix God Transformation]: Illusory skill that stimulates the Phoenix Royal Clan's blood and power, transforming one into a golden Phoenix God and allowing one to escape from the restrictions of 'Pet rules'. After using this skill, one's power becomes inauspicious. Costs 1 MP, lasts for (MP/10,000) seconds (rounding down, currently 69 seconds), cooldown time: 1 month.

Forbidden Skills:

[Dazzling Red Lotus]: The most destructive ability from the Vermillion Bird Clan, cannot be levelled up. Concentrates all of the Vermillion Bird's origin power into a single point and releases it. The berserk Vermillion Bird's Flames blossom like a beautiful lotus, and under its petals, all life withers and burns. The effects do not differentiate between allies and foes. Damage is equal to (Magic Attack Power x 3 x Current Level) and range is equal to (Current Level x 200), and it destroys all equipment below Celestial grade and destroys everything that is destroyable. Costs 260,000MP and cannot use any Vermillion Bird skills for 1 hour afterwards, cooldown time: 1 month.

[World Burning Heavenly Flames]: The most destructive ability from the Phoenix bloodline, cannot be levelled up. Releases the cry of 10,000 Phoenixes, filling the skies with extreme flames and turning the heavens and earth into a sea of flames. Causes boundless meteors and Phoenix flames to crazily rain down, turning the area into a purgatory of fire. The effects do not

differentiate between allies and foes, and the surrounding area will be completely filled with flames, causing basic damage equal to (Magic Attack Power x 200%). The largest range is (Current Level x 500), and it can last for (Current Level) minutes (currently 62 minutes). Costs 420,000MP and cannot use any Phoenix skills for 1 hour afterwards, cooldown time: 1 month.

[Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns]: A destructive Forbidden Skill from the Golden Crow's bloodline, cannot be upgraded. Releases one's own source of power and condenses flames similar to nine suns into an ultimate flame that can burn anything. When it reaches the peak of its strength, the Flames of the Sun can be directly used. The effects do not differentiate between allies and foes. Damage is equivalent to (Magic Attack Power x 900% x Current Level). The maximum range can be controlled within a range equivalent to Xi Ling's Magic Attack Power. Consumes all current MP and cannot use any Golden Crow skills for 1 hour afterwards, cooldown time: 1 month.

Ultimate Forbidden Skill:

[Pale Aria]: A forbidden ultimate skill unique to Xi Ling. When in absolute despair, it releases White Flames to turn everything into dust. The White Flames incinerate and destroy everything – the sky, the earth, all humans, the entire world, all evil, all impurity… causing everything to be reborn through a baptism in the White Flames, returning to a pure world. Effects: Sends all of the Fire elemental essence in the world into rebellion, incinerating the heavens and destroying the earth as well as all creatures within them. Can only be used once in Xi Ling's lifetime. After casting, Xi Ling's level falls to LV0 permanently, and she loses all of her flames.

Chapter 678 - Xi Ling's Tears

The difference between the Mysterious God grade and Saint Destroyer grade was currently displayed right before Ling Chen, and he was incredibly shocked. After reaching the Saint Destroyer grade, all of Xi Ling's stats had been increased by many times, but the greatest change was how monstrous many of her skills had become. Her main skills had been greatly upgraded, and not only did they deal more damage, but their cooldown times were also greatly reduced. Before, the [Burning Fire Array] had a cooldown time of 2 hours, but after being upgraded into the [Heaven-Burning Flame Sea], not only were its power and range greatly increased, but its cooldown time was also shortened to a mere 5 minutes.

After her flames became gold in colour, Xi Ling's skills, which were strong to begin with, became even more powerful. A powerful spirit skill, an illusory skill, a barrier skill... all of the skills' effects greatly shocked Ling Chen. The Golden Crow, Phoenix, and Vermilion Bird's ultimate skills were also unlocked. All of them were completely heaven-defying destructive skills, and compared to their might, the side-effects were almost negligible.

Back then in order to activate the [Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns] when at Heaven's End grade, Xi Ling had to sacrifice her life. When she was Mysterious God grade, Xi Ling had to fall unconscious for a long time and have her level greatly decreased. However, now that Xi Ling was Saint Destroyer grade, she merely couldn't use her Golden Crow skills for 1 hour. The Phoenix and Vermillion Bird's ultimate skills were also like this. A 1 month cooldown time was so short that it was almost unacceptable – after all, in front of these 3 ultimate skills, a large city would be burned to nothing, and even a normal Mysterious God grade Boss would have its HP reduced by more than half.

The Saint Destroyer grade Xi Ling was more than 10 times more powerful than the Mysterious God grade Xi Ling! Ling Chen's

strongest aspect was his attacks, but now Xi Ling's overall destructive power far surpassed his. If she activated [Pale Flames], the damage she could deal would completely eclipse Ling Chen even with [Soul Sacrifice] activated. Ling Chen silently calculated the amount of damage Xi Ling's ultimate skills would deal with [Pale Flames], and the results caused cold sweat to pour down his forehead.

The Golden Crow was publicly acknowledged to be the being with the greatest destructive power in the entire continent, and Xi Ling not only contained the Golden Crow's power, but also the Phoenix and the Vermillion Bird's power as well. The combination of their flames was not merely as simple as adding their destructive power – it had completely surpassed the Golden Crow's power. Even as a pet, although Xi Ling's other stats were quite weak, her destructive power was no weaker than that of a Saint Destroyer grade ultimate Boss!

Ling Chen silently marvelled in awe... with this sort of destructive power, Xi Ling could destroy a city in an instant – this was simply too heaven-defying. This sort of power deserved a divine tribulation even more so than the Shura from back then!

At the same time, the newest description regarding Xi Ling confirmed what Qi Yue had guessed back then. She wasn't just a Golden Crow but also the descendant of a Golden Crow and the Phoenix Royal Clan. It was just that perhaps the Golden Crow and Phoenix God did not realise that their 'mistake' had created the most powerful sovereign of fire.

"Master..." Xi Ling softly walked over to Ling Chen. Before, she was only as tall as Ling Chen's ribs, but she was now at his neck. Her smile was just as beautiful and cute, making anyone feel tenderness towards her. However, there was no joy and excitement on her face in response to growing up and becoming stronger. Instead, there was only a trace of sadness that caused Ling Chen's heart to ache.

“Xi Ling, you’ve grown up,” Ling Chen said in a soft voice. “Did you find the one who was calling you?”

“I did,” Xi Ling lightly nodded, lifted her face, and said, “H-He said that he’s my father has waited for me here for many years. He said that he gave you the Phoenix God Heavenly Flames’ blessing and caused my power to awaken… afterwards, he disappeared forever… forever…” Xi Ling’s voice lowered, and it contained some hints of trembling.

“Your father? The Phoenix Clan’s King?” Ling Chen felt quite surprised as he muttered, “So it was like that. Wait, but didn’t the Phoenix Clan go extinct a long time ago? How could this…”

“He said that he would rather become an Undead and wait for 10,000 years in order to awaken my power…” Xi Ling spoke with a pair of dimmed eyes as she lightly shook her head, “Father… he said he was my father. Ever since I was born, I never saw my father or any of my relatives. I thought that I did not have any parents… for a while, I thought that I might have parents somewhere out there. I thought that I may be able to find them one day, but after so many years, I long since forgot about their existence as well as the very concept of parents. I thought… I thought… that even if I found them, I wouldn’t feel anything, and I would only see them as strangers… but… but… after he disappeared, why do I feel so sad… I’ve never met him before, and I don’t have any feelings towards him… so why does my heart hurt so much…”

Xi Ling’s voice began to tremble more and more, and 2 streams of tears ran down her face.

When Ling Chen saw how Xi Ling looked, his heart also ached. He stepped forwards and gently hugged her, saying with a sigh, “It’s because he’s your father. No matter how much of a stranger he is to you, and even despite having no feelings towards him, the connection between your blood will never disappear. After he left, it’s impossible for your heart and soul not to ache as his daughter. Because he’s your father, he was willing to give up his status and

pride as the king of the Phoenix Clan, and he became an Undead to wait for you here for 10,000 years... in this world, the only ones who would do such a thing for you are your parents... the feelings they feel for you are not things that anyone else can copy or replace. Xi Ling, even though your parents weren't there when you were born or while you grew up, at least now, you're no longer a girl who did not receive any love from her parents. Your father gave everything he had in the remainder of his life to you."

Xi Ling's sobbing became louder and louder, and she finally burst into tears as she was unable to hold it back anymore. She howled as torrents of tears rolled down Ling Chen's crystal armour. Ling Chen silently hugged her while hazily looking in front of him, his mind incredibly chaotic...

I told Xi Ling such things and comforted her in such a way...

But I, myself...

My father and my mother... how should I face them...

.....

Underworld Royal City.

The pillars of flames disappeared, causing all of the Undead within the Undead Royal City to cheer loudly. However, an even more unbelievable scene immediately followed this. After the pillars of flames disappeared, the bright-red sky became fainter and fainter until it became a faint and dark red colour. Moreover, the redness of the Underworld Volcano gradually decreased, and even the hotness that had persisted in the Underworld Royal City for many years began to die down.

Over the past 10,000 years, this was the first time that the Underworld Royal City's temperature had gone down after the Underworld Volcano had appeared, and it was the first time that the sky towards the West was no longer red. The Undead all stared as their cheers became louder and louder. Even the Underworld

King's face was covered with disbelief and excitement.

At that moment, a blue light flashed as a man wearing jet-black heavy armour and a blue cape appeared. As soon as he appeared, he rushed towards the Underworld King, and before he came close, he started to excitedly yell, "Lord Underworld King! Great news! The Underworld Volcano's flames are quickly extinguishing, and its area is quickly shrinking. It... It was Lord Underworld King's son-in-law – he used some sort of special method to extinguish the flames there! In less than 15 minutes, all flames within 10 kilometres were extinguished, and even I can go near there. Lord son-in-law told me that all of the flames would disappear in less than 3 hours as will the Underworld Volcano... what's more, it will disappear permanently, never to appear again!!"

This Blue Darkness Underworld God was so excited that not only did the Underworld King hear him, but also most of the Underworld Royal City's Undead heard him as well. Instantly, their surroundings fell silent before once again erupting with heaven-shaking cheering, as many of the Undead cried tears of joy and gratitude.

Causing the Underworld Volcano to completely disappear within a few hours – even the invincible Underworld King was unable to do such a thing. If they had not seen the spectacle before them, none of the Undead would believe such a thing. However, when they saw the flames die down in the West and Blue Darkness Underworld God say it himself, they could not find any reason not to believe it.

The Underworld Royal City had never been so raucous and lively before, and it was filled with all sorts of cheering and praises. The Underworld Volcano was the source of the greatest calamity in the entire Underworld, and it was what they feared the most. If it continued to grow, there would be no place within the Underworld Royal City that could be inhabited by Undead. To date, the situation was so dire that they were on the verge of relocating.

No one could have imagined that on the second day that the Underworld's Princess had returned – the day after the Underworld King had suddenly obtained a son-in-law – that the catastrophe that threatened to destroy the entire Underworld would be resolved so quickly.

The sky in the West became dimmer and dimmer, and after 1 hour, they could barely see any redness in the sky at all. During that period of time, the Underworld King's gaze had not left the West at all, and the cheering had not stopped even briefly. He did not move an inch, and if one looked at him closely, they would be able to see his lips slightly moving as he muttered, "This son-in-law's simply incredible, incredible, incredible... he was already so overpowered before becoming a Shura. If he truly becomes a Shura one day, it'll simply be incredible... incredible..."

Chapter 679 - [Underworld Royal Earrings]

The Underworld Volcano was indeed quickly disappearing. As the final remnants of the Phoenix God's soul dissipated, the flames lost their source and were quickly extinguished. Regardless, these were Phoenix God Heavenly Flames that covered hundreds of kilometres – even if they were dying down, it would take many years for them to be fully extinguished. As such, in order to speed up the process, Ling Chen started to absorb the flames... he used the [Fire God's Bulwark] to madly absorb the Phoenix God Heavenly Flames, making him feel incredibly delighted. The Phoenix God Heavenly Flames that he absorbed would not disappear but would be forever stored within the [Fire God's Bulwark], which he could release at any time to cause mass destruction.

The destructive power of the flames from the Phoenix God was not something that normal flames could compare to.

With Xi Ling's help, all of the flames gathered towards where they were. Because of how terrifyingly fast the [Fire God's Bulwark] could absorb the flames, Ling Chen had absorbed nearly half of the Phoenix God Heavenly Flames that had been here for more than 10,000 years after 1 hour of walking while madly absorbing. In another 1 hour or so, he had completely absorbed all of the remaining flames.

Just like that, the Underworld Volcano disappeared without even a tongue of flame remaining. All that was left was the scorched ground that was still blistering hot. It wouldn't take too long for the heat to dissipate, allowing the dirt to return to normal Underworld dirt.

In less than 3 hours, the entire Underworld Volcano had been absorbed into the Fire God's Bulwark. Compared to the Lightning God's Bulwark, which lacked energy, if all of the flames from the Fire God's Bulwark were released, it would be enough to

completely annihilate the Forgotten City, which had existed for thousands of years.

Ling Chen remained with Xi Ling, who was reluctant to depart, at the centre of where the Underworld Volcano had been. After a while, Ling Chen used a Spatial Orb to return to the Underworld Royal City.

As the space distorted, Ling Chen appeared at the front of the Underworld Royal City because that was where he expected the Underworld King to be. When he appeared, he heard the Underworld Royal City filled with deafening cheering. In fact, it was even rowdier than during his 'marriage' to Leng'Er. Ling Chen looked around and saw dark mass of Undead, and he found that the cheering had suddenly stopped, resulting in the entire city becoming extraordinarily quiet as all of the Undead's gazes fell onto him. The passion in their gazes made him feel as if they had seen their own father come back from the dead.

"Lord Son-In-Law, y-you're back," The high-grade Undead closest to him said, his voice filled with excitement. As he spoke, his eyes almost shone with light, and he leaned forward by almost 30 degrees in respect.

Following this, various other high-grade Undead acted as if they had just woken up from a dream, and words of praise flooded Ling Chen's ears.

"Lord Son-In-Law!! Thank you for putting an end to the Underworld Volcano. You've saved us, the Underworld Royal City, and the whole Underworld!!"

"Lord Son-In-Law, you're a saviour sent by the heavens to save our Underworld!"

"No less than expected from the son-in-law chosen by Lord Underworld King! He's so amazing! Right after coming, he resolved the problem that has been plaguing us for thousands of years! Before, I didn't believe that Lord Son-In-Law defeated Chi

Xuan Wu Hen, and only now have I realised how foolish my disbelief was."

"Lord Son-In-Law, although you're a living creature, all of us Undead will never forget your kindness."

Although Undead were all dead, they still feared 'death', especially high-grade Undead. When they were in the Underworld, their intellect and consciousness were akin to those of normal humans. They feared death because their consciousness would completely disappear, and they would truly disappear from the world forever. As such, they were quite similar to living creatures in that aspect. The Underworld Volcano wouldn't have made it so that there was nowhere safe within a short period of time, nor would it have harmed this generation of Undead. However, in time, it would cause the entire Underworld to disappear. Seeing the Underworld Volcano grow every day, they felt themselves getting closer and closer to despair.

And now, the despair was completely gone. All of the Undead were delirious with joy, and they were filled with boundless gratitude towards Ling Chen.

The Underworld King strode over, and as soon as he came close, his shockingly-loud voice completely suppressed the voices of the other Undead, "What are you all yelling for? Keep it down. This boy is this Underworld King's son-in-law. For this Underworld King to give him my daughter, this is something he should be doing for the Underworld! What's so praiseworthy about it?"

The Underworld King's tone was one of nonchalance, but his face was completely red and his eyes were bulging. Even blind people would be able to tell that he was more excited than anyone else. The Underworld King walked over to Ling Chen in 3 steps and patted his shoulder, saying, "Son-in-law, not bad at all. Let's go and have a chat."

As countless Undead watched on with burning gazes, Ling Chen

was more or less dragged away by the Underworld King to the Underworld King's Residence.

Right after entering, the Underworld King's façade of calmness completely disappeared. He stared fixedly at Ling Chen as if he was going to devour him, giving Ling Chen the urge to escape. The Underworld King suddenly started laughing maniacally, "Hahahahaha!!! Hahahahahaha... well done, well done. No less than expected from this Underworld King's son-in-law; this Underworld King made such a good choice, hahaha..."

Ling Chen couldn't help but roll his eyes – was this Underworld King happier about me or more pleased with himself?!

After much delirious laughter, the Underworld King finally came back to his senses. He stretched out his hand and patted Ling Chen's shoulder as he earnestly said, "Son-in-law, this was all thanks to you. Not only did you bring back my daughter, but you also resolved a problem that has been plaguing us for 10,000 years and even threatened the existence of the Underworld. Perhaps you really are, like those Undead say, a saviour sent by the heavens."

"This... I think you're making this a bigger deal than it is," Ling Chen said in embarrassment.

"Come to think of it, just what did you do to make the Underworld Volcano disappear so quickly? From how I see it, such a thing is impossible. Let alone me, even the Moon God Clan's 3 Moon Goddesses working together wouldn't be able to do such a thing," the Underworld King said as he stared at Ling Chen with a burning gaze. He knew more than anyone else just how terrifying the Underworld Volcano was, and he knew that it was impossible for it to have been completely extinguish within 3 hours.

Ling Chen fell silent, wondering how he should reply to the Underworld King. However, the Underworld King shook his head. "Forget it, there's probably a secret within this that you can't tell anyone else, so don't worry about it. Just this conclusion is enough

for me... after finding Chan'Er and seeing the Underworld Volcano extinguished, I've never felt so relaxed in 10,000 years... Good son-in-law! Good son-in-law!"

After praising Ling Chen, the Underworld King looked down as if he was contemplating something. After a few moments, he made a decision and took off the dark-grey earrings that he wore, putting them into Ling Chen's hands. "Son-in-law, although we're family, I'm unable to rest easy without giving you a reward for this great deed. These are the [Underworld Royal Earrings] that I've carried for tens of thousands of years, and now they're yours. As long as you wear these [Underworld Royal Earrings], not only will you have more powerful lifeforce and spirit, but you'll also be able to command any of the Underworld's Undead at will! Though, I trust that any Undead will be willing to follow your orders regardless after hearing about how you extinguished the Underworld Volcano. Take it. Since I've given you even my daughter, there's no reason for me not to give you these earrings."

Ling Chen took them and felt a wave of excitement. He had personally seen the Underworld King take them off... the earrings of the Underworld King, who stood on the same level as the Moon Goddesses, would definitely not be an ordinary item. It would definitely be Heaven's End grade... if not Mysterious God grade.

[Underworld Royal Earrings]: Type: Earrings, Grade: Mysterious God, Equipment Requirements: Any person approved by the current Underworld King. Current person approved to use them: Ling Tian. A pair of earrings passed down from the ancestors of the Underworld Royal Clan. It contains boundless Underworld King power, and it creates an irresistible compulsion for nearby Undead to obey the wearer's commands, making them submit out of terror.

Effects: Constitution+1,000, Spirit+1,000, Darkness Resistance+50%, no Undead are able to attack the wearer.

Hidden Effect: The symbol of the Underworld Royal Clan's

power; those who wear them can command the Underworld's Undead at will.

Mysterious God grade! It was indeed a pair of Mysterious God grade earrings!

Although [Lachesis' Tear] was Mysterious God grade, it had strange effects. However, [Underworld Royal Earrings] truly demonstrated the might of Mysterious God grade equipment! Putting aside its effects, just its stats alone gave him 2,000 points worth of stats! It was much more than the stats of all of his current equipment combined!

What's more, the most powerful aspect of the earrings was that no Undead would be able to attack the wearer as well as the ability to command all of the Underworld's Undead! This was authority on par with the Underworld King's – it was so powerful that it was simply out of control!

A true Mysterious God grade equipment – this was a true Mysterious God grade equipment from the legends that could dominate everything under the heavens!

Ling Chen did not hesitate to put on the earrings in front of the Underworld King, and he unequipped the Fairy's Blessing earrings. In that instant, Ling Chen's HP rose to nearly 130,000! Ling Chen now had more HP than both Snow Cherry and Xiao Hui! Even without the Evil God's Mask, he would be able to survive a normal attack from even a Heaven's End grade Boss. Moreover, his MP also broke through to 70,000.

"How is it? Are you happy with those earrings?" The Underworld King asked in a pleasing tone when he saw Ling Chen put on the earrings. For some reason, he didn't feel any pain within his heart when he gave his son-in-law, who he had only known for 2 days, the pair of incredibly important earrings.

Chapter 680 - Mysterious God grade Sword

"Happy! I'm incredibly happy with these earrings!" Ling Chen immediately shouted in reply. He simply felt like crying out praises to this old father-in-law. Thinking about equipment, he suddenly remembered about [Dark Samsara], which he had picked up from the fallen Undead War God. He hurriedly brought it out to the Underworld King and said, "That's right, this sword is from the Undead War God, and the description says that only you can give others the right to use it, so..."

"Dark Samsara!" Seeing the massive jet-black sword in Ling Chen's hands, the Underworld King stared for a moment before walking forwards and tracing along its cold surface as he said emotionally, "I couldn't detect its aura in the destroyed Fire Purgatory, but it was in your hands. Back then, this sword was my personal sword, and it had been with me for 9,000 years. However, during those 9,000 years, I never used it once. A thousand years ago, Chi Xuan Wu Hen became the most powerful Undead here – apart from me, he was the most powerful being in all of the Underworld. It was a pity that his power was simply too strong – not only did he become an Undead, he also remembered his memories from when he was alive. As such, with his pride and dignity as a human expert, I was unable to easily command him. He was unwilling to serve under me or work with any other Undead. He was instead willing to stand guard at the solitary Fire Purgatory, so I allowed him to do as he wished. Dark Samara also followed him into the Fire Purgatory.

"Since Chi Xuan Wu Hen has died, so be it. After so many years, I've almost forgotten about his existence. Whenever I occasionally think about him, it's because of Dark Samsara... whenever I thought about it, my heart always ached – why had I been so crazy as to give it to him? At least when you give a meat bun to a dog, it'll bark in gratitude; after giving Dark Samara to him, he didn't even

give a fart... hmm, since you want this sword, I'll give it to you. It'll be a hundred times better than being with Chi Xuan Wu Hen."

As the Underworld King spoke, he stroked the sword's hilt, and a grey light flashed and entered the sword. The Underworld King took away his hands and said in a magnanimous tone, "Alright, this sword is yours now. Do what you want with it."

Ling Chen hurriedly equipped all of his battle equipment, and [Dark Samsara] was also easily equipped into his right hand. Ling Chen instantly felt incredibly excited. He had just received a pair of Mysterious God grade earrings, and now he had obtained a Mysterious God grade sword! This was something that all players could only dream about... in fact, most wouldn't even dare to dream about a Mysterious God grade sword!

[Dark Samsara]: Type: Double-Handed Sword, Grade: Mysterious God, Equipment Requirements: A weapon that has had restrictions cast on it by the Underworld King. Only those who the Underworld King chooses can use this weapon. Currently, only Ling Tian been given this permission. A sword forged by the Dwarf Clan 10,000 years ago using Starfall Metal and Extreme Darkness Chalcedony, it was fused with hundreds of thousands of dark souls. It devoured the blood of the Darkness God Beast, and it was bathed in the Underworld Blood Lake. In total, it took 130 years to forge the sword. When the sword was completed, the sky, sun, and moon became dark and a divine tribulation descended. It has the power to rend the heavens and destroy the earth and to annihilate stars and break moons. It was originally the Underworld King's personal sword, but the Underworld King gave it to Ling Tian.

Stats: Physical Attack Power+5100, Magic Attack Power+2980, Strength+180, Constitution+10, Agility-60, Spirit+120, Critical Chance+127%, Pierce Chance+34%, Darkness Resistance+10%, all attacks deal an extra 3,000 Darkness damage.

Bonus Stats: Parry Level: 14. When attacking a target at close range, the dark aura around Dark Samsara will send the target's

mind into chaos. After parrying a target's attack, damage is increased by 30% when counterattacking. When being parried by a target, there is a certain chance for the target's weapon to be knocked out of their hands.

Bonus Skills:

[Darkness Corruption]: Releases the Dark Samsara's Darkness energy, turning all attacks into Darkness attacks and adding a 10% chance to apply a 5 second [Darkness] status. Can be activated and deactivated at will.

[Darkness Soul Suppression]: When entering battle, Dark Samsara will release a powerful darkness soul suppression, causing all weapons within 50 metres that are below Mysterious God grade and LV90 to tremble in fear. If the target weapons cannot resist this soul suppression, the damage from the weapons will be reduced by 10%-70%, and they might not even be able to be used.

[Nirvana Samsara]: Unreservedly releases Dark Samsara's power, causing a boundless dark light to explode out from the sword that deals massive damage to all targets within 50 metres, bringing all targets into the dark abyss of Samsara. Base damage is equivalent to 2000%, and it has a 100% chance of applying a 5 second [Darkness] status. Costs 920 MP, cooldown time: 1 minute.

[Final Samsara]: Releases Dark Samsara's dark and dismal energy. After gathering the energy, it releases a massive onslaught to the area 2x100 metres in front of it, dealing 2000% damage to all targets within the range and knocking them up to 100 metres away. Requires 2 seconds to gather energy before releasing. Costs 460 MP, cooldown time: 1 minute.

Ordinarily speaking, a Celestial grade weapon would have 1 skill, a Heaven's End grade weapon would have 2 skills, and a Mysterious God grade weapon would usually have 3 skills. However, Dark Samsara had 4 skills – 2 were support skills, while the other 2 were attack skills. As a Mysterious God grade weapon,

its Physical Attack Power was naturally extremely high to the point that it was past 5,000! It had even given him a large amount of Magic Attack Power as well. With Dark Samsara equipped, Ling Chen's base Physical Attack Power was 29,892, just a sliver away from 30,000.

After spending just a few days in the Underworld, Ling Chen had retrieved 2 of the Lunar Scourge's Orbs, obtained the Underworld King's earrings and sword, 2 heaven-defying Mysterious God grade equipment that raised his overall stats and strength to become many times stronger, and Xi Ling had become Saint Destroyer grade. Before coming here, he had expected the trip to be incredibly dangerous and tough, and he had never expected this sort of conclusion. After lightly slashing with Dark Samsara a few times, Ling Chen happily put it away and decided to strike while the iron was hot, saying, "Underworld King, there's something else I want to talk to you about... this will only bring benefits to both myself and the Underworld."

The Underworld King nodded. "Mm, what is it?"

Following this, Ling Chen described the 'trade route' he envisioned between Ling Tian City and the Underworld, and he went into detail about the benefits to both parties. Throughout Ling Chen's entire talk, the Underworld King did not reveal any expressions of displeasure. He only thought for a few moments before nodding and saying, "In actuality, I've considered what you've said before. The Underworld and the Forgotten Continent are 2 separate worlds, so the things they contain are vastly different. Many of the incredibly ordinary things in the Forgotten Continent are difficult to find even in a hundred years here and vice versa. However, when high-grade Undead enter the Forgotten Continent, they'll lose their consciousness, and when living creatures enter the Underworld, their lifeforce will be drained. The only one who can freely enter the Underworld and Forgotten Continent is me – ah, and Chan'Er. The powerful Undead who are

outside searching for new Undead are only able to temporarily leave the Underworld due to the protection of my power.

“In the past, the main issues were the physical restrictions and not having anyone who was completely trustworthy. As such, I gave up on this idea. A long time ago, a weirdo called ‘Qian Gun Gun’ appeared, who had a very unique constitution. Although he was human, he did not fear the deathly aura or miasma, and he could freely traverse the Underworld and Forgotten Continent. That man loved riches as much as his own life, and he often brought things from the Forgotten Continent to sell at the Underworld Royal City, and he often took some of our things to sell at the Forgotten Continent. Because all of the things that he brought were things that could not be found in the Underworld and were very useful to the Undead, he was greatly welcomed. Even I approved of this practice, and I allowed him to visit the Underworld Blood Lake. However, if you truly want to do this, as the saviour of the Underworld and my son-in-law, I see no reason to refuse. Since it’s like this, do as you just described. After you’ve made preparations, just let me know what we need to do. I’m sure that all of the Undead will approve of this ‘trade route’, but if this happens… heheh, that Qian Gun Gun fellow will suffer.”

“Alright, I’ll prepare everything as soon as possible,” Ling Chen replied as he nodded. Since the Underworld King had agreed, there were no problems at all. He already had a basic plan in his heart, and once the plan was set into motion, Ling Tian City would be even more attractive to players. In fact, Ling Tian City would be able to greatly increase its profits without much cost.

Ling Chen thought for a moment before raising his other request, “Also, there’s something else that I wanted to talk to you about, although it might put you in a difficult situation.”

The Underworld King confidently waved his hand. “You’re my son-in-law and you’ve solved a big problem for me; how could any of your requests put me in a difficult situation? Just say it. As long

as I can do it, I won't refuse."

"Very well," Ling Chen said as he nodded before continuing, "I heard that the Underworld has an extremely powerful defensive weapon called the [Underworld God Cannon], which was made by the Dwarves 10,000 years ago..."

"You want the Underworld God Cannon?!" Before Ling Chen could finish speaking, the Underworld King roared, and his eyes bulged outwards.

The Underworld King's reaction was completely within Ling Chen's expectations. He immediately shook his head as he replied, "Of course not! I coincidentally obtained the blueprint for the Underworld God Cannon, and through an even greater coincidence, I was able to find the Dwarf Clan and bring them to Ling Tian City. It's just that the Underworld God Cannon is a Saint Destroyer grade weapon, so even though they have the blueprint and materials, it's difficult to make one. Before I came to the Underworld, my Dwarf friends told me that if they saw the real Underworld God Cannon, they might be able to make one from the blueprint as well... so I was hoping that you would allow Ling Tian City's Dwarves to come here and look at the Underworld God Cannon."

Chapter 681 - The Underworld King's Promise

The Underworld King thought for a moment before calmly replying, "The Underworld God Cannon is the Underworld's greatest treasure and strongest defence. With the Underworld God Cannon, not even the Moon God Clan dares to do anything against us. The Underworld God Cannon is also a stabilising force for all Undead – if we lost the Underworld God Cannon, it would cause mass panic and chaos. As such, it is impossible to give you the Underworld God Cannon, but it would be fine to lend it to you for a short while."

"No," Ling Chen shook his head. "You don't need to lend it to me. All you need to do is allow some of Ling Tian City's Dwarves to come and take a look."

"I understand your intentions, but this is the Underworld. If they enter this place, even though my Underworld King power can protect them to some degree, I cannot guarantee their safety. The more people enter, the more that this is true. After all, there is a soul contract between you and Chan'Er, which can perfectly protect you from the deathly aura and miasma, but I'm unable to do this for other people. It would be best for me to deliver the Underworld God Cannon to Ling Tian City so that all of the Dwarves can have a look themselves... after all, this is one of the greatest accomplishments of their ancestors. It was because of the work of their ancestors that our Underworld has been protected so well for more than ten thousand years... this way, I'll be able to somewhat make it up to the Dwarves for back then."

Ling Chen understood what the Underworld King meant by 'making it up' – there were various clans that had forced the Dwarf Clan into despair, and the Underworld was one of them.

"In actuality, the Underworld God Cannon is always being

carried on my person because that is where it is safest. How about this: since Chan'Er's Underworld King power has awoken, there's a special connection between us. I'll know once you return to Ling Tian City, and I'll personally bring the Underworld God Cannon to you."

The Underworld King coming to Ling Tian City? And bringing the Underworld God Cannon with him? Ling Chen couldn't help but anticipate that event. Ling Chen naturally had no reason to refuse, so he nodded, "Alright."

"When will you go then?" The Underworld King asked.

"Right now."

"... Sure." The Underworld King did not try to keep him here. "You must have many things to do, and you have already accomplished your goal in coming here. If you ever need my help in the Forgotten Continent, just speak into the Underworld Royal Earrings that I gave you or ask Chan'Er to send me a message, and I'll come as fast as possible.

"Now, let me send you off. In the future, I'll come to Ling Tian City with the Underworld God Cannon, so tell the Dwarf Clan to prepare for that..." Finally, the Underworld King said in a low voice with a tone of reluctance, "With Chan'Er following you, I can be at ease."

As the Underworld King spoke, a grey spatial formation appeared beneath Ling Chen's feet, and as it spun, Ling Chen disappeared from where he had stood.

One could go through any Underworld Door in the Forgotten Continent to enter the Underworld, but leaving was not so easy. This was because the Underworld only had clear entrances but not exits. If he had not become acquainted with the Underworld King, Ling Chen might have been stuck in the Underworld forever.

As black light flashed in front of his eyes, Ling Chen appeared

where he had been before he had entered the Underworld – the Ghastly Grounds. As he appeared, the Zombies wandering around all started to amble towards him. However, after coming closer, they started to give out unpleasant sounds of terror and started to escape in all directions.

Ling Chen's journey in the Underworld had finally concluded. After leaving the Underworld, Ling Chen's mind and body felt much more refreshed, and his mind and vision became clearer. It wasn't that big of a deal for him to have found 2 of the Lunar Scourge's orbs or to have obtained numerous Heaven's End grade equipment and 3 pieces of Mysterious God grade equipment... but it was a big deal that he had gotten married! And the person he had been married to was Leng'Er – Ling Chen felt as if everything he knew was crumbling.

In all honesty, there wasn't much of a marriage ceremony, nor did it have any legal effect on him. What's more, apart from the Underworld's Undead, no one else knew... but that was still a marriage! He was now a married man! Leng'Er had become his wife! And...

Ling Chen hurriedly shook his head, unable to continue thinking about it anymore. He did not go anywhere, and instead he logged off... he had not logged off for an entire day and night, and now that he had finally left the Underworld, it was time to tell Tian Tian and the others so that they wouldn't worry.

As soon as Ling Chen logged off, he heard Tian Tian and Sha Sha's laughter. Ling Chen yawned and walked into the living room. When he entered, he saw Tian Tian and Shadissika happily playing on a dance pad together. Qi Yue was lazily lying on the sofa while reading a magazine. After entering the real world, she had been interested in this world's fashion the most. In this aspect, she was not much different from any other woman.

When Tian Tian and Shadissika saw Ling Chen walk out, they both cried out and rushed over to Ling Chen. They started to

lecture him about being online for so long and not resting, as well as how bad it was for his body. However, because this sort of thing was not uncommon for Ling Chen and because he was someone who would still be fine after playing for so long, they only lectured him for a bit before letting him off.

“You finally bothered to come out?” Qi Yue looked up at him before lazily continuing to read her magazine. She then adjusted her sitting position, causing her large chest to ripple, which caused Ling Chen’s eyebrows to jump.

“You… don’t look too well,” Ling Chen said casually. He felt like the seductive red blush on Qi Yue’s face was gone and had been replaced with a paleness.

“After not seeing little master for a day, I’ve been unable to eat or sleep; how could I look well?” Qi Yue looked over as she spoke in a soft and enticing voice.

Ling Chen rolled his eyes and ignored her. He looked towards Xuanyuan Dia Wu’s room and looked at the clock, feeling slightly confused. Normally, Xuanyuan Dia Wu would not be in the game at this time. As such, he asked, “Tian Tian, Sha Sha, where’s your big sister Dia Wu?”

“She’s also in the game and hasn’t logged off for a day or night either,” Tian Tian replied.

Shadissika continued, “Yesterday, after receiving a call from big sister Xiao Xue, big sister Dia Wu went into the game and hasn’t come out yet. Tian Tian and I tried to call her twice, but we were unable to get through. It looks like something important has happened, so we were afraid to disturb her and did not call her anymore.”

“A day and night?” Ling Chen once again looked at the time and frowned before saying, “I’m going back into the game to have a look. If I’m not back by evening, just eat by yourselves and don’t wait for us.”

“Eh? Oh, got it.”

Ling Chen turned and quickly walked back into his room, returning to the virtual world again.

After returning to the Ghastly Grounds just 3 minutes after he had left, Ling Chen immediately crushed a Spatial Orb and returned to Ling Tian City.

.....

After resting for a while, the woman with the red hair had mostly recovered. Below her, Ling Tian City was still deathly silent, still frozen in time. The woman opened her eyes and slowly rose up from the three-coloured pterosaur, and after looking down, she lightly sighed, “The Time Barrier is about to run out.”

“What do we do? Where did that guy go? It’s been so long, but he’s still not back yet,” Yola said worriedly.

“Evidently, he’s at a place in the game where he can’t freely come out or contact the outside world. It’s incredibly difficult for ordinary players to go to such places, but with his strength, it’s normal for him to be in such a place,” the woman with red hair replied. She would often go to such places, and she knew how special and dangerous they were.

“Looks like we’ll have to act this time. After all, this city was created because of him, and it would be a pity for it to be destroyed... Mo’Er, prepare to enter into your battle form.”

As the woman with red hair spoke, the three-coloured pterosaur beneath her spread its large blue wings, creating a shocking gust of wind. At that moment, the Time Barrier below them finally disappeared...

Whoosh...

The silent scene beneath them became incredibly rowdy again. The Forgotten City's soldiers flooded into Ling Tian City, causing destruction wherever they went. In the distance, Greenwood

roared furiously and put all of his strength into each attack, but he was unable to escape from the white figure. Under the Forgotten City's soldiers and the Wind God Black Demon's continuous assaults, the Fairies' defensive line was completely broken through, causing multitudes of injuries. However, Yun Meng Xin and the others were relatively safe – with Xuanyuan Dia Wu and Xiao Qi protecting them, even with tens of thousands of players attacking, they could not be harmed. Despite this, because of the large gap between the peak experts of the Forgotten City and them, although they were able to protect themselves, they were unable to protect many others. If it wasn't for Ying Xue continuously protecting them, they would have long since died.

The woman with red hair stretched out her right hand and looked down at Ling Tian City, locking onto target after target. The blue ring on her ring finger flashed, and as she waved her finger, countless rays of light that were so thin that they were undetectable by the naked eye rained down, covering Yun Meng Xin and the others, as well as the Fairies, both living and dead...

In that instant, they all vanished without a trace. Only Greenwood, in the distance, was left. The Forgotten City's soldiers who had been fighting with them were dumbfounded and looked around themselves, wondering if there was something wrong with their eyes.

At the east gate of Ling Tian City, thousands of thin rays of light descended, forming a curtain of blue light. After the light disappeared, the players and Fairies who had disappeared from the west gate appeared there.

In the sky, looking down at the players and Fairies who had been safely transported, the woman with red hair's eyes became cold and cruel. She stretched out her middle finger as the red ring glowed with a strange light, and she muttered, "Mo'Er, prepare to battle. Destroy or let live as you wish... oh? Mo'Er, looks like we won't have to fight for now. Change back into your normal state."

As the woman with red hair spoke, the three-coloured pterosaur quickly turned back into a pocket-sized girl and flew onto the woman's shoulder. The red ring's light stopped expanding outwards, and the 3 rings simultaneously flashed. The woman in red turned to look towards the North as the coldness on her face disappeared and her expression became more relaxed, and she elegantly smiled as she said, "Yola, he's so late, so why did he have to come at this moment? If he came another 2 seconds later, at least one-fifth of Ling Tian City would have been destroyed by Mo'Er's power. Since he's come, I won't have to commit this sin; he'll have to take responsibility for this situation."

When Ling Chen returned to Ling Tian City, the sound of fighting in the west and Greenwood's roars caused his heart to tremble. Looking below, the normally bustling streets were completely empty, and all of the structures' doors were tightly shut. At a glance, the city seemed completely dead, and an ominous feeling filled his heart. Without even thinking, he used a Spatial Orb to teleport to the west gate, and the sight that greeted his eyes almost caused them to burst in rage.

Chapter 682 - Spare No One!

Dust and sand filled the air around the western area of Ling Tian City, and the large, majestic gates were gone. Only some fragments of the gates were left, and 100 metres of the walls on either side had collapsed. The ground in front of the city gates inclined inwards towards the city, looking as if it had experienced a large earthquake.

From the gates to a few kilometres within the city, there were Forgotten City's soldiers wearing all sorts of armour. They destroyed whatever they saw and ruined countless structures and streets that the Dwarves had poured their blood, sweat and tears into. Outside the city, there were still countless Forgotten City's soldiers flooding in, all of them giving off an excited air like that of a rabid dog. 100 metres in front of the city gates, the gigantic Mountain Giant was in an attacking pose, but it did not move at all. A massive silver beam of light had trapped its body within it... further away, Ling Chen could see Greenwood. He was currently fighting a man who was dressed in white and holding a long sword.

Greenwood was the only person he saw who belonged to Ling Tian City – everyone else was gone.

Ling Chen’s breathing became heavier, and flames of fury threatened to blow apart his head. An air of violence and ruthlessness burst out from his body as his body’s bones cracked... he instantly understood what had happened, and he knew where these rabid dogs who were destroying Ling Tian City had come from.

In his extreme rage, Ling Chen instead became extraordinary calm. He did not immediately attack these intruders, but he instead held his communication device and contacted Yun Meng Xin. Yun Meng Xin’s voice immediately sounded out, “Ling Tian... Ling Tian... where are you... Ling Tian City... Ling Tian City... already...”

“I just came back... where are you all? Are you alright?” Ling Chen did his best to suppress his emotions and tried to speak as calmly as possible.

“We’re all fine... we were all in the West, but somehow we were all sent to the east gate. We’re all there... and we’re all fine... but many Fairies... already...”

The hand that Ling Chen held the communication device in violently trembled, and he closed his eyes as he said lightly, “I see... just stay there and don’t come over. Don’t worry, I’ll chase them all away... and I’ll make them pay 100 times as much.”

Ling Chen spoke that last sentence incredibly calmly, and it was so calm to the point that Yun Meng Xin and the others who were listening felt a chill go down their spines.

After putting away the communication device, Ling Chen opened his eyes and deeply breathed in before summoning all of his pets, “Snow Cherry, Xi Ling, Leng’Er, and Cai’Er... prepare to fight. Don’t show any mercy or restraint against these enemies, and do your best to kill them as quickly as possible.”

Without any obstructions, the Forgotten City's soldiers destroyed whatever they saw incredibly quickly. At that moment, a thundering voice filled with killing intent and cold rage boomed out, “Forgotten City's rabid dogs, go die!!!”

The Forgotten City's soldiers looked up to see who it was, and in that instant, their jaws dropped and their pupils contracted... because they saw that the entire sky had become a dazzling golden colour. The golden sky was incredibly eye-catching, but the incredibly scorching heat and apocalypse like airs struck all of the Forgotten City's soldiers with fear.

Whoosh...

The golden fire descended from the sky and landed in Ling Tian City. Given Ling Chen’s fury, Xi Ling naturally would not hold

back, and she instantly cast a [Heaven-Burning Flame Sea]. This was one of the Golden Crow's skills, and it contained boundless destructive power. Xi Ling's flames were much more powerful than the Golden Crow's, and her basic Magic Attack Power was now a monstrous 172,800. With the Capricorn Orb, it became a whopping 345,600! Adding on the might of the golden flames, it was evident just how powerful [Heaven-Burning Flame Sea] was.

An entire 1,000 metres area turned into a golden sea of flames, and countless Forgotten City's soldiers cried out in pain and despair. However, these cries only lasted for an instant because within the [Heaven-Burning Flame Sea], no matter if it were the ordinary soldiers, Elite grade soldiers, Silver grade soldiers... or even the Gold grade soldiers who had millions of HP, they were instantly annihilated. There was no one left within 1,000 metres area. At the same time, the golden flames had also reduced all of the buildings in that area into rubble instantly.

One of the Forgotten City's experts, Wind God Black Demon, just happened to be at the centre of the golden flames. When the flames descended, he only looked at it with surprise before coldly harrumphing. He believed that he was the Forgotten Continent's most powerful Mage God and had peerless control over magic and defence. He was arrogant to the point that he did not even put the flames in his eyes at all, but when the flames reached his body, the terrifying heat caused his expression to change.

-7,300,000!

The instant the golden flames enveloped his body, the Wind God screamed out in pain, something that he hadn't done in many, many years... Ling Chen's rage was Xi Ling's rage. The flames she released were not only able to destroy anything, but they also had a cruel soul-burning property, making one's soul feel unimaginable torment. 10,000 years ago, the extremely powerful Demon Emperor had been tortured to death by the Golden Crow's soul-burning flames. How could a mere 'Wind God' survive the flames

that not even the Demon Emperor could endure?

The damage figure of over 7 million damage caused the Wind God's eyes to nearly pop out of their sockets. The 100% chance of triggering a 10 second 'Burn' effect was activated, and the golden flames continued to burn around his body, incinerating both his body and soul. He felt as if he had fallen into hell, and he screamed like a pig being slaughtered. He fell from the sky to the ground and writhed in pain, completely losing his composure as the Wind God.

Although the Burn only lasted for 10 seconds, those 10 seconds of his soul being burned seemed like 10 centuries to the Wind God. He had fought countless battles in his life and suffered countless injuries, but the pain from all of them could not even come close to the pain that he felt within those short 10 seconds. After 10 seconds passed, the soul-burning pain finally disappeared, but after those 10 seconds of torment, Black Demon had lost almost all of his strength. He lay on his back for a long time, blankly staring at the sky. The terror from the golden flames was firmly imprinted into his soul.

After being ravaged by the Heaven-Burning Flame Sea, the 1,000 metres area was reduced to blackened ground, and there were countless blackened corpses on the ground. This shocking scene caused all of the Forgotten City's soldiers, Greenwood, and White Eagle to stare, dumbfounded, unable to believe what they had just seen. However, this was just the beginning. As a bird's cry sounded out, more golden fire rained down towards the Forgotten City's soldiers... although these flames would destroy Ling Tian City, these intruders had to be killed.

Every time Xi Ling released her golden flames, it spelled disaster for the Forgotten City's soldiers. They were the powerful Forgotten City's army, not players, and they had tens, if not hundreds, of times more HP. However, apart from some Celestial and Heaven's End grade commanders, no one was able to last even 2 seconds within the flames. At that moment, a loud roar sounded

out as Ling Chen flew like an arrow on Snow Cherry towards the Forgotten City's dispersing army. The instant he landed, he furiously sent out an [Eight Direction Annihilation].

BOOM!!

The ground trembled, and sand and stones flew into the air. Ten or so of the Forgotten City's soldiers were blasted tens of metres away and instantly died. Ling Chen did not pause at all, and he sped towards more of the Forgotten City's soldiers. There was a terrifyingly savage expression on his face, and his eyes were blood-red. Dark Samsara gave off a berserk black light, mercilessly bombarding the Forgotten City's soldiers' bodies, and every time he sent out an attack, massive explosions sounded out.

BOOM!!

BOOM!!

BOOM!!

Cries of despair sounded out as the Forgotten City's soldiers were sent flying like sandbags one after another. With a Mysterious God grade sword in one hand, a Heaven's End grade dagger in the other, and the Leo Orb which had greatly increased his Physical Attack Power, Ling Chen's attacks were simply terrifying. When facing Ling Chen's attacks, the Forgotten City's soldiers felt a suppression that made it impossible for them to move or even breathe, and the instant they were hit, it was not like being hit by weapons but like a mountain smashing into their bodies, causing some of them to fly even 100 metres away... some were blasted tens of metres into the sky... others were blasted into structures, causing those structures to fall... some were embedded deep into the ground... every hit was a kill.

Everyone in the Heaven Rankings were able to kill Elites above their own level. However, in the entirety of China, only Ling Chen was able to insta-kill them with such ease.

By the time Ling Chen had descended from the air, he had clearly memorized where all of the Forgotten City's soldiers were, and he dealt with waves of them at a shocking speed. With Xi Ling's flames and Ling Chen's attacks, the Forgotten City's soldiers, who had previously forced Ling Tian City into utter hopelessness, were crushed like ants without any ability to retaliate. In less than 1 minute, their will had been completely crushed, and they were so terrified that they did not dare to approach to attack. They instead scattered in all directions, desperately running further into the city.

"You want to run? You'll all die today... not a single one of you will be spared!" Dark Samsara swept out, blasting 2 soldiers away. If this sort of attack had been unleashed in the real world, their bodies would have been blown to bits with gore flying everywhere. Ling Chen looked over and said in a low voice, "Cai'Er, make them all sleep! Don't let a single one get away!"

Cai'Er began to sing [Song of Tranquility – Clear Dream In A Peaceful Night], and the gentle song, which contained Cai'Er's Nature energy, was transmitted to every corner of Ling Tian City, causing all of the Forgotten City's soldiers' steps and minds to become heavier and heavier. They began to run slower and slower, and they fell to the ground in a deep sleep. They were quickly sent into the abyss of death by Ling Chen as easily as cutting wheat.

However, this was not the end of the nightmare for the Forgotten City's soldiers. After feeling Ling Chen's fury and killing intent, Leng'Er slowly closed her eyes and put her hands together before her chest, and a black crescent moon flashed on her forehead... immediately, countless grey lights appeared in the West of Ling Tian City. This light came from the corpses of the Forgotten City's soldiers, and countless Undead slowly rose from their bodies, all of them giving off a berserk aura.

The LV2 [Summon Undead] skill summoned 1 Star Elites of the same grade, and it cost a certain amount of MP. After entering the

Underworld Blood Lake, [Summon Undead] had been levelled up to LV3, which allowed her to summon 2 Star Elites. After Leng'Er's Underworld King power was completely awakened, [Summon Undead] was levelled up to LV5, and not only was its range massively increased, but it also no longer cost any MP, and everything that it summoned... was Lord grade Undead!!

Chapter 683 - The Unstoppable Undead Army

“What’s going on? What’s happening ahead?”

The Forgotten Emperor, who was at the back of the army, stood up and frowned as he looked towards Ling Tian City. From the beginning until now, the plan of destroying the city had gone smoothly just as he had expected. The only unexpected factor had been that the Wind God Black Demon had been too arrogant, allowing the Mountain Giant to inflict heavy casualties by lifting the ground. However, to be able to destroy the thorn that was inside his heart, losing some tens of thousands of soldiers was just a small matter.

However, the sky in front of him was illuminated by golden fire. Rumbling and explosions rang out as screams filled the air, causing the Forgotten Emperor to have an ominous feeling. Before he could receive an answer, the middle section of his army that had been preparing to charge forwards suddenly fell into disarray as one of the commanders far away screamed in terror, “Undead... an Undead army came out of nowhere... ahhh!!”

After screaming, the commander’s voice was cut off. The Forgotten Emperor was struck with shock as he roared, “Immediately go and find out what happened ahead... immediately support the front and middle sections of the army!!”

Support? If the Forgotten Emperor had been at the front and seen the situation, he would have immediately known that to do so was simply seeking death.

With Xi Ling’s flames, Ling Chen’s berserk attacks, and Cai’Er’s lullaby that had a massive range, in just a few minutes, most of the Forgotten City's soldiers inside Ling Tian City had been annihilated, while the rest were being quickly slain by Ling Chen. Under the influence of Cai’Er’s Song of Tranquillity, they were all

in a deep sleep, making it impossible for them to escape. Xi Ling hovered in the air, incinerating all of the soldiers who tried to approach the city gates.

When Leng'Er started summoning Undead, all of the corpses of the Forgotten City's soldiers instantly became powerful Undead... before, Leng'Er could only summon in small waves, and their overall strength was quite weak and the time they lasted for was quite short. However, she could now summon an Undead army of tens of thousands with a single thought... what's more, all of them were Lord grade!

What did an Undead army of tens of thousands mean? Let alone the normal soldiers, even the Wind God Black Demon, who had just crawled up, felt an immense sense of terror upon feeling the terrifying aura coming from the Undead.

Xi Ling's control of fire was completely perfect, and the flames did not cause any damage to the Undead army. Within the golden sea of flames, the Undead army charged towards the Forgotten City's soldiers, bringing a cold aura and completely shocking the Forgotten City's soldiers. There were 100,000 soldiers in the Forgotten City's army, and although there were only 2,000 soldiers in the Gold Corps, they were an incredibly powerful force. However, this army of tens of thousands of Undead had appeared in an instant. The Lord grade Undead army was able to completely suppress and destroy the army of normal Elites.

Just as the 2 forces clashed, the Forgotten City's soldiers immediately began to fall. The Undead army trampled on their corpses as they advanced, barely slowed down by the Forgotten City's soldiers. The soldiers who fell would flash with a grey light and then another Lord grade Undead would rise, causing the Undead army to become larger and larger, scaring the Forgotten City's soldiers' souls out of their bodies.

"Oh...my...god..." Yola's lips were wide open, and indescribable shock was written all over her adorable face. "This is... too

ridiculous... oh heavens... oh heavens..."

"It's indeed a bit ridiculous. Alright, it's quite ridiculous." The woman in red gently tapped her chin, her gaze continuously flickering around. In actuality, not just Yola but even she had been given a big shock from just then... she had witnessed Xi Ling's strength just 2 months ago, and even then she had been shocked. Now, Xi Ling's destructive power was tens of times more powerful, and that instantly-formed Undead army... was simply too cruel.

"This is bad." The woman in red scratched her head in annoyance. "Before, I thought that my pets were far superior to his, but it turns out... not only did I not give him a surprise, but he instead gave me a big surprise first."

"Hmph! I won't lose to them!" The pocket-sized girl on the woman's shoulder understood what she meant and unhappily pouted.

"That's right, that's right, with how strong little Mo'Er is, she definitely won't lose." The woman in red could only agree. She then turned to look at Ling Chen, who was chasing the fleeing soldiers. Although he was incredibly far away, she could still clearly hear the explosions from all of his attacks. "Looks like he's truly furious this time. Just like you, Yola, I've started to pity this continent's emperor. I'm sure that he'll very soon regret everything he's done today until the day he dies..."

In the distance, White Eagle, who was still fighting with Greenwood, saw what was happening in Ling Tian City and instantly frowned.

"Haha," Greenwood laughed incredibly happily. When he saw Ling Chen had arrived and the Forgotten City's soldiers dying in droves, his heart was no longer filled with sorrow but with glee. The appearance of the Undead army or how powerful Ling Chen and Xi Ling had become did not shock him. All he saw was that Ling Tian City was now safe, and all of his despair and hatred

became pure glee. He coldly laughed and said, “Looks like the heavens aren’t willing to let you all succeed! What’s more, I’m sure that the punishment you all deserve is about to descend!!”

White Eagle’s expression did not change as he replied, “You’re rejoicing too early. Don’t forget that we have many Celestial and Heaven’s End grade experts within our army. There’s also the Wind God, who came along with me. Do you really think you can win?”

Greenwood stopped speaking, and his attacks became even sharper and more ferocious. Before, it was White Eagle keeping him tied up, but now it was the opposite... now that Ling Chen was back, the Forgotten City’s army was quickly crumbling. As such, what he needed to do was keep this Mysterious God grade expert occupied so that he couldn’t help the Forgotten City's soldiers.

Within Ling Tian City, the final one of the Forgotten City’s soldiers died under Ling Chen’s wrath. It immediately turned into a powerful Undead and rushed towards the outside of the city, preparing to join the Undead army. From when Xi Ling had appeared, no more soldiers were able to enter Ling Tian City, so there was not a single soldier left within the city. Looking the ravaged buildings and streets, Ling Chen raised his face to the sky and deeply breathed in. by the time he lowered his head, his gaze had become even darker and colder. He did not say anything as he turned and ran towards the outside of the city.

The Undead army marched towards the Forgotten City’s army like a gigantic bulldozer, and with every step they took, their ranks increased. By the time the Forgotten Emperor finally saw the massive Undead army, he stared for a full 5 seconds before screaming in a trembling voice, “W-Where did these Undead come from? Hurry up and attack! Get rid of them immediately!”

If the undead army was so easy to get rid of, the Forgotten City’s army wouldn’t have been completely suppressed like this.

The soldiers within the city were completely wiped out, so Cai'Er came out with Ling Chen. She changed her song to [Song of Passion – A Brave Heart]. As she sang, all of the Undead's Physical Attack Power and Magic Attack Power were greatly boosted, causing the pressure on the Forgotten City's army to increase, sending them retreating even faster.

At the back, the Celestial grade and Heaven's End grade commanders who had been protecting the emperor all rushed up. Their strength was naturally something that the ordinary soldiers could not compare to, and under their assault, droves of Undead continuously fell. However, those commanders immediately found that although they could quickly destroy waves of Undead relatively quickly, the numbers of Undead did not decrease but instead continuously increased. Their ranks continued to increase, and the aura from the Undead army became more and more terrifying. Even with the commanders joining the fight, the Forgotten City's army was unable to stop the onslaught of the Undead army. Very soon, even the commanders were surrounded by the Undead army, and although they were powerful, they were completely suppressed and on the verge of being killed.

The Forgotten Emperor stared ahead, and he was so shocked that his entire body began to tremble. He roared, "Black Demon! What are you doing?! Hurry up and destroy them!!"

After enduring the soul-burning pain from Xi Ling's flames, it took Black Demon a long time to recover. During this period of time, he had continuously attacked and killed hundreds of Undead, but he had not affected the army at all. When he heard the Forgotten Emperor's yells, Black Demon gritted his teeth and rose to the sky. He held his short staff across his body and chanted in a low voice as a green whirlwind spiralled around his body, becoming more and more ferocious. About 10 seconds later, he roared, and a massive tornado rose up in the 1,000 metres around him, covering the entire Undead army.

Instantly, the area in front of Ling Tian City's city gates became incredibly dark. Sand and stones filled the air as the tornado lifted up almost all of the Undead into the sky. They were brought tens of metres into the air, and the sound from the wind felt as if it could tear eardrums. Countless "-500,000" damage figures chaotically mixed together, and the Forgotten City's army, which had been completely suppressed by the Undead army, could finally breathe out in relief as they looked at the countless Undead howling in the air.

Chi... Chi... Chi... Chi... Chi...

The tornado persisted for 10 or so seconds before stopping, and all of the Lord grade Undead rained down the from sky, crashing into the ground. However, they were, after all, Lord grade Undead. They all had powerful lifeforce, and after falling, more than 90% roared and stood up again. The 10% that were killed by the tornado were the ones that had done most of the fighting beforehand.

It was just that all of the Undead had critically low HP – most had less than 20% of their HP. As such, they were no longer a threat to the Forgotten City's soldiers, and when their commanders gave the order, they furiously roared as they charged towards the Lord grade Undead.

At that moment, the song in the background suddenly changed from one of passion to one of gentleness. The instant the song changed, six-figure green numbers rose up from all of the Undead's heads, causing their HP to greatly rise. In the next second, another green figure rose up, bringing all of the Undead's HP to roughly half. In the following seconds, the Undead continued to regain HP until they were at full health again.

The [Song of Healing – Drizzle At The Light Of Dawn] was not very powerful to players because most players had relatively low HP. As such, the 20% recovery every second was not as effective as [Nature's Light], which could instantly bring them back to full HP. In fact, it might not even be as effective as ordinary healing spells

from Priests. However, when used on targets with large amounts of HP, the effects were shocking.

5 seconds... in a mere 5 seconds, all of the damage dealt by the Wind God Black Demon’s 10 second tornado had been completely negated. The Forgotten City's soldiers, who had wanted to attack the Undead while they were weak, were all dumbfounded, and their legs started to tremble. In the sky, Black Demon’s face became as black as the bottom of a pot, and he almost coughed up a mouthful of blood.

Chapter 684 - Sweeping Away All Obstacles

The Forgotten City's soldiers, who had been suppressed to the point that they almost couldn’t breathe, had rejoiced upon seeing the Undead reduced to low health, and they had thought that the situation was about to be reversed. However, the Undead army had been restored from critical HP to full HP in a matter of seconds, kicking them down the abyss of despair again. The soldiers stopped advancing, staring at the Undead army that looked the same as before. All of their hope and battle intent was crushed.

BOOM!

The fully-recovered Undead army charged towards the Forgotten City’s dumbfounded army, causing the reorganised army to once again fall into chaos. The double suppression of both their battle power and minds caused them to crumble once again, and even the Celestial grade and Heaven’s End grade commanders were powerless to change anything.

White Eagle, who was still fighting with Greenwood, was unable to remain calm anymore. After he saw that Black Demon’s ultimate skill, which had a massive range, was unable to stop the Undead army, his expression completely changed. He started to use his full strength in his battle with Greenwood, and he continuously thought of ways to escape. However, how could Greenwood let him go? Although Greenwood’s attacks were not as strong – at least, they were far weaker than White Eagle’s – the Fairies’ Nature magic was unrivalled in restricting and pinning down the opponent. Even though White Eagle used his full strength, he was unable to get away from Greenwood, and the situation between them was completely reversed.

Cai’Er’s song did not change, and she continued singing[Song of Healing – Drizzle At The Light Of Dawn], causing the Undead army to recover 20% of its HP every second. The Undead already had quite high Defence and HP, and this terrifying recovery rate meant

that they would often heal more than they would be damaged. The army became a true undying army.

What could cause more despair than an unkillable enemy? What's more, the unkillable enemy kept on multiplying, causing the Forgotten City's soldiers to feel like the light of hope was becoming dimmer and dimmer. Even the Celestial grade and Heaven's End grade commanders' battle intent was quickly crumbling. When Ling Chen was rushing out of Ling Tian City, Xi Ling was no longer standing above the gates, and she instead spread her golden wings and loudly cried out as she flew towards the Forgotten City's army that had been driven back several kilometres by the Undead army.

Whoosh...

Golden fire descended from the sky, mercilessly falling towards the Forgotten City's suppressed army. Xi Ling's attacks were definitely not as 'gentle' the Undead's. Wherever the golden flames went, they left behind 7-figure damage figures in their wake. From the normal soldiers to the Gold Corps, all of them were instantly killed. The high-level commanders who were not instantly killed screamed from the soul-burning effects, and after being afflicted by the [Burn] status, they screamed and rolled around on the ground in pain.

Every time [Nine Inferno Heavenly Flames] fell, it took hundreds of lives. Immediately after these soldiers died, they became Lord grade Undead, joining the Undead army.

Before Xi ling had returned, Ling Chen had fantasised many times about Xi Ling's destructive power and Leng'Er's Undead summoning power working together... after his journey in the Underworld, both Leng'Er and Xi Ling's abilities had become much more powerful, and their cooperation reached a terrifyingly perfect level.

Whoosh!!

After casting a few [Nine Inferno Heavenly Flames], the cooldown time for [Heaven-Burning Flame Sea] ended. In an instant, the surrounding 1,000 metres burned with golden fire, and the air and sky also became a brilliant golden colour. Within the sea of flames, a whole 6,000 soldiers of various grades, levels, and professions were insta-killed. Their pitiful cries shook the heavens and moved the earth. By the time the sea of flames disappeared, the large company of soldiers had been reduced to burnt corpses, and only a few powerful commanders remained, trembling as they stood. Following this, 6,000 Undead rose up. They did not immediately join the Undead army, and instead, under Leng'Er's command, rushed towards the Celestial grade and Heaven's End grade commanders who had not been insta-killed.

Caw~~~~

Xi Ling cried out, attacking mercilessly as Ling Chen had ordered. When she cried out, 6 golden balls of fire floated out from her body, circling around her. Following this, the 6 balls of golden fire quickly transformed into 6 golden Phoenixes that were as big as her, and they all cried out simultaneously before flying towards the Forgotten City's unorganized army.

Although these golden Phoenixes could only release Xi Ling's normal flame attacks, even Xi Ling's most basic attacks had terrifying destructive power and range. Even more importantly... these Phoenixes were invincible!

The 6 Phoenixes rushed towards the Forgotten City's army, bombarding them with fiery grenades. The golden flames continuously exploded outwards, lighting the ground ablaze and causing the Forgotten City's soldiers to scream and cry out. The Forgotten City's army suffered heavy casualties every second. These soldiers were the ones at the back of the army, and they were the only surviving ones. In fact, there wasn't even any need for the Undead army and Xi Ling to continue attacking – just these 6 golden Phoenixes were enough to send the Forgotten City's army

into complete chaos and deal heavy casualties.

Originally, Black Demon had thought that bringing him to destroy a small player's city was simply overdoing it. However, now, he felt incredibly sullen – he found that even as the most powerful Mage God in the Forgotten Continent, he was unable to influence this battle at all.

Black Demon was completely furious. He looked up at Xi Ling in the sky with a hint of fear and savageness in his eyes as he roared in a low voice. Berserk wind blades spun around his body, and he spread out his hands as he muttered in a low voice, "All of you... go and die!!"

The wind blades spinning around Black Demon became faster and stronger. The airs that this attack gave off was even more powerful than the tornado that had lifted up the Undead army...

Ling Chen roared as he shot into the battlefield like a meteor with Dark Samsara in his right hand and Chilling Star in his left. He simultaneously activated [Soul Sacrifice] and [War God's Fury], and under his rapid charge, he left vortexes of air wherever he passed... Black Demon, who was preparing a powerful attack, felt a soul-chilling coldness as the Dark Samsara and Chilling Star simultaneously blasted onto his body.

"Nirvana Samsara!!"

"Extinguishing the Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest!!"

BOOOM!!!!!

-18,000,000!!

-45,000,000!!

The ground trembled with Ling Chen's body at the centre, and an unbridled, powerful force swept outwards. The wind storm that the Black Demon was preparing to release was completely dissipated, and he flew like a cannonball into the distance. In just

an instant, he flew thousands of metres away. Although he was also Mysterious God grade, no matter if it was his battle power or his lifeforce, he was on a completely different level compared to Chi Xuan Wu Hen. Ling Chen had dealt 2 heavy blows to him in his most powerful state, dealing more than 20% of Black Demon's HP in an instant... to be able to reduce a Mysterious God grade expert's HP by more than 20% in an instant was something so terrifying that it almost caused his soul to leave his body. He had never seen or heard about something like this before!

Bang!!!

Black Demon's body was smashed into a small mountain, and the forced caused him to only stop after he was tens of metres within it. The small mountain slightly shook, and long cracks began to extend from the middle before it became peaceful again.

This scene was witnessed by White Eagle, who was still unable to escape from Greenwood, shocking him completely. By now, the Forgotten Emperor's eyes were completely bulging, and his body swayed and almost fell to the ground.

Smashing the almost invincible Wind God to such a degree.... Just... Just what sort of power was this?! Surely this was on the same level as the powerful Moon Goddesses!

Ling Chen's current state was completely different from when he had fought the Undead War God, especially in regard to his attack damage. Now, he was so powerful that he would be able to fight equally with the Undead War God even without the [Shura's Death Domain]. After blowing away the Wind God with a single attack, Ling Chen, who was still in his most powerful state, turned to look at the commanders who were surrounded by the Undead army. A look of ruthlessness flashed in his eyes as he said in a low voice, "Leng'Er, go and destroy everyone in the back... leave these people to Xi Ling and me!"

The Undead army immediately stopped attacking and

surrounding the enemy, and the Undead instead marched towards the back of the army that the 6 golden Phoenixes were bombarding.

The pressure on the commanders, who were barely able to breathe under the suppression of the Undead army, greatly lessened, but before they could take a few breathes, they felt a bone-chilling coldness. In their terror, they saw the player who had blasted the Wind God away staring at them, his gaze as deadly as a viper's.

Whoosh!

A gust of wind erupted outward. Ling Chen did not bother exchanging useless words with them and charged while Xi ling circled above them, her body shining with a golden light. She unleashed her barrier skill [Golden Heaven], causing all of the Forgotten City's powerful experts to be covered within it.

-1,382,400, -1,382,400, -1,382,400...

Chapter 685 - Killing Intent!

The gold coloured world was filled with booms, and explosions of energy fused with the golden sea of flames, turning it into a storm of energy that seemed to be able to destroy the heavens and earth. There were 30 or so high-level Celestial grade commanders who were instantly brought to critical HP, and they fell one by one under the continuous assault of the flames... They all saw the waves of damage figures before dying, all of which exceeded anything they knew. They simply couldn't understand how this terrifying damage, which the Sword Saint and Wind God could not deal with even if they worked together, could come from a human and pet from a mere player's city...

The Celestial grade commanders were all annihilated in an instant, and only the fearful Heaven's End grade commanders were left. In the human race, they were without a doubt all experts, and each of them commanded tens of thousands, if not hundreds of thousands of soldiers. Wherever they went, they would act high and mighty, receiving the worship and adoration from those below them. After reaching the Heaven's End grade, apart from the Mysterious God grade existences, they were essentially invincible as humans went... however, when they faced this man, who was radiating bloodlust, and that golden, fiery bird in the air that could destroy anything in the instant and deal damage figures in the millions... they felt like they were so incredibly small, and they did not even have the right to fight against such a person.

In actuality, although Ling Chen had become much more powerful, killing a high-level Heaven's End grade Boss was not very easy, and facing multiple Heaven's End grade Bosses was still quite dangerous for him. This was because although Xi Ling and he have incredibly powerful attacks, their lifeforce was quite weak. If a Heaven's End grade commander's attack even grazed Xi Ling, she

would be insta-killed. Any ultimate skill from them would be able to insta-kill Ling Chen, but after seeing Ling Chen's devastating attacks, they fell into complete despair. Adding on the fact that the entirety of the Forgotten City's army was being completely suppressed by the Undead army, these Heaven's End grade commanders didn't have even a shred of battle intent or courage to retaliate. After all of the Celestial grade commanders died, they all did the same thing... they turned and ran.

Heaven's End grade experts also could feel fear and reluctance to dying. Before today, they had always seemed brave and courageous because they had never truly faced death before. As such, the will of these experts was completely shattered by what they experienced in this battle.

Running away? How could Ling Chen allow that? With [Broken Shadow] activated, it seemed like they were standing still to Ling Chen. In just an instant, Ling Chen caught up to a Heaven's End grade Mage. He sent 2 [Heaven-Destroying Slashes] towards his back, and the mountain-like impact caused the escaping Mage to slam into the ground and tumble far away... despite tumbling away, Ling Chen's attacks and Xi Ling's flames still followed him, constantly attacking and burning his body. At that moment, a Heaven's End grade Fire Mage and a Heaven's End grade Lightning Mage gritted their teeth and stopped running away after seeing the escaping mage's condition. They simultaneously released powerful magic attacks as a 1 metre long fireball and a bolt of lightning that was half a metre wide shot towards Ling Chen, accurately landing on his body.

BOOM! CRACK!

+119,420, +100,083.

Ling Chen was completely uninjured, and he did not stop attacking in the slightest. In fact, he didn't even bother raising his head to look at those 2 Mages. When their attacks hit, the 2 Heaven's End grade Mages had silently rejoiced, but when they

saw 2 green figures rise up, they felt as if they had been struck by lightning. Their last thoughts of resistance were completely crushed, and they desperately used their magic to teleport away.

After 10 or so rounds of attacks, a large crater had appeared in the ground, and the first Heaven's End grade commander died at Ling Chen and Xi Ling's hands. During the entire process, he had been completely suppressed to the ground, unable to even stand up. He dropped his gold Magic Robe when he died, but Ling Chen did not even look at it as he rushed towards his next target. The instant his weapons hit his target, an explosion that could rock mountains sounded out, causing all of the people to shiver and desperately run faster...

They had never seen such a terrifying person or beast before... Where did they come from? How could they have such heaven-defying power? All of this wasn't important – all they wanted to do was escape as far away as possible...

Before, in the Ice Purgatory, Ling Chen had relied on Cai'Er's [Song of Tranquillity] to deal with the 3 Heaven's End grade Bosses. These Heaven's End grade commanders were much higher level, and when combined together, they were a terrifying force. Apart from the Water, Fire, and Lightning Mages who were useless against Ling Chen, if they had surrounded him and attacked, the situation definitely wouldn't played out this badly. However, when a person's will has been completely crushed, it simply doesn't matter how much power they have.

Humans have always had a much weaker lifeforce than beasts of the same level and grade. There wasn't a single Heaven's End grade commander who could last under Ling Chen and Xi Ling's attacks for more than 20 seconds. None of the 20 or so Heaven's End grade commanders were able to escape from Xi Ling's [Golden Heaven] barrier, and they were being continuously killed by Ling Chen and Xi Ling.

Further away, the Lord grade Undead army had expanded from

20,000 Undead to 70,000 Undead. This was because when Leng'Er came out of Ling Tian City, the countless number of the Forgotten City's soldiers who had been killed by the Mountain Giant were also turned into Undead and joined the ranks of the Undead army. Lord grade Undead climbed out of the ravaged ground everywhere, completely surrounding the remnants of the Forgotten City's army.

On the outside there were 70,000 to 80,000 Lord grade Undead, while on the inside there were less than 10,000 despairing normal soldiers. The battle could no longer be called a battle, and it would be more apt to call it a one-sided slaughter. White Eagle was still tied up by Greenwood, and after being smashed into a mountain, Black Demon still had not come out. It was most likely that he had fainted within the mountain. The powerful commanders could not even protect themselves, let alone go to help the normal soldiers.

The Forgotten Emperor stood by himself at the back of the army. He had essentially watched his army being wiped out by the Undead army in less than 10 minutes. He continuously called out to the commanders, but he received no reply. When he did hear a reply, it was always screams filled with hopelessness and terror.

After the final soldier fell, the Undead army, which now numbered 90,000, was brought over by Leng'Er to the Forgotten Emperor. They marched in perfect unity towards the Forgotten Emperor who had seemed so high and mighty just half an hour ago but was now scrambling backwards in terror. It wasn't that he couldn't fight – his power was at the Celestial grade, but a single Celestial grade human being surrounded by 90,000 Lord grade Undead would be reduced to bones in an instant. As he scrambled backwards, he continuously screamed in terror.

At that moment, a white shadow flashed over the Undead army, rushing towards the Forgotten Emperor. A furious roar sounded out, "Forgotten Emperor, today will be the date of your death!"

Ling Chen was simply too fast, and his speed was to the point

that the Forgotten Emperor could only see a white blur. Before he could react, the white blur was already right in front of him, and the cold and heavy aura it gave off made him feel suffocated. In the next instant, [Dark Samsara] and [Chilling Star] smashed into his chest.

Bang!!!

The sovereign and majestic emperor was sent flying like a sandbag. In that instant, because the explosion that had just sounded out from when Ling Chen had struck his chest was no less intense than the ones from before, he finally understood where the explosions before had come from. As he flew, he heart-rendingly screamed – he was the Forgotten Continent's emperor, someone who only experienced admiration, worship, and flattery. His every word could change the situation for the entire human world in the Forgotten Continent, a single look could cause others to tremble, and a single gesture could cause the land to be turned upside down. Who dared to go against him? Who dared to attack him? Who had the guts or power to harm him? As the person with the most authority in this continent, he couldn't even remember the last time he had been hurt, and the pain of the weapons hitting his body was not something he could bear, much less with the Scorpio Orb's effects of amplifying pain by 3 times.

After crashing to the ground, the Forgotten Emperor created a large crater, and he bounced a few times like a ball before finally stopping. He shakily stood up, looking dejected and depressed as he looked towards Ling Chen. Over countless years, this was the first time he had felt such immense fear. "Ling Tian... you... you dared to attack me..."

"You think I wouldn't dare?" Ling Chen laughed as if he had heard an incredibly funny joke. The army of 100,000 was gone, and the Forgotten Emperor was left by himself, looking incredibly pitiful. However, there was no joy in his heart, only fury and hatred. "Why wouldn't I dare to harm you? Not only will I harm

you, I'm going to kill you today!!"

Ling Chen's words brought with them a bone-piercing hatred and boundless killing intent. Every word stabbed into the Forgotten Emperor's ears and heart like knives, causing him to feel even more terror. He could tell that Ling Chen was not joking – he really was going to kill him. When this true fear descended, he was no longer able to maintain the airs of an emperor, and he instead trembled as he yelled, "No! You can't kill me!! I'm the emperor of the Forgotten Continent's humans!! All of the humans in the continent need me!! I'm also protected by the Moon God Clan... if you kill me, all of the humans in the entire continent will not forgive you, and the glorious Moon God Clan will severely punish you. Ling Tian City won't be able to survive... you can't kill me! You can't kill me!!"

Chapter 686 - The Emperor Who Fled

“The emperor of the Forgotten Continent’s humans? Protected by the Moon God Clan?” Ling Chen once again coldly laughed, his killing intent not weakening at all, “Anyone who dares to attack Ling Tian City and kill Ling Tian City’s people, regardless of whether they’re a bullshit emperor or the emperor of heaven, will die!!”

As Ling Chen spoke, the Forgotten Emperor’s pupils contracted. Ling Chen simultaneously activated Soul Sacrifice and War God’s Fury, and his aura became more powerful by more than 10 times, causing the Forgotten Emperor to fall on his bottom. Ling Chen gave a low roar and jumped up, sending 2 Heaven-Destroying Slashes towards the Forgotten Emperor... in his strongest state, if these 2 attacks hit, they would deal more than half of the emperor’s HP.

“Stay your hand!!!”

A loud roar came from the air. White Eagle took one of Greenwood’s attacks with his back and used the force of the blow to escape from Greenwood. He moved as quickly as he could towards the Forgotten Emperor, and while still in the air, a silver, 3 metre long, crescent-moon shaped sword light swept towards Ling Chen like a meteor...

If Ling Chen continued to attack the Forgotten Emperor, he would definitely be hit by the sword light. If he didn’t want to be hit, he would have to give up on attacking and retreating. Ling Chen detected the cold aura shooting down from above, but he completely ignored it, and he instead sped forwards even faster...

Cha!!

The sword light precisely sliced into Ling Chen’s head, and the Evil God’s Mask glowed with its red light, furiously roaring. The sword light reacted as if it had hit a reflective mirror, and it was

reflected back at White Eagle, who was completely unprepared. He flipped 3 times in the air, while Ling Chen's heavy attack smashed down onto the Forgotten Emperor's shoulder.

"Arghhhh!!!"

His cry of pain was sharp and piercing, and a 10 metre wide, many metres deep crater appeared in front of Ling Chen. The Forgotten Emperor's body was buried within the crater, and his face was twisted from the extreme pain. All the Forgotten Emperor could do was stare at Ling Chen with despair.

Nightmare, this was definitely a nightmare... 100,000 elite soldiers and many commanders, a force that could sweep through everything under the heavens, had been destroyed by a tiny player's city!! How could such a terrifying Undead army exist?! And a beast that could release golden flames simply didn't exist in the Forgotten Continent!! And that player – he was only a player, so how could he be so powerful?! As the Emperor of the Forgotten Continent's humans, how could he lose? This was definitely... a nightmare!! Definitely!!

Unfortunately, it was not up to the Forgotten Emperor to decide whether this was a nightmare or not. Ling Chen coldly smiled as he looked down at the Forgotten Emperor, and he raised both of his weapons... if he really killed the emperor, the consequences would be incredibly severe. Just as the Forgotten Emperor had said, it would cause all of the humans in the Forgotten Continent to hate him, and even more seriously, it might bring the retribution of the main cities of the Forgotten Continent and the Moon God Clan. The Emperor of every continent was appointed by the Moon God Clan and was protected by the Moon God Clan and their Moon God Representatives. Killing a continent's emperor was equivalent to killing someone from the Moon God Clan, which would undoubtedly raise the Moon God Clan's fury. The consequences would be unimaginable.

However, none of these things were within Ling Chen's mind. He

even dared charge into the Long family's residence alone in the real world; what was there so significant about killing an emperor in a virtual world? Just as he had yelled, even if it was the emperor of heaven, anyone who dared to touch his bottom line would be killed without mercy.

Whoosh!!!

A berserk gust of wind suddenly erupted from ahead of them, reaching Ling Chen's body in an instant. This wind did not have any attack power, and it instead brought with it a massive force. Ling Chen held his breath, and he was pushed back 10 or so body positions. At that moment, the ground next to the Forgotten Emperor burst forth as a man in black jumped out. It was the Wind God, but this Mage God, who was usually majestic and awe-inspiring, was in a sorry state. His hair was in complete disarray, and he had dirt and mud all over his face and jet-black magic robe. Most of his clothes and equipment had been severely damaged by Dark Samsara, and he looked worse than a beggar. He did not say anything as he quickly grabbed the Forgotten Emperor and continuously teleported as he ran as fast as he could.

In the air, White Eagle also recovered and rushed to the Forgotten Emperor's other side, joining Black Demon in helping the emperor escape.

If it was just White Eagle and Black Demon, even if it was just for their pride as Mysterious God grade experts, they would have stayed to fight with Ling Chen. Moreover, if they worked together, Ling Chen had no hope of winning without Xi Ling and Cai'Er. However, they had seen Ling Chen's terrifying attack power, which caused them to feel deeply shocked and fearful. Although they had misjudged Ling Chen's overall strength, the most important thing was saving the Forgotten Emperor. Even if they could defeat Ling Chen, they couldn't guarantee that the emperor would survive.

"You want to run? Haha..." Ling Chen coldly laughed and

activated Broken Shadow again, shooting out like a rocket behind them. He pointed Dark Samsara forwards as he roared, “Final Samsara!!”

As Dark Samsara slashed down, a dark light exploded forwards, reaching the Forgotten Emperor’s back in an instant. White Eagle and Black Demon thought that teleporting a few times would be enough to throw Ling Chen off, and just as they had breathed out in relief, they felt a terrifying aura closing in on them from behind. They simultaneously looked back and saw the jet-black light right behind them.

“Wuahhhh!!”

White Eagle furiously roared and turned around. His hands blurred as tens of sword lights slashed out towards the Final Samsara. Beside him, a green light exploded out from Black Demon’s body, quickly becoming a Wind element protective screen that defended with White Eagle’s sword light.

Ss… all of the sword light was devoured by the Final Samsara…

Ping… the Mysterious God grade Wind element protective screen, which had Absolute Defence for the few moments that it had been active, was shattered as the Final Samsara came into contact with it…

Chi… the Final Samsara pierced through White Eagle’s body…

Chi… the Final Samsara pierced through Black Demon’s body… following this, like a jet-black sword of judgment, it pierced through the Forgotten Emperor’s body.

Two grunts and a scream sounded out. The 2 Mysterious God grade experts’ defensive skills and bodies did not stop the Final Samsara at all. From the massive impact from the Final Samsara, the 3 people flew away in 3 separate directions. The Forgotten Emperor’s HP fell to less than one-third, and in his pain, he madly waved his arm as he hoarsely roared, “Use that… hurry up and use

it!!”

After being hit by the massive force, White Eagle became semi-stunned, and he only came back to his senses after hearing the Forgotten Emperor’s roars. He stretched out his hand and took out an item, after which he immediately crushed it with all of his strength. A ball of piercing silver light suddenly flashed in the sky, bringing the Forgotten Emperor, White Eagle, and Black Demon into the sky, causing them to disappear.

Swish…

Ling Chen rushed over with great winds trailing behind him, but the Forgotten Emperor and the others were gone. He deeply frowned and immediately summoned Xiao Hui to detect where they were, but he could not find them… if even Xiao Hui could not find them, that meant that the Forgotten Emperor and the others were gone. Just then, that light was definitely from a spatial tool – one that could be used even if one was in battle!

Ling Chen had been reluctant to give up the chase, and he had maintained a certain distance from them, using his aggro to lock onto the Forgotten Emperor. He didn’t think that it was possible for the Forgotten Emperor to escape because of Broken Shadow. However, he never expected that they would have that kind of spatial item. Looking at the empty space in front of him, he felt quite downcast.

Xi Ling, Leng’Er, and Cai’Er all came over to his side. In the distance, Greenwood hovered in the air, staring at where the Forgotten Emperor had disappeared. There was an abnormal peacefulness in his eyes, but there wasn’t even a trace of joy after beating back the enemies.

Ling Chen lightly sighed and adjusted his emotions before coming over to Greenwood. Facing Greenwood’s expression, he wasn’t sure what to say, and he could only dryly ask, “Chief Greenwood… you… are you alright? Right now, they’re all… at the

east gate, and they are safe."

Greenwood slowly shook his head without any joy or sorrow on his face. He looked over towards the Mountain Gian and said, "I'm fine, but the Mountain Giant seems to have been sealed by some sort of barrier. For you, who could even break apart the Fairy Realm's barrier, I'm sure you'll be able to do something about it, right?"

Ling Chen slightly nodded and did not say anything as he walked over to the Mountain Giant. He looked at the silver barrier that had sealed the Mountain Giant, and he raised his weapons. Ling Chen simultaneously activated Soul Sacrifice and War God's Fury, and he sent out an Eight Directions Annihilation and a Nirvana Samsara towards the barrier.

The 2 powerful attacks smashed into the silver barrier, creating a storm of energy that was enough to ravage the surrounding land again. The point where they hit the barrier twisted, but after that, the barrier returned to its normal state... in the air, the woman with red hair shook her head as she said in a low voice, "This barrier can't be broken through with brute strength."

As she spoke, the blue ring on her ring finger flickered, and many thin cracks suddenly appeared on the barrier. These cracks quickly extended, and they soon covered the entire barrier. With a 'ping', the barrier shattered into nothing.

Boom!!!

The Mountain Giant's raised foot finally descended to the ground, and it fell silent. Although its movements had been sealed, it had still been conscious the entire time, and he had seen everything. After falling silent for a long time, it said in a low, rumbling voice, "I'm not worthy of being a guardian."

"Don't say that." Ling Chen shook his head. "You have a kind and just heart, and you are perfect for being Ling Tian City's guardian. It was just that the enemies were too powerful."

Chapter 687 - Ling Chen's Furious Revenge (1)

"Thank you for saying this," the Mountain Giant said. "You've already become so powerful to the point that I cannot even believe it. You completely neutralised the Forgotten Emperor's attack. However, you came back a bit late, so a part of Ling Tian City was destroyed and some brave Fairies also died... go and see them. I felt a mysterious power transport them to a safe place. They're filled with sorrow right now, and they need some news that can reduce their sorrow."

Ling Chen felt a pain within his heart and looked towards Greenwood as he slowly nodded. "Alright... Chief Greenwood, they're at the eastern part of the city. Let's go over."

Everyone who Ling Chen wanted to see what was at the eastern part of Ling Tian City. Yun Meng Xin and Li Xiao Xue's heads were lowered in silence, and Xiao Qi and Su'Er's eyes were both red. Evidently, they had both cried for a long time. Yun Feng, Xiao Qiu Feng, and the others all looked incredibly serious, and flames of fury and hatred burned within their eyes. The Dwarf Clan's Chief and Elders had also returned. Some were sighing, while others were roaring with anger. The Fairies were all silently weeping, giving off an air of absolute grief... in their midst, there were 19 male Fairies lying in a row, not a trace of life within them.

Before Ling Chen arrived, 19 Fairies had died. Compared to the Forgotten City's losses, these casualties were extremely low. However, to Ling Tian City's people, the complete annihilation of the Forgotten City's soldiers was not enough because all of the Fairies who had died were completely innocent. When everyone saw Ling Chen and Greenwood arrive, everyone's emotions took a turn for the better. Chief Greenwood was the Fairy Clan's pillar of strength, and even though Yun Meng Xin was the Lady of the City,

everyone knew that Ling Chen was the core of Ling Tian City.

Xiao Qi and Su'Er came over to Ling Chen and couldn't help but burst into tears. "Big brother Ling Tian, where have you been for the past 2 days? Why couldn't we find you... Uncle Violetreed, Uncle Greencloud, Ying Feng, Ying Yun, and Greenmist... they all died... in order to protect Ling Tian City. They were killed by the Forgotten City's people... wuu... wuuu..."

When the Fairy Clan saw Greenwood come back, they also burst into tears. From when they had been born, this was the first time that so many of their family members had departed so suddenly. The pain that they felt was akin to ten thousand arrows stabbing into their hearts. Greenwood stood in front of the Fairies' corpses, silently looking down at them without a trace of emotion on his face. However, his fists were tightly clenched together and trembled violently, and 2 streams of tears ran down from the corners of his eyes to his jaw before falling to the ground.

Ling Chen lifted his face to the sky and deeply breathed in. Xuanyuan Dia Wu came over to his side and said with guilt, "I'm sorry that I wasn't able to protect them..."

"It's not your fault. In this situation, even you weren't able to change anything," Ling Chen replied. "It's all... my fault... all of it..."

"Has the danger in the western side... been resolved?" Yun Meng Xin finally asked in a soft voice.

"Apart from the Forgotten Emperor and his 2 Mysterious God grade bodyguards, they're all dead," Ling Chen blankly replied.

Yun Meng Xin nodded, and she did not feel surprised or joyful. Ling Chen's words entered everyone's ears... under the assault of the Forgotten City's army, everyone had lost hope. However, in just half an hour, they had been completely destroyed – this was a completely unbelievable miracle. However, no one was able to feel happy, and no one cheered with joy.

Ling Chen walked through the crowd and silently came to Chief Greenwood's side, looking at the 19 fallen Fairies together. The Fairy lying in front of him was called Greencloud, and he was an affable and gentle Fairy uncle. He was in charge of the transport of materials from the Fairy Realm to Ling Tian City, and he always had a peaceful and gentle smile on his face no matter who he faced. There was a beautiful Fairy woman kneeling down beside him, and her eyes looked like empty tunnels because all of her tears had already been used up. She was called Greenvine, and she was Greencloud's wife. Within her arms was a young Fairy girl who looked 6 or 7 years old. Her name was Ying Yan, and she was Greencloud and Greenvine's daughter. Her skinny and weak body was curled up within her mother's embrace, her eyes red and puffy from crying. She hazily gazed at the corpse beside her, and she subconsciously cried out 'daddy' over and over again. Every time she called out, everyone could feel their hearts shattering.

Ling Chen deeply understood this sort of pain because he had experienced it twice in his lifetime. The first time was when he had heard that Xuanyuan Dia Wu had died, and the second was when Shui Ruo had died in his arms. He had gone completely mad both times, and both times he had almost been driven to death. That sort of pain was a hundred, if not a thousand, times more painful than the times he spent in heaven and hell. A single Fairy's death meant that many families had been shattered... the Fairies were essentially one big family, so the death of one Fairy was a sorrowful occasion for the entire Clan, and this was even more pronounced with 19 departed Fairies.

Ling Chen walked forwards towards Greencloud's corpse. After opening and closing his lips many times, he spoke in a hoarse voice, "Aunty Greenvine, Yan'Er, I let you down... I'm sorry... I'm sorry..."

He was indeed sorry. If he hadn't found the Fairy Clan and asked them to leave the Fairy Realm to join Ling Tian City, none of this

would have happened. It was impossible to tell what their future would have been like, but at the very least Greencloud would not have died like this, and their family would still be together in blissful happiness. None of the other Fairies would have died either, causing many Fairy families to be shattered, and the Fairies wouldn't have been brought into the conflict and strife.

Back then, he had asked the Fairies to leave so that they would not walk towards extinction. However, it was undeniable that he was the reason for today's tragedy. Moreover, he had asked the Fairy Clan to join Ling Tian City not to help them but more so for himself.

When Greenvine heard his voice, she spaced out for a while before looking up at Ling Chen and slowly lowering her head. She said in a soft, hoarse voice, "No... it's not your fault. You got rid of our barrier and reawakened the Fairy Tree. You're our Fairy Clan's greatest benefactor so don't say that you let us down... Greenwood, he... he died defending his home... not only was he a good husband and father, but he was also a true man... I feel proud of him... I..."

Greenvine choked on her tears and tightly closed her eyes, unable to continue speaking. In her arms, little Ying Yan raised her head and said hazily, "Mummy said... Daddy is a hero and that he didn't leave us but instead went to heaven. In heaven, daddy will be very happy, and he will keep watching over us... so, big brother Ling Tian, don't say that you're sorry. Even though you're not around a lot of the time, you're my favorite person, and you're also daddy and mommy's favourite person too."

Ling Chen's body trembled. His bitter and distraught heart was filled with warmth, and his eyes gradually moistened... if they had hit him, cursed at him, or ignored him, he would have felt better... but there was no blame or hatred in their gaze. Instead, there was comfort and warmth... their hearts were so pure that one would feel their hearts breaking, making Ling Chen feel even guiltier...

Why had he charged into the Fairy Realm and convinced the

Fairies to leave in the name of saving them but in actuality do it for his own selfish reasons... why had he not made sufficient preparations despite knowing that something like this would happen... why did he have to be stuck in the Underworld when this happened...

A big hand fell on Ling Chen's shoulder. Greenwood looked at him as he peacefully said, "Ling Tian, don't blame yourself; this really isn't your fault. Leaving the Fairy Realm and defending Ling Tian City with our lives was our own decision. Ling Tian City is our current home, so it is our responsibility to defend it with all of our power and our lives if necessary. Not only is it our responsibility, but it is also our glory. Before the fight, we were all prepared for such an outcome."

"That's right. Brother Ling Tian, it's not your fault. On the contrary, you once again saved us."

"You're indeed our Fairy Clan's greatest benefactor. After they've reached heaven, they'll definitely thank you! How could they blame you?"

"That's right, please don't blame yourself. It really wasn't your fault..."

Facing the guilt that Ling Chen felt, none of the Fairies lost control of their emotions. Instead, they all comforted him and reassured him that it was not his fault.

Ling Chen's heart was deeply touched, and when he looked at the Fairies around him and Ling Tian City, the way he saw Ling Tian City greatly changed. Before today, Ling Tian City was just something that he had created for Yun Meng Xin, a present to fulfil his promise to her. The most important thing to him was searching for the things that could bring Shui Ruo back to life, and Ling Tian City was just something insignificant. Back then, even the title of Vice-Lord was something that he had declined many times before reluctantly accepting it. However, now, he suddenly felt a sense of

responsibility towards Ling Tian City – Ling Tian City was created because of him, and it took his name. He should have originally treated it as his responsibility and not just as a resting spot for him... at the very least, these kind residents deserved his full protection.

Ling Chen did not say anything more. He slowly walked over to where Xiao Qiu Feng and the others were, and with every step he took, his eyes became colder and the killing intent around him became denser. He was looking ahead when he suddenly said, “Heavenly King Skyfall, how many players can the Skyfall Dynasty immediately move out?”

Skyfall stared in surprise for a moment before replying, “Right now, there are 2.48 million players online, and 1.2 million are ready to take orders at any moment. If this figure isn’t enough, give me 30 minutes...”

“It’s enough,” Ling Chen cut him off, his voice as cool as water, but every word he spoke caused their hearts to tremble. “Tell them to gather at the Forgotten City’s Central Plaza in 10 minutes.”

Skyfall’s eyes widened, and after a moment of confusion, his eyes suddenly blazed with passion. “Yes!! In 10 minutes, they’ll all be there without fail! Even if the consequences are 10 times more severe, we’ll turn the Forgotten City upside down! What a rubbish Royal City; what a rubbish emperor... I was just drinking and playing chess with Violetreed and Greenmoon a few days ago... and now... ai...”

Skyfall sighed, and the edges around his eyes began to redden.

“No! I’m not telling you to go there to make a ruckus.” Ling Chen shook his head. “The difference in power between a player’s city and a Royal City is simply too big. Let alone millions of players, even if we had tens of millions of players, we couldn’t afford to do such a thing, and we would only receive cruel punishments. I just want them to go to the Forgotten City in order to carry out a

command.”

Ling Chen turned and slowly explained what the command was.

“W-What?!” When they heard his ‘command’, the Skyfall Dynasty’s 3 Heavenly Kings all gaped with their mouths wide open, wondering if there was something wrong with their ears. Yun Feng and Xiao Qiu Feng also stared in shock, but when they saw how terrifyingly cold Ling Chen’s eyes were… he didn’t seem like he was joking or crazy.

“Just do as he says,” Li Xiao Xue said decisively. “If it’s not enough, we can call more people.”

“It’ll be enough,” Ling Chen calmly said. He turned to look in the direction that the Forgotten City was, and he held a Spatial Orb in his hand as he muttered in a low voice, “I’ll make you pay back what you owe Ling Tian City by 100 times today!!”

As he spoke, Ling Chen disappeared and left for the Forgotten City by himself without saying any goodbyes.

Chapter 688 - Ling Chen's Furious Revenge (2)

"Where did he go?" When Yola saw Ling Chen suddenly vanish, she worriedly cried out.

The woman with red hair fell silent for a moment before replying, "He's in the centre of this continent. Looks like he went to this continent's Royal City, the place that just attacked Ling Tian City. Evidently, he wants revenge."

"He's going to the Royal City to take revenge? By himself?" Yola's mouth fell open. "Even if it's him, that's simply too irrational! Even though he sent the Forgotten Emperor and his 2 Mysterious God grade bodyguards running, that's the Forgotten Emperor's territory. If he goes and faces the guards there, he definitely won't be able to accomplish anything. Just the rules in the city are enough to greatly suppress him, and if he uses force, he'll pretty much just be seeking his own death."

The woman with red hair stretched out her fingers and said slowly, "Since he has charged into the Long family's residence twice by himself, charging into the virtual world's Royal City isn't that big of a deal. However, one can't help but worry about him. Yola, let's go and have a look."

Yola smiled. "I knew it would turn out like this. Although you won't admit it with your mouth, you're evidently more worried about that fellow than I am."

"Let's go already." The woman with red hair rolled her eyes at the girl with golden hair. She released the spatial energy from Lachesis and departed.

Forgotten City.

Ling Chen came to the Forgotten City very rarely. After the Forgotten City had been unlocked, he had been there a total of 3

times including this time. That was because there was simply nothing there that made it worth his time. However, he had never thought that he would one day want to destroy this city so much.

A player wanting to destroy a virtual world's Royal City sounded like an extremely crazy idea. However, this crazy idea surged within Ling Chen's mind, and it was about to become a reality. Ling Chen floated in the air, coldly looking down at the Forgotten City. Because Ling Tian City had been closed, the Forgotten City, which was normally quite empty, was incredibly lively and bustling with people. There were many more players than usual, and they hurried about their business. Ling Chen slowly took out one of the [High Sound Quality Speakers] that he had obtained from the Underworld and brought it to his lips, causing his calm voice to carry through the entire Forgotten City:

"Listen up everyone in the Forgotten City. Whether you're a player or an NPC, I'll give you 10 minutes. If you don't want to die, immediately leave the Forgotten City. Otherwise, the consequences will be yours to bear!"

"All of you in the Forgotten City, you have 10 minutes to leave. If you don't want to die, leave immediately! This is not a joke!"

"Final warning! Those who don't want to die, leave the Forgotten City within 10 minutes!!"

Ling Chen's voice was transmitted to every corner and person in the Forgotten City by the High Sound Quality Speaker. He could have instantly begun his attack, making the Forgotten City unable to react, but he instead gave the Forgotten City sufficient time to prepare and react, putting himself on the passive side... however, this proved that although Ling Chen was cold-blooded, he was not a crazed murderer. He had given up the advantage of surprise to give the innocents in the Forgotten City a chance to escape. However, if they did not believe him, it would no longer be his fault.

When Ling Chen's voice was broadcasted throughout the entire city, the Forgotten City suddenly became silent before bursting with noise. Countless players and residents felt incredibly curious, excited, nervous, or fearful as they looked up towards the sky, trying to find out where the voice had come from.

The Forgotten Emperor, who had just escaped from the battlefield, had yet to recover from his shock. After returning to the Central Palace, he breathed raggedly, his face as pale as a sheet. Beside him, White Eagle and Black Demon were in no better shape than he was – this was especially so for Black Demon, who had been burned by Xi Ling's flames and hit by Ling Chen's attacks. One brought a soul-burning pain, while the other amplified pain by 3 times, causing him to cut a sorry figure.

As for the Forgotten Emperor, he had not even steadied his breathing yet when Ling Chen's low voice sounded out from the sky, causing White Eagle and Black Demon's expressions to fall and the Forgotten Emperor to almost crash down to the ground.

Anyone else who heard this strange voice might have taken it to be a prank or a joke, but this emperor, who had barely survived just then, knew that this person was not joking at all. This man was a maniac who even dared to try to kill an emperor! What's more, this maniac was so powerful that even his 2 Mysterious God grade bodyguards trembled in fear before him! The Forgotten Emperor simply couldn't understand or accept how a player could be so powerful.

"Immediately... Immediately stop him!" The Forgotten Emperor swayed as he rose up, shouting

with a pale face. He would never normally lose control of himself like this, but today was different – he had faced death for the first time, leaving a deep trauma within his heart. Hearing Ling Chen's voice had made him absolutely terrified.

White Eagle stepped forwards and said, "Please don't panic your

imperial majesty. This place is not Ling Tian City but our Royal City. It will be incredibly easy for us to deal with him. In the extremely unlikely scenario that he really is able to destroy our Royal City, the Moon God Representative will definitely immediately sense this and come to protect our Royal City."

When the Forgotten Emperor heard the words 'Moon God Representative', the Forgotten Emperor calmed down greatly. He started to pull himself together and said after a while, "That's right, this place is the Royal City, not Ling Tian City. There's nothing he can do here. However, you all saw his strength – if he goes mad here, he might cause massive damage to our side. Moreover, about the matter with Ling Tian City... although we suffered a crushing defeat, it was us who initiated it, so unless the situation is extremely dire, we cannot allow the Moon God Representative to know about that. Immediately send out my commands to the entire city to stand guard and kill Ling Tian with our full strength!!"

Ling Chen's 3 warnings did not cause any panic within the Forgotten City. Instead, everyone began discussing among themselves. Most people thought that it was some prank, scoffing at the person who was yelling so arrogantly. After all, this was the Forgotten Continent's Royal City, the place where the Forgotten Continent's humans' strongest forces were. What's more, this place was protected by a Moon God Representative – who would dare to make a ruckus here? It would simply be seeking death.

At that moment, alarm bells suddenly started to ring throughout the city, and guards of all levels rushed out towards all of the key areas. They were all in full armour, and they had cold expressions on their faces as if they were going to face a great enemy. Guards continuously patrolled through various streets as if they were searching for something, and a tense atmosphere descended on the Forgotten City.

The official response from the Forgotten City caused the

residents to be unable to maintain their cool. They finally realised that the voice from before was not a joke – after all, it was the first time that the entire city had been mobilised! In that moment, terror quickly spread throughout the entire city, and it continuously grew. All beings loved life and feared death, and avoiding danger was something that all beings did naturally. As such, the residents no longer ignored Ling Chen's warning, and they instead started to quickly leave the Forgotten City. The first wave of people caused a chain reaction of panic as more and more residents used all sorts of methods to flee the Forgotten City. In less than 5 minutes, around one-third of the Forgotten City's residents had left... they weren't sure whether there would be a disaster soon, but they believed that even if there was a disaster, the Forgotten City would be able to resolve it. However, despite having faith in the Forgotten City, no one wanted to put themselves in harm's way, and they were not willing to joke around with their lives.

The Forgotten City's guards did not stop any residents from fleeing, nor did they say anything about it. This silent acceptance increased the fear within the Forgotten City, causing more and more people to run away. Naturally, there were also many residents who chose not to leave – they didn't believe that a disaster would descend upon the Forgotten City – even if a disaster really broke out because they believed that the Moon God Representative would save them.

Some residents were filled with fury and hot-bloodedness and ran around the city, helping the patrolling guards to try to find where the voice had come from. It was just that they were not even able to find Ling Chen's shadow during the 10 minutes. During this entire time, Ling Chen had been in the sky above the Forgotten City's Central Plaza while concealed. Unless he showed himself, let alone these guards, even White Eagle and Black Demon would not be able to detect him.

Similarly, waves had been sent crashing throughout the player world. The Forgotten City's residents naturally would not recognise Ling Chen's voice, but every player did. Before, the Forgotten City's attack on the player's city had also sent waves throughout the player world, but it had at most evoked pity towards Ling Tian City. No one believed that Ling Tian City would be able to survive the Forgotten City's attack – after all, although the Ling Tian City had powerful defences and more than half of the players on the Heaven Rankings, in front of a Royal City's power, they were still incredibly weak.

However, the result of the battle made them feel completely flabbergasted – although the western part of Ling Tian City had been damaged to some degree, the Forgotten City's 100,000 soldiers had been completely wiped out! Just as this unbelievable piece of news came in, Ling Chen's icy voice sounded out from above the Forgotten City.

All of the players realised that this was the beginning of Ling Tian's revenge towards the Forgotten City. However, everyone thought that Ling Tian had gone completely mad. Even if he was invincible among players, he was still just a player! A player had gone to take revenge on a Royal City, and he had said such words... it was simply wildly arrogant to the extreme.

Within the chaos in the Forgotten City, 10 minutes passed by incredibly quickly. Ling Chen, who had been concealed the entire time, finally revealed himself as 1.2 million Skyfall Dynasty players appeared at the Central Plaza beneath him. Ling Chen looked down and said in a low voice, "I've given you all a chance to escape, so don't blame be since you've chosen to be foolish. If you want to blame someone, blame that dog emperor of yours."

Ling Chen raised the High Sound Quality Speaker to his mouth as his voice, filled with killing intent, reverberated throughout the entire city, "Old Forgotten Dog, get out here to accept your death!!"

Chapter 689 - Ling Chen's Furious Revenge (3)

Ling Chen was the first person in history to have dared to call the Forgotten Emperor 'Old Forgotten Dog', and in public at that! When Ling Chen's voice travelled through the city, it evoked countless cries and gasps while also simultaneously revealing his position. Within the palace, a white figure rushed out and appeared in front of Ling Chen in an instant, glowering at Ling Chen as he hovered in the air. The silver sword in the white figure's hands looked completely ordinary. "Ling Tian! You dared to scare the entire city, and now you dare to act so disrespectfully towards the Forgotten Emperor! Do you really think that this is a place where you can do as you wish?"

"Act disrespectfully?" Ling Chen coldly laughed, looking at the Mysterious God grade expert condescendingly, "I'm not just going to act disrespectfully towards him – even if I can't kill him today, I'll make him feel so much pain that he wishes he was dead!"

"Insolence!" White Eagle also coldly laughed. "You think that just because you beat back our 100,000 soldier army that you have the right to be arrogant here? The Forgotten City has existed for thousands of years; how could a tiny player like you do anything to it? The Forgotten City has countless experts, and destroying a player like you will be as easy as flipping our palms over. You won't be able to touch even a hair on his imperial majesty's head."

Ling Chen looked down at the densely-gathered players and then casted a side-glance towards White Eagle. "Come to think of it... who the hell do you think you are? Scram to one side and tell your Old Forgotten Dog to get the hell out here! If he does that, I'll be lenient towards the Forgotten City and won't make it as painful when he dies... if I have to find him myself, death won't come so easily."

“You!!” White Eagle was completely furious. As a Mysterious God grade expert, who had ever dared to talk to him like this? He flicked out with his right hand as the silver sword suddenly exploded with light. He laughed in anger, and his Mysterious God grade aura locked onto Ling Chen, “Very well! I want to see how you’ll cause a disaster for the Forgotten City and harm his imperial majesty!”

“Are you sure… you don’t want your Old Forgotten Dog to come out?” Ling Chen looked towards the palace where the Forgotten Emperor was as he spoke expressionlessly. He did not put this Mysterious God grade expert, who was at the peak of all humans, in his eyes at all. “In that case, don’t blame me for not giving you all a chance.”

White Eagle was about to explode with rage. Just as he was going to launch a fatal attack towards Ling Chen, he suddenly heard wild clamouring from below. He subconsciously looked downwards and saw an incomprehensible scene.

He had no idea when so many players had gathered, but the Forgotten City’s Central Plaza was filled to the brim. These players were all of different professions, but they were all wearing Gold grade equipment and had the same symbol on their arms… White Eagle could remember that it was Ling Tian City’s symbol. At that moment, all of the players took off all of their defensive equipment, leaving only their Gold grade weapon in their hands, and started to madly attack each other. What’s more, as soon as they started, they used their most powerful ultimate skills.

These sudden turn of events made everyone at a loss as to what to do, and it also completely shocked everyone. All of these players belonged to Ling Tian City and were all apart of the Skyfall Dynasty, yet they were all crazily attacking each other… they had taken off all of their defensive equipment and were using their strongest weapons to launch their strongest attacks, causing them to quickly die. Before anyone could even tell what was happening,

nearly half of the players had fallen to the ground. The players who had not died continued to kill each other, and even Priests joined in on the killing frenzy, none of them using their healing skills. As everyone stared, dumbfounded, all of the Skyfall Dynasty's 1.2 million players had died within 30 seconds. They did not choose to revive, and they instead continued to lay on the ground across the Forgotten City's Central Plaza, forming an unending sea of corpses.

1.2 million players dying meant that 1.2 million players had gone down in level! This would greatly reduce the Skyfall Dynasty's overall strength, causing an unimaginable loss to the Skyfall Dynasty. The surrounding players and residents stared at this incomprehensible scene blankly, unable to make heads or tails of the situation. All they could think of was that Ling Tian City's people had gone mad... completely mad! Only a madman would do such a thing.

"Heh..." However, Ling Chen was laughing, and quite strangely at that, "Then enjoy this present!"

As Ling Chen spoke, he activated Broken Shadow. White Eagle, who could launch lightning-fast attacks, was left standing there by himself, staring at where Ling Chen had just been.

This revenge plan had been organised by Ling Chen, but he would not administer it personally – he didn't have time to fight with the Forgotten City's Mysterious God grade experts. After easily leaving White Eagle's line of sight and aggro, Ling Chen appeared in one of the alleyways near the Central Plaza. Leng'Er came out from behind him, and the black crescent moon once again appeared on her forehead, revealing a mysterious, dark light...

In that instant, the 1.2 million players' bodies were enwrapped by a grey fog. Following this, a grey light rose up from their corpses, a light so dense that it blocked out the sunlight. Within the grey light, dark figures began to slowly stand up one by one, letting out

low roars that could cause anyone's heart to tremble.

The black figures spread out from where Ling Chen was, who was in the north, towards the south. In a mere 10 or so seconds, a dark figure stood beside each of the corpses. Their roars seemed to have come from hell, and a ghastly aura descended upon the Forgotten City's Central Plaza, causing the once bustling Central Plaza to turn into an eerie hell.

In 10 seconds, 1.2 million Lord grade Bosses had risen up... this was Leng'Er's most outrageous summoning to date. The 1.2 million Undead looked like an endless black sea, completely filling the Central Plaza. Under Leng'Er's command, they deeply roared and raised their weapons, dispersing in different directions.

In that moment, countless screams of fear and panic erupted from all directions...

What did 1.2 million Lord grade Undead mean? Back at the East Ocean Continent's Sunrise City, Leng'Er only had LV1 Summon Undead, and she could only summon 10,000 low-grade Undead in an hour. And yet, that was already enough to strike fear into everyone in Sunrise City. And now, there was a whole 1.2 million of them! What's more, each and every one of the Undead had Lord grade power, and they were tens, if not hundreds, of times more powerful than the ones Leng'Er had summoned back then! What's more, they would not disappear after a certain time, and they would remain forever unless they were killed or called back by Leng'Er.

If 1.2 million players had invaded the Forgotten City, they would not be worried at all. If it were 1.2 million normal Undead, the Forgotten City would still be able to deal with them easily. However, if it were 1.2 million Lord grade Undead, let alone a single Forgotten City, even 3 Forgotten Cities would find it difficult to stop them!

Lord grade monsters were extremely powerful beings! Within the

Forgotten City, the only unit formed completely of Lord grade soldiers was the Gold Corps. They were at the top of the hierarchy in the Forgotten City's army, and they were the super unit that only the Forgotten Emperor could order. They were powerful, and their number was not small either – within the Forgotten City, there was a whole 9,000 of them! If these 9,000 Gold Corps soldiers fought together, they would be an unstoppable force, able to defeat hundreds of thousands of normal soldiers.

9,000 Lord grade soldiers was already a terrifying number, and the Forgotten Emperor's goal had always been to expand the Gold Corps to 10,000 soldiers. As for 100,000, that was something that he did not even dare to dream about.

But right now, Ling Chen – or more precisely, Leng'Er – had momentarily summoned 1.2 million Lord grade Undead! Their strength was essentially equivalent to 1.2 million Gold Corps soldiers! This army was so terrifying that there were no words for it.

What's more, this army did not attack the Forgotten City from the outside, but it had appeared in the Central Plaza, the heart of the Forgotten City. The Forgotten City's nightmare immediately descended.

The hellish roars from the Undead and screams from residents and players sounded out from all around the city. The Undead had no compassion or mercy, and they simply followed Leng'Er's orders. They destroyed everything in sight, and they attacked anything that could be attacked.

By the time the Forgotten City's guards had gotten to the Central Plaza, they were completely shocked stiff by the unending Undead army. Following this, they suppressed their fear and terror and raised their weapons, attacking the Undead. However, their deaths were proof of just how terrifying this Undead army was – before the battle between the Undead army and the city guards even began, it was over. The Undead army directly faced the city

guards' attacks, and they bulldozed into the city guard army. Their powerful bodies and Undead strength made it so that the city guards could not retaliate at all. Any casual attack from a Lord grade being could take away droves of lives, and even multiple city guards were unable to stop a single Undead... normal city guards facing Lord grade Undead was completely impossible – in fact, it couldn't even be called a battle: it was a massacre.

The battles between the Undead army and the city guard army erupted in every District of the city, but in front of the massive Lord grade Undead army, the city guard army was completely useless, and they were easily passed by after being killed. The Undead army quickly spread throughout the entire city, and they started to enter the Business District, Entertainment District, Residential District, Administrative District, Guild District... there was also a force of 100,000 Undead that marched towards the palace, stepping over the city guards' bodies in order to get there.

When White Eagle and Black Demon simultaneously appeared, even these Mysterious God grade experts' faces paled and their hands and feet started to feel cold when looking down at the massive Undead army. They could estimate that there were roughly 1 million Undead, causing cold sweat to erupt all over their bodies.

They had just experienced how terrifying these Undead were. And now, 1 million of these Undead had suddenly appeared within the Forgotten City... this was simply the most terrifying nightmare in the world!

Chapter 690 - Burning the Forgotten City

White Eagle and Black Demon simultaneously rushed down, attacking the nearest wave of Undead. Their Mysterious God grade power was simply unstoppable and all of their attacks contained massive destructive power. However, these Undead were, after all, Lord grade Undead, and they had fairly high Defence and HP. Even White Eagle and Black Demon's ultimate skills were not enough to insta-kill them, and it took multiple normal attacks to kill them. This caused the last trace of hope within their hearts to vanish, and all of the hairs on their bodies stood on end... these were not normal Undead, and they were instead just as powerful as the ones in front of Ling Tian City!

In the battle in front of Ling Tian City, tens of thousands of elite soldiers had been completely suppressed by these Undead, and all of the elite soldiers had been killed in the end. White Eagle and Black Demon could naturally tell that all of these Undead were Lord grade Undead! This sort of Undead was very rarely seen, and although they had both lived for a thousand years between them, they had only seen 10 such Undead. And yet, there were more than 1 million now in the Forgotten City!

"How could it be like this? What's going on?" Black Demon uncontrollably roared. "Where did these Undead come from? How can there be so many Lord grade Undead? Am I dreaming? I must be dreaming!!"

"I also wish that this was a nightmare, but this is all real!" White Eagle said as he gritted his teeth. "Let's go! Hurry up and report this to his imperial majesty! The only thing we can do is ask his imperial majesty to negotiate with Ling Tian in order to get Ling Tian to move away all of these Undead! Otherwise, the Forgotten City might really be destroyed!!"

Just moments ago, they had snorted in disdain when Ling Tian had given his warning, but when facing this disaster now, they felt

a bone-piercing terror. They simply couldn't imagine how a player could cause more than 1 million Undead to appear within the Forgotten City! This was completely incomprehensible and impossible!!

"Ding.. Warning! Warning! The Forgotten City has been attacked by an army of Undead. Please immediately stop them, or the Forgotten City may be in danger of being destroyed!"

"Ding... Warning! Warning..."

"Ding... Warning! Warning..."

"Ding... Warning! Warning..."

Urgent warnings sounded out across the Forgotten Continent about once every 10 seconds. Evidently, the system could tell how terrifying this Undead army was, and it immediately sent a warning to the entire Forgotten Continent.

By the time these system announcements sounded out, the Undead army had spread to more than half of the Forgotten City. They destroyed countless building and killed countless city guards with every step they took. At the same time, their numbers increased. Leng'Er's senses could cover half of the Forgotten City, and once a city guard fell, a grey fog would appear around that soldier, giving birth to a new Lord grade Undead that joined the Undead army. Half an hour later, countless city guards had died, but the Undead army's numbers had not decreased at all! Instead, it had increased from 1.2 million to 1.4 million!

A single Lord grade Undead was powerful but not terrifying. 10 of them could cause a small disturbance, and the Forgotten City would be able to deal with even 1,000 of them. 10,000 of them would cause a significant problem for the Forgotten City, but they would not be able to cause the destruction of the entire city, but 1 million... was something that the Forgotten City could not withstand at all.

In front of the Undead army, sending normal city guards was simply suicide, and doing so would instead bolster the numbers of the Undead army. The only ones who could stall them were the Gold Corps. However, even with 1,000 Gold Corps soldiers fighting against 1,000 Undead, the Gold Corps soldiers would still lose. This was because every Gold Corps soldier that died would increase the numbers on the Undead's side! The longer they fought, the larger the gap between the 2 sides would be. In the end, the 1,000 Gold Corps soldiers would be completely destroyed, while the Undead army would end up with more than their original 1,000... how could they fight against such an enemy?

The Forgotten City had more than half of the entire continent's experts. There were powerful Celestial grade and Heavens' End grade existences that did not fear these Lord grade Undead and had the power to kill them. However, enough ants could kill an elephant, and this was all the more so for the Undead that were only 1 or 2 grades below these experts. As more and more Undead flooded into the city, the Celestial grade experts only lasted for a few minutes before fleeing, and some were surrounded and killed. Heaven's End grade experts were only able to last for 10 minutes or so, and some of the more courageous ones lasted to the end, but they were completely inundated by Undead and died.

The Forgotten City's Celestial grade and Heaven's End grade experts fell at the Undead army's hands one by one, unable to stop them at all. Let alone them, even White Eagle and Black Demon could only run after facing this Undead army a few times. A ferocious beast could easily crush a group of ants, and even hundreds or thousands of ants would be no problem. However, angering 1 million ants... was simply seeking death. Once these 'ants' started to attack, even a god might not survive.

The Undead army spread out more and more, and by the time the Forgotten City's residents realised just how terrifying these Undead were, they gave up all thoughts of resisting and fled

towards the outsides of the city. The entire city descended into chaos – residents screamed as they fled, and Undead walked around killing and destroying, their roars heard everywhere. When the Undead army finally spread across the entirety of the Forgotten City, the Forgotten City experienced its greatest disaster in thousands of years.

The Royal City of the humans was now dominated by Undead.

High in the sky, Ling Chen silently looked down at the chaos below, looking incredibly calm and cold. There were more than 1 million Lord grade Undead, but this number was still was not enough to deal with the vast Forgotten City. When the Undead army spread to every corner of the city, they became spread out, and Ling Chen became dissatisfied with the damage they dealt and the fear they induced. After a long time, the Forgotten Emperor still had not appeared. In front of the palace, many Gold Corps soldiers and commanders stoutly defended the palace's entrance, and they did not let a single Undead pass by.

"Looks like this isn't enough," Ling Chen's eyes slightly narrowed as a cruel smile appeared on his face. "In that case, let's make this Forgotten City a bit hotter."

Ling Chen raised his face and spread out his hands as he released the Phoenix God Heavenly Flames from the [Fire God's Bulwark] in vast quantities...

The sky above the Forgotten City suddenly turned crimson-red as if it were burning. The clouds disappeared in an instant, and the terrified residents subconsciously looked up at the strange sky. At the same time, they felt that the air had become unbearably hot to the point that they almost couldn't breathe.

The crimson-red sky suddenly descended, and as everyone's pupils contracted, fire rained down from the sky, covering the entire Forgotten City. The instant that the fire-rain landed, it began to burn furiously – This was no ordinary fire. This fire the

Phoenix God Heavenly Flames from the Phoenix Royal Clan, and it could easily destroy stones and the ground. The instant that the fire-rain descended from above, the Forgotten City became a city of flames – boundless crimson flames burned in every corner of the city, and they started to quickly spread. The light from the flames also illuminated the crowds of Undead and the terrified faces of residents and players.

Countless players and residents died within the Phoenix God Heavenly Flames. At that moment, a great wind blew through the city, causing the fire to become even more intense and creating more and more seas of flame. Within the screams of fear and terror, many people used water or Water Magic to extinguish the flames around them. However, the Phoenix God Heavenly Flames were so powerful that even the Underworld King could not deal with them; how could they be extinguished by normal water or Water Magic? Whenever Water Magic was blasted onto the flames, the magic was instantly devoured, and ordinary water would immediately cause the water to start burning.

Those who did not believe that a disaster would descend and believed that the Forgotten City could take care of everything finally fell into despair and fear. They immediately took their most important things and started to run out of the city. The city guards and players who had escaped looked at the fiery sky above the Forgotten City in despair, and countless residents screamed in terror...

They had no heart to think of why such a disaster had descended on the Forgotten City. The flames that burned the city struck at their hearts like lightning, throwing them into hopelessness. At the centre of the city, even the palace was not spared. After the fire-rain descend on the palace, the entire palace began to burn. 2 Heaven's End grade Water Mages quickly ran over and started to use their Water Magic; however, they were shocked and terrified to find that their water Magic not only did not extinguish the fire

but also caused it to spread. In just 10 seconds or so, the entire roof of the palace began to burn.

“The Emperor’s still inside!! Hurry and save the Emperor!!” One of the Water Mages cried out while looking at the burning palace. Instantly, a black figure and a white figure rushed into the palace. Soon, the pale-faced Forgotten Emperor was escorted out by them on his left and right, and they quickly flew into the air.

“Eh? Old Forgotten Dog, where do you think you’re going? The Forgotten City’s being burned and there are Undead all over the place. You’re not thinking of running away by yourself instead of thinking of ways to resolve this crisis, are you?”

Ling Chen, who had been concealed, suddenly appeared and blocked the way before the Forgotten Emperor and his 2 Mysterious God grade bodyguards, looking at them condescendingly. The entire palace had started to burn below them, and the air was still so hot that one felt incredibly uncomfortable even tens of metres in the air.

Chapter 691 - Forgotten God Representative

The reason the Forgotten Emperor had dared to be so arrogant in twisting right into wrong to attack Ling Tian City was because he thought that Ling Tian City was a mere player's city. Players were far weaker than the Forgotten Continent's residents, so in their eyes, they could do as they wished with players and player's cities. After harming their interests, they could casually find an excuse to suppress or destroy the player's city.

The Forgotten Emperor never thought that angering a player's city would result in this sort of revenge, and neither did White Eagle and Black Demon by his side. When the Undead army rose up and flames burned the city, they finally realised just how terrifying of a person they had offended due to their greed and envy. Now that Ling Chen had suddenly appeared in front of them, a look of fear appeared on both White Eagle and Black Demon's faces.

However, seeing Ling Chen, the Forgotten Emperor did not seem fearful at all, but he instead looked extraordinarily calm. He looked at Ling Chen directly, and his pale face started to regain its colour. "Ling Tian! It's great that you've come! Looks like I don't have to think of ways to find you!"

The Forgotten Emperor's reaction caused White Eagle and Black Demon to feel dumbfounded...when the Undead army started to attack the city, both of them had told the Forgotten Emperor as soon as possible. With their power, they could naturally tell that the Forgotten City could not stop these 1 million Lord grade Undead. In order to protect the Forgotten City, they had suggested that the Forgotten Emperor immediately go and find Ling Tian. Even if they had to lower their heads and sign an agreement, they had to immediately move the Undead army away, otherwise it was possible that the city would be destroyed! However, the Forgotten Emperor had determinedly refused... after the battle at Ling Tian City, he now felt immense fear and hatred towards Ling Tian.

What's more, he was the Emperor of a Royal City – how could he lower his head to a player that even a resident of the Forgotten Continent would look down upon?

Even when the Undead army spread throughout the entire city and flames started to ravage the city, the Forgotten Emperor stayed within his palace without any signs of doing anything, much less come to an agreement with Ling Tian. After the palace started to burn, when White Eagle and Black Demon saved him, they became prepared for the possibility that the Forgotten City really might be destroyed. However, they never thought that the Forgotten Emperor, who was so determined not to meet with Ling Tian, would suddenly react like this.

The Forgotten Emperor's reaction also slightly surprised Ling Chen. Just as the Forgotten Emperor stopped speaking, a massive force descended from above, locking onto Ling Chen's body, making his body feel ten times heavier. This pressure almost caused Snow Cherry to fall from the sky, and Ling Chen felt as if there was something nailed to his chest, making it difficult for him to breathe.

Ling Chen felt quite shocked – the strength of this aura was not at all weaker than that of the Undead War God! Ling Chen quickly sucked in a breath, trying to suppress this pressure, and looked up... above and to the left, a white figure had appeared there without him noticing. The person was wearing a moon-white dress, and a white fog floated around her, making it impossible to see her figure or appearance. When Ling Chen looked at her, he felt an indescribable ethereal feeling, causing his gaze to flicker. It was an incredibly mystical feeling, and when looking at her it made one feel like she was standing atop clouds, looking down on all beings, so high that she could not be touched.

Ling Chen deeply frowned... this power, aura, and moon-white dress... could she be...

When White Eagle and Black Demon saw the figure, they both

stared before revealing expressions of delirious joy. The Forgotten Emperor started to wail, “Lady Moon God Representative! You’ve finally come… please save the Forgotten City! Please save the Forgotten City!” The Forgotten Emperor then pointed at Ling Chen. “It’s him! It’s this mad player who brought disaster to the Forgotten City. The punishment he should receive should be the most severe punishment in the world… he should be imprisoned within the Lunar Sky Hell!”

Lady Moon God Representative? Ling Chen’s face fell, but there was no fear or panic on his face. He instead coldly laughed: The Forgotten God Representative really came?

“We pay our respects to Lady Moon God Representative. Please save the Forgotten City.” White Eagle and Black Demon also hurriedly bowed while earnestly shouting.

The scene of the Forgotten City being inundated with Undead while being razed was painful to look at. The Forgotten God Representative glanced at the city below, and her frown was soon filled with shock, “Phoenix God Heavenly Flames!”

The Phoenix Clan was unique to the Forgotten Continent, and as the Forgotten Continent’s Moon God Representative, how could the Forgotten God Representative not recognise the Phoenix God Heavenly Flames? However, the shock only lasted for a moment before disappearing, and she looked at Ling Chen as her voice filled with pressure entered his ears, “Otherworlder Ling Tian! Why have you committed such a crime?!”

“Why? You’re asking me?” Ling Chen did not hesitate to meet the Forgotten God Representative’s gaze. After adjusting, the pressure from the Forgotten God Representative was not as bad anymore. Ling Chen pointed at the Forgotten Emperor. “Why don’t you ask him why? Everything I did today was because they forced me! Everything I did today was retribution for their actions… Forgotten God Representative, I instead want to ask you something…”

Ling Chen's voice became low as a savage aura erupted from him, "When Ling Tian City was being attacked by them, as the Moon God Representative who protects peace and order in the Forgotten Continent, where were you? Why didn't you appear like this to stop them?"

"I only just found out about that," The Forgotten God Representative calmly replied. "It was indeed the Forgotten City that was in the wrong, but that doesn't give you an excuse to commit such a great atrocity! Moreover, in that battle, Ling Tian City only lost 19 Fairies, and the damage to the city was limited, while the Forgotten City lost 100,000 soldiers. In terms of loss, the Forgotten City's loss was much greater than Ling Tian City's."

"Pshaw!" Ling Chen was furious and roared back, "What sort of bullshit logic is that? Ling Tian City didn't offend anyone – it was just that this Old Forgotten Dog was envious of Ling Tian City's development, and he wanted to destroy Ling Tian City! No matter how many of their people died, it's all on their heads! However, all of Ling Tian City's Fairies died as innocent people! Let alone those 19 Fairies, if even 1 of them died, using the entire Forgotten City as atonement is just!"

Ling Chen's words were incredibly extreme. It was as if the safety of his people was more important than anything else, and even if the other side lost 100,000 people, it had nothing to do with him. The Forgotten God Representative frowned, and the Forgotten Emperor loudly shouted, "Lady Moon God Representative, don't waste words with him; he's just a madman, a demon! There's no way to forgive his crimes. Attacking Ling Tian City was indeed our fault and I will receive punishment for that, but... please, Lady Moon God Representative, get rid of this evil demon and save the Forgotten City..."

Ling Chen's words undoubtedly also infuriated the Forgotten God Representative. She looked at Ling Chen, her voice icy cold, "Even if you have all the reasons in the world, that doesn't justify

this great crime! Immediately stop! Get rid of these Undead and extinguish the fire, and you'll have a chance to repent. Otherwise..."

"Otherwise what?" Ling Chen cut her off without a trace of fear on his face, only a cold smile. "You want to save the Forgotten City? Do it then! You're a high and mighty Moon God Representative, the protector of the Forgotten City, while I'm just a tiny player who you don't even put in your eyes. Don't tell me that a majestic Moon God Representative can't resolve a problem caused by a tiny player like me. Do you need me to resolve it?"

"You..." The Forgotten God Representative became even more furious. If she could resolve the disaster, she would have done it already. However, with more than 1 million Lord grade Undead and the fact that they had spread to every corner of the city, even she could not kill them all before the Forgotten City was destroyed. Furthermore, the fire burning the Forgotten City was Phoenix God Heavenly Flames, and even her Moon God power was unable to easily extinguish it... only the Moon God Clan's 3 Moon Goddesses could do such a thing.

"Ling Tian!" This time, the calm Forgotten God Representative was completely enraged. She believed what the Forgotten Emperor had said about this player who had caused this disaster being a madman and a demon. She realised that talking to him was simply wasting time – facing such a person, all she had to do was bring judgment instead of merely wasting words.

A white light flashed, and a Moon God Staff appeared in front of the Forgotten God Representative's body. Moon God power began to surge within her rage. "You brought disaster to the Forgotten City, destroyed countless residents' homes, and caused the deaths of countless innocents. You showed no remorse or willingness to atone for your crimes. Even the worst punishments in the world are not sufficient!

"Although you're a player and can't truly die in this world, the

Moon God Clan has cruel punishments for evildoers like you! Your crimes will never appear in the Mystic Moon world again; I will seal you in the Lunar Sky Hell, and you will never step into the Forgotten Continent again!”

When the Forgotten Emperor heard the Forgotten God Representatives words, a look of glee appeared on his face, and his gaze towards Ling Chen became one full of pity and mockery. The Lunar Sky Hell was a forbidden area where the worst criminals were held, and it was said to be the most terrifying place in the continent. Once one entered, one would never see the light of day again. There were all sorts of demons, evil spirits, and evildoers there, and entering was like going into a terrifying hell. Those who entered would spend every day in darkness and fear until the day they died.

“Oh? Is that so?” Ling Chen did not reveal any fear that the Forgotten Emperor had hoped to see. Ling Chen’s eyes narrowed as he looked at the Forgotten God Representative, and a circle of crimson fire appeared around his body. The layer of fire was very thin, but it gave off an astonishing temperature to the point that the heatwaves made it so that White Eagle and Black Demon could not breathe, making them retreat with the Forgotten Emperor. The Forgotten God Representative frowned, and he said in deep shock, “So it really was the Phoenix God Heavenly Flames! Where did you get the fallen Phoenix Royal Clan’s fire?”

Ling Chen completely ignored her question and slowly spread out his arms as he coldly laughed, “You want to seal me into the Lunar Sky Hell, right? I want to see if you’ll seal me first or if my Phoenix God Heavenly Flames will turn this Forgotten City into dust! Give it a go!”

The Forgotten God Representative’s aura violently trembled, and the Forgotten Emperor’s face fell. At that moment, a furious voice boomed out, “Which bastard wants to send my son-in-law to the Lunar Sky Hell?!”

The voice was like a peal of thunder, causing the minds of everyone who heard it to feel dizzy, and they almost fell from the sky. The voice caused everyone's ears to buzz, and at that moment, the space twisted as a dense black light appeared, which contained a powerfully-built body. The figure was tall, had muscular limbs, and wore a black robe. The person's skin was ashen-grey, and he had a savage-looking face akin to that of a beast's. His rage-filled eyes were completely black without any white to be seen. What was the most eye-catching was the black crescent moon mark on his forehead, which gave off a dark light.

This person's appearance caused the Forgotten God Representative to deeply frown and look quite confused. However, when she saw the black crescent moon on his forehead, her face fell and she cried out, "Underworld... King!!"

Chapter 692 - Underworld God Cannon

When the Underworld King appeared, his aura felt as if it could cover the sky and hide the sun, completely suppressing the Forgotten God Representative's aura as if it was not there. The Forgotten Emperor, White Eagle, and Black Demon were almost knocked out of the sky by the amount of power he radiated. In their shock, when they heard the Forgotten God Representative cry out 'Underworld King', their jaws almost hit the ground.

Underworld King?! This person was the Underworld King?

What sort of character was the Underworld King? He was one of the peak existences in the Mystic Moon world, and no matter if it were his power or status, he stood on the same level as the Moon God Clan's 3 Moon Goddesses! In fact, even the peerless Moon Goddesses were slightly inferior to him. In front of him, the emperor of the Forgotten Continent's human world was worth less than a fart.

To a human like the Forgotten Emperor, being able to see a Moon God Representative with his own eyes was the greatest blessing on his life, and seeing an existence on the level of the 3 Moon Goddesses like the Underworld King was something that he didn't even dare to think about. However, since the words 'Underworld King' had come from the Forgotten God Representative's mouth, how could she be wrong? Furthermore, the Underworld King's aura felt as if it could shake the heavens and the earth, and it was many times more powerful than the Forgotten God Representative's. The Forgotten Emperor stared at the legendary Underworld King with respect and fear, and he did not dare to even breathe loudly, much less speak. He couldn't understand why this super-legendary figure had come to the tiny Forgotten City, and he seemed to be furious... also, what did he mean by 'son-in-law'?

Ling Chen's mouth widened, staring at the Underworld King's

giant frame... holy crap, why did his father-in-law come all the way here? Something big was going to happen!

"That's right, your elder's the Underworld King!" Hearing the Forgotten God Representative call out his name, the Underworld King glared at her as he said, "From how this little girl is dressed, she is from that Moon God Clan, right?"

There were very few people in the Mystic Moon world who would dare to call a Moon God Representative 'little girl' and casually speak about 'that Moon God Clan'. In front of him, the Moon God Representative had no choice but to retract her aura and speak levelly, "Lord Underworld King's fame precedes him. It is my honour to see you today. I wonder why Underworld King has come here?"

"What the hell do you think?! This Underworld King's son-in-law's going to bullied, so how could I not come?!" The Underworld King said furiously. His eyes suddenly widened as he roared at the Forgotten God Representative, "Since you're from the Moon God Clan, the person who was saying that they wanted to seal this Underworld King's son-in-law into the Lunar Sky Hell was you?!"

"Your... son-in-law?" The Forgotten God Representative stared in surprise for a moment before looking over at Ling Chen's body, and her eyebrows jumped... could the 'son-in-law' he be referring to... no! Absolutely not! How could a player from another world be the Underworld King's son-in-law? Moreover, this player hadn't even been in the Mystic Moon for a year; how was this possible?

The Underworld King turned and patted Ling Chen's shoulder as he raised his chest and said loudly, "Son-in-law! Was it this girly who said she wanted to throw you into the Lunar Sky Hell? Don't be scared to speak; I'll give you the justice you deserve! Goddammit, this Underworld King has stayed peaceful for just a few thousand years, and a tiny little Moon God Representative wants to bully this elder's son-in-law? Preposterous! Even if the Moon God Clan's 3 women came, this elder is going to get justice

for you!”

When the Underworld King addressed Ling Chen as ‘son-in-law’, the Forgotten Emperor’s body trembled and his face instantly went pale. If it wasn’t for White Eagle and Black Demon supporting him, he would have fallen to the ground. Now, the Forgotten Emperor almost felt like crying… what the hell, Ling Tian? If you had such a powerful backer like the Underworld King, why didn’t you get him to come out earlier? If I knew that you were the Underworld King’s son-in-law, even if someone begged me to offend Ling Tian City, I wouldn’t have done it… just what the hell’s going on?!

The Forgotten Emperor’s intestines were green with regret, and looking down at how pitiful the Forgotten City looked, he wanted to cry and wail. Before, when the Moon God Representative had appeared, he had been incredibly pleased, and he had thought not only would the city be saved, but also Ling Tian would receive an extremely heavy punishment. Who would have thought that although he had the Forgotten God Representative as a powerful backer, Ling Tian had the Underworld King. In front of the Underworld King, the powerful Moon God Representative was simply dust. Even the Moon God Clan wouldn’t offend the Underworld over the Forgotten City.

If there was a pill that could turn back time, even if he had to sell all of his assets, the Forgotten Emperor would buy one.

“… He’s a player from another world; how can he be your son-in-law? Could it be that you’ve… got the wrong person?” The Forgotten God Representative asked in shock. She simply couldn’t accept that a player was the Underworld King’s son-in-law. Moreover, it seemed like the Underworld King greatly favoured this son-in-law of his, and he had come out for him… from her memories, the Underworld King had not come to the Forgotten Continent in many millennia.

“Wrong person? Bullshit! Do you think your elder is an idiot? Do you really think I would be mistaken about my son-in-law?” The

Underworld King roared. His loud voice, mixed with his aura, threatened to collapse the space around him.

The Forgotten God Representative kept herself calm and spoke as steadily as she could, “I don’t dare to doubt the Underworld King’s words. However, you should know that your son-in-law brought 1 million Undead into the Forgotten City and used Phoenix God Heavenly Flames to burn the entire city, bringing a massive disaster to the Forgotten City…”

“You want to send this Underworld King’s son-in-law to the Lunar Sky Hell over this little city? What gall!” His booming and coarse voice cut off the Forgotten God Representative. The Underworld King looked absolutely furious, and he waved his right hand. A black light flashed, and a jet-black item that was as tall as his body appeared in front of him. It was a large cannon without a stand, and the Underworld King held the ordinary-looking cannon under his arms, pointing it towards the Forgotten City. “Do you believe that your elder won’t blast this goddamn city to kingdom come right here and now? I dare you to seal me into the Lunar Sky Hell!!”

When this jet-black cannon appeared, the Forgotten Emperor, White Eagle, and Black Demon did not feel much, but the Forgotten God Representative’s expression suddenly changed. Shock suddenly appeared on her calm face, and even her voice started to tremble, “U-Underworld God Cannon!!”

Hearing the words ‘Underworld God Cannon’, the Forgotten Emperor, White Eagle, and Black Demon’s hearts trembled, and their bodies weakened, almost pissing themselves on the spot.

Very few humans in the Forgotten Continent knew of the name ‘Underworld God Cannon’, but as the emperor and peak level experts of the Forgotten Continent, the Forgotten Emperor, White Eagle, and Black Demon clearly knew what it was. It was a forbidden weapon that was called the ‘God-killing Cannon’, and it was publicly recognised to be the weapon with the most powerful

destructive abilities. A single blast from the cannon was enough to destroy the heavens and annihilate the earth, and it could turn a mountain into flatlands. Even True Gods would fear such a cannon. If this cannon blasted the Forgotten City, the entire Forgotten City would disappear with not even a speck of dust left.

The Underworld was much weaker than the Moon God Clan, but the Moon God Clan had never dared to offend the Underworld precisely because of this terrifying Underworld God Cannon. If the Underworld was truly angered and blasted the Underworld God Cannon towards where the Moon God Clan was, the entire Moon God Clan would suffer a calamity.

Now, not only had the Underworld King taken out the ultimate weapon that could strike fear into True Gods, but he had also pointed it towards the Forgotten City. Let alone the Forgotten Emperor, even the Forgotten God Representative's face went pale, and she subconsciously retreated... she could barely maintain her composure before the Underworld King, but she couldn't help but fear the Underworld God Cannon in his hands.

She had long since heard that the Underworld King was extremely short-tempered, but she didn't know that it was to this degree. Not only had he appeared for this son-in-law of his, he had even taken out the Underworld God Cannon!! A madman!! An absolute madman!! Both of these people were madmen!!

"Please calm down, Underworld King. We did not want to offend your family, nor did we want to make you angry." Facing the Underworld God Cannon, the Forgotten God Representative couldn't help but back down, and she spoke in a pleading tone, "Please put away the Underworld God Cannon... this matter... I'll naturally give you a satisfactory outcome."

"That's right, that's right. Father-in-law, you're too emotional. We're all cultured people here, and we should talk things out. Using violence and brute strength can't solve problems!"

Ling Chen spoke out at an ‘opportune’ moment, and he said those words with a face full of compassion. At the same time, his eyes were fixed on the Underworld God Cannon... this was the legendary Underworld God Cannon? Its appearance simply didn’t do its reputation justice! This incredibly lacklustre and plain exterior was something that even Ling Chen could create.

You’re a man of culture? You talk things out? Using violence and brute strength can’t solve problems? Not just the Forgotten Emperor but even the Forgotten God Representative felt like throwing dog crap onto Ling Chen’s face. Who was it that just summoned 1 million Undead to cause chaos within the Forgotten City? Who had just burned the Forgotten City down with Phoenix God Heavenly Flames? How had said that they wanted the entire Forgotten City to be destroyed as atonement for the fallen Fairies? How thick did his face have to be to say such words?!

In actuality, Ling Chen had never planned to actually destroy the Forgotten City. Otherwise, he wouldn’t have only sent 1.2 million players from Ling Tian City, and he wouldn’t have used the Phoenix God Heavenly Flames so sparingly. If he wanted to destroy the entire city, all he had to do was ask Xi Ling to use [Dazzling Red Lotus], [World Burning Heavenly Flames], and [Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns], and he would have been able to accomplish that easily. However, in the end, there were simply too many innocent people within the Forgotten City, and he didn’t want himself and Xi Ling to commit such a grave crime. If it was just himself, he wouldn’t have minded if he just destroyed the Forgotten City. However, there was also Ling Tian City and Ling Tian City’s countless players and NPCs. If he really destroyed the Forgotten City, the Moon God Clan would be enraged, and they might retaliate against Ling Tian City.

Now that the Underworld King had appeared, Ling Tian couldn’t allow himself to destroy the Forgotten City either. That would create great enmity between the Moon God Clan and the

Underworld, and it might even result in a large war. Angering the Moon God Clan simply wasn't a wise decision.

However, not only had the Underworld King appeared, he had even taken out the Underworld God Cannon to scare the Moon God Representative. As the Underworld King, he naturally knew what the potential consequences could be. However, since he had done this, Ling Chen felt incredibly touched, moving him to call the Underworld King 'father-in-law' willingly... after all, it didn't cost him anything to address the Underworld King as such.

The words 'father-in-law' made the Underworld King feel as if a flower had blossomed within his heart, and his rage was greatly quelled. He straightened his back and coarsely roared, "Then son-in-law, what do you say we should do? We can't just let them bully you for nothing."

You're being bullied? This time, the Forgotten Emperor really was about to burst into tears... just who was bullying who? The Forgotten City was in ruins, yet your son-in-law was perfectly unharmed!!

Chapter 693 - 3 Conditions

Ling Chen walked forwards and said to the Forgotten Emperor with a dark expression, “Because of your own selfish desires, you accused Ling Tian City of crimes and led an army to attack Ling Tian City. You caused great damage to Ling Tian City and killed 19 innocent Fairies... do you admit your guilt?”

Just as Ling Chen stopped talking, the Underworld King’s ferocious eyes glared at the Forgotten Emperor. His gaze caused the human with the highest authority in the Forgotten Continent to tremble, and he almost fell down. The Forgotten Emperor rapidly nodded and said, “I do... I do...”

Under the Underworld King’s gaze, even if those things weren’t true, he’d still admit them. Otherwise, the Underworld King might really just fire that cannon. With the Underworld King’s power, toying with the Forgotten Emperor would be like toying with an ant.

“Repaying one’s debts is a natural law of the heavens. Since you attacked Ling Tian City out of your own selfish desires and killed Ling Tian City’s people, as the Vice-Lord of Ling Tian City, was I in the right for taking revenge on the Forgotten City?” Ling Chen calmly asked with a piercing gaze.

“You were...” The Forgotten Emperor bitterly replied. Even if his courage was as big as the heavens, he wouldn’t dare to shake his head.

Ling Chen coldly smiled, “Then is the current state of the Forgotten City something that you deserve?”

“Yes...”

“And no matter if it were Ling Tian City or the Forgotten City’s losses and disasters, the root of it was you, the Forgotten Emperor, right?”

The Forgotten Emperor's face became incredibly pale, and he raised his head and shakily looked at the Forgotten God Representative and then the Underworld King. He lowered his head and spoke with a trembling voice, "Yes..."

"Since you've admitted it, then the resolution will be very simple," Ling Chen said as he lightly smirked. "Before, your attack on Ling Tian City that caused 19 Fairies to die should have resulted in your entire city dying with them. However, since the Forgotten God Representative has come out, how could I, a tiny player, not give her face..."

Ling Chen's attitude had been extreme from the beginning, and the Underworld King was incredibly domineering and aggressive. However, now, Ling Chen was spinning this whole thing as giving the Forgotten God Representative face, causing her expression to darken. Ling Chen looked at the Forgotten Emperor as he said, "If you want me to get rid of the 1 million Undead and Phoenix God Heavenly Flames, it's possible... but you need to agree to 3 conditions. Otherwise, the Undead and the fire will remain until the Forgotten City is destroyed!!"

"W-What are they?" By now, the Forgotten Emperor was no longer able to rely on the Forgotten God Representative. Facing the Underworld King, the Forgotten God Representative did not have the right to even attack the Underworld King, let alone bargain with him – only the 3 Moon Goddesses could do such a thing. As such, he could only act obediently.

"First of all, I want you to publicly apologise to Ling Tian City in front of the entire Forgotten Continent and go to Ling Tian City to pay your respects to the 19 fallen Fairies!" Thinking back to the sorrow and hurt that the families of the 19 Fairies had experienced, Ling Chen gnashed his teeth.

"Publicly? Impossible! I'm the Emperor of the Forgotten Continent. Asking me to publicly apologise to a player's city... how will I maintain my dignity... this is something that the entire

Forgotten Continent will not be able to accept!" Hearing Ling Chen's first condition, the Forgotten Emperor shouted out. Power was of utmost importance in the Forgotten Continent, and players were much weaker than the Forgotten City's residents. As such, asking the high and mighty Forgotten Emperor to apologise to a player's city publicly was something that he simply could not accept! If he really did this, he would lose all face as the emperor – it would be admitting to the whole world his wrongs, and his reputation would be greatly tarnished among both residents of the Forgotten Continent and players.

"Scum! My son-in-law's giving you an opportunity to repent, yet you're refusing to agree! You think that your elder won't blow up your little city? Dignity? Pshaw! Let's see where your dignity is going to be after I've blown up your city!" Before Ling Chen could reply, the Underworld King had already started to roar. When the Underworld God Cannon slightly shook, the Forgotten Emperor, White Eagle, and Black Demon all fell to their knees.

The Forgotten God Representative frowned – apologising after committing a wrong wasn't anything big, and it was something that should be done anyways. However, the Forgotten Emperor was the emperor of the Forgotten Continent's humans, and making a public apology was not the same thing. However, facing the Underworld King's threats, the Forgotten God Representative had no other choice but to ask, "Ling Tian, what are your other 2 conditions?"

The Forgotten God Representative's words evidently signified that if the other conditions were not too excessive, the first one would also be agreed to. Her decision naturally represented the Forgotten Emperor. Ling Chen did not waste any words and directly said, "The second condition is to compensate Ling Tian City for 3 times our losses! The costs of repairing the city, the physical resources lost, labour required, time lost, relocation of residents, resettling fees, transportation fees, the economic loss

from closing for 2 days, the damage to the Business Street, the damage to the class change system, the damage to the quest system, the damage to the residential system, the damage to the entertainment system, the damage to our expansion plans, and the loss of levels and equipment for defending... as well as the mental harm caused to the players and residents, especially the Fairies... Ling Tian City will give you a total figure within 5 days. Those who owe money must repay money, and you are to repay 3 times that amount, not a single copper less!"

The Forgotten Emperor's face became paler and paler, and he started to feel dizzy. He knew roughly how much Ling Tian City made every day, otherwise he wouldn't have gone to attack it out of envy. The amount of money lost from closing for a single day was an astronomical number, and that wasn't even including the money for all of the 'damage'... and it was 3 times that. After the final number was calculated, even the Royal City, which had existed for many millennia, would take a great hit.

The Forgotten God Representative's chest heaved as she gritted her teeth and said, "... What's the third condition?"

"The third condition is much simpler," Ling Chen turned his gaze to the Forgotten God Representative, his gaze quite piercing. "I don't want to see this sort of thing happen again, and I'm sure that you don't want to see the Forgotten City disappear from this world. I want the Forgotten Emperor and you, the Forgotten God Representative, to take a blood oath that you will never act against Ling Tian City!"

The third condition was the simplest but most important condition. His revenge this time was enough to scare the wits out of the Forgotten Emperor so that he would never dare to make trouble for Ling Tian City again. However, there was still the Forgotten God Representative. With the Underworld King present, the Forgotten God Representative could only keep calm, but it was possible that she would come for revenge in future. The

Underworld King belonged in the Underworld, and he couldn't always protect Ling Tian City. Moreover, Ling Chen was determined not to see the Fairies in pain again, so relying on the Underworld King and the Underworld God Cannon, he wanted both the Forgotten Emperor and Forgotten God Representative to make an unbreakable oath so that Ling Tian City could truly stand permanently in the Forgotten Continent.

"This is impossible!" The Forgotten God Representative refused, frowning as she said, "As the Forgotten Continent's Moon God Representative, I have the right and responsibility to protect the order in the Forgotten Continent and judge all evil! If I make such a promise, Ling Tian City will be outside my jurisdiction! If, one day, Ling Tian City decides to bring chaos upon the Forgotten Continent, will I have to just ignore it?"

"Haha, you're thinking too much," Ling Chen coldly laughed as he looked at the Forgotten God Representative. "Ling Tian City's people only want to live happily, and we will never act like certain people and attack others for no reason. What you're worried about will never happen... of course, being forced into action is a different matter. Nevertheless, I'll add a caveat to this: unless Ling Tian City commits an unforgiveable crime towards you, you are never to touch Ling Tian City!"

This time, the Forgotten God Representative did not refuse. Looking at the Underworld King beside Ling Chen, she simply could not find a reason to refuse. This was because of the Underworld King. Even if the Underworld committed some grave sin, let alone Ling Tian City, she would not necessarily go and bring judgment. The Forgotten God Representative frowned as she replied, "As long as Ling Tian City does no evil, there's no reason for me to act against them. A blood oath makes no difference to me."

Following this, she said calmly, "I, the Forgotten Continent's Moon God Representative hereby swear that unless the Ling Tian

City commits an unforgivably grave sin, I will never act against Ling Tian City! If I break this oath, I will be executed by the heavens."

The Forgotten Emperor also made a similar oath.

"In that case, you agree to all 3 conditions?" Ling Chen said after expressionlessly listening to their oaths.

"With the God-Killing Underworld God Cannon pointing towards the Forgotten City, do we have the right to refuse?" The Forgotten God Representative asked mockingly before looking towards the Forgotten City. "I hereby agree to all 3 of your conditions on behalf of the Forgotten City. Please draw back your Undead army and Phoenix God Heavenly Flames."

Ling Chen secretly breathed out in relief. The Underworld King's appearance had made everything go much more smoothly. Otherwise, even if they had gotten to the same conclusion, it would have taken much more effort and danger. After all, the Fire God's Bulwark and Xi Ling's flames could never compare to the Underworld King and his Underworld God Canon. As such, the Forgotten God Representative and Forgotten Emperor readily agreed to the 3 conditions.

Under Ling Chen's command, Leng'Er silently appeared. The black crescent moon on her forehead flashed, and all of the Undead in the city stood still before vanishing into black smoke. The Phoenix God Heavenly Flames were also extinguished by Xi Ling. With her Phoenix Royal Clan's bloodline, controlling the Phoenix God Heavenly Flames was incredibly easy.

"Aiyaya, this supporter's quite incredible." The woman with red hair, who had been watching on this entire time, tapped her chin, a look of wonder on her face. "Son-in-law... father-in-law... what an interesting way of addressing each other."

"The Underworld King of the East is called Ming Sa, and he is the only Saint Destroyer grade existence apart from the 3 Moon

Goddesses. He is just as famed as big sis's adoptive father, the Sea Emperor. However, Lord Sea Emperor taking big sis to be his adoptive daughter is not surprising at all, while this legendary Underworld King called him his son-in-law... that's simply too incomprehensible. Could it be that the Underworld King married his daughter... to a player? What's more, the Underworld King must be tens of thousands of years old, and his daughter must also be quite old. Who knows? She might be incredibly ugly and her body might be like a zombie's... ahh, so scary, how could he accept?" Yola said as she furiously shook her head.

"That's definitely not the case – that man avoids anything that isn't beautiful. Aiya, looks like I've got a headache now. Before, I thought that I could use my adoptive father to scare him, but I never thought that he would instead give me a surprise first. I feel terrible now," the woman with red hair said sorrowfully.

Chapter 694 - Adam and Eve (1)

“Hmph, who would have thought that after so many years that the sex demon’s tastes wouldn’t have changed at all,” Yola said somewhat angrily. “But it looks like there’s no reason for us to act anymore. It also looks like your confidence has been crushed – his experiences were not at all inferior to yours.”

“That’s right, so now I’m not feeling very well. You should know that if I can’t suppress him this time, your beautiful big sis is going to becoming his little slave,” the woman with red hair said depressingly.

“Then what are you preparing to do? Same thing as last time?”

The woman with red hair swept back her hair that had been blown around by the wind behind her ear before raising her right hand, looking at the 3 glowing rings as she said, “Evidently, that’s not possible because he has already found me. Have you not noticed that he has glanced towards where we are 4 times in the past minute?”

Yola: “……”

The Undead army was gone and the Phoenix God Heavenly Flames had been extinguished, but the Forgotten City was still in complete disorder. Very few residents had been hurt, but the city guards had suffered heavy casualties. More than half of the palace had been razed, and nearly one-third of the whole city had been destroyed, permeating a burning smell throughout the city. The state of the Forgotten City was extremely miserable, but fortunately, the foundations of the city had not been destroyed. After everything had been settled, it was possible for the city to recover, but the compensation that was to be paid to Ling Tian City would definitely deal a great blow. However, this was the price that they had to pay for their actions, and they could not blame anyone for it.

Logically speaking, no matter what excuse one had, destroying the human world's Royal City to such an extent was an unforgiveable crime, and locking that person up in the Lunar Sky Hell for eternity would not be overdoing it at all. However, because of the Underworld King's protection, Ling Chen was completely fine, and he even had imposed 3 conditions on the Forgotten City. Right now, the Forgotten Emperor felt as if he had eaten 30 piles of hot dung.

"Forgotten Emperor, I'm sure that you're clearer than anyone on how this ordeal started. What goes around comes around; what the Forgotten City has experienced cannot be blamed on anyone but you, resulting in countless innocents being harmed. I should punish you, but since the Forgotten City relies on you, I'll give you a chance to repent. If anything like this happens again, there will be no mercy!" After speaking severely to the Forgotten Emperor, the Forgotten God Representative calmly looked at Ling Chen and left without saying any goodbyes. She had originally come to save the Forgotten City, but she had run into the Underworld King and his Underworld God Cannon. In the end, she had been forced into lowering her head and accepting Ling Tian City's terms, filling her with rage, making her to not want to stay any longer than necessary.

The Forgotten Emperor also left sullenly with the help of his 2 Mysterious God grade bodyguards. He now regretted all of his actions to the bone, and even if he had 100 times the courage, he would not dare to take even half a step towards Ling Tian City.

"I say, son-in-law, what the heck did you do? Just as I left the Underworld, I had to run into this crappy situation! Even the Moon God Clan's people were called! If I hadn't come in time, you would've been eaten by that little girl from the Moon God Clan!" The Underworld King put away the Underworld God Cannon that had scared the Forgotten God Representative so much as he spoke with his loud, coarse voice.

Ling Chen helplessly grimaced. “The situation’s just like what you heard. Ling Tian City was attacked for no reason by the Forgotten City, and I came here to teach them a lesson. Speaking of which, why are you here?”

“Didn’t you want to see our Underworld’s Underworld God Cannon? I came to give you the Underworld God Cannon! I thought you were at Ling Tian City, but I had to follow you to this goddamn place!” The Underworld King said angrily.

The Underworld King had indeed said that he would bring the Underworld God Cannon to Ling Tian City, and he had come unexpectedly quickly. Ling Chen thought for a moment before saying, “Underworld King, you know Ling Tian City’s whereabouts, so please take the Underworld God Cannon there and give it my Dwarf friends there. I’ll immediately let them know about you… I have some private matters that I need to attend to, so I can’t go back right now.”

“Private matters?” The Underworld King raised his eyebrows and lowered his voice, “Do you need my help?”

Ling Chen shook his head. “No, I’ll be able to settle it with a sentence.”

The Underworld King did not say anything else and nodded, “Alright, I’ll take the Underworld God Cannon to Ling Tian City right now, but I’ll only stay for a day at most. If those Dwarves can’t understand it within 1 day, they’ll have to rely on themselves. Take care… oh, and I’ll leave my daughter’s recovery of her body and soul to you; I’m desperate to hear her call me ‘father’ again, so make sure you keep working on that. Do your best, do your best!!”

Just as the Underworld King finished speaking, he disappeared in a dark light, leaving behind a frowning Ling Chen.

Ling Tian City’s people definitely knew about what had happened at the Forgotten City. Ling Chen told Yun Meng Xin about the Underworld King delivering the Underworld God

Cannon, and he ended the call before she could even reply. He raised his right wrist and looked at the Lunar Scourge. At that moment, the Lunar Scourge was flickering with a weak and strange light. Ling Chen frowned and activated [Broken Shadow], causing him and Snow Cherry to charge like a lightning bolt towards where the woman with red hair was. In his line of vision, a red figure grew larger and larger.

"Aiya, it's not like we'll run away; why are you coming so quickly?"

A voice filled with a slight teasing tone sounded in his ears, and the familiar sound caused Ling Chen's mind to tighten and his body to suddenly stop. At that moment, the red figure before him swayed, and an incredibly enchanting woman appeared before him. She was wearing a red dress, and her face slightly tilted back as she gently blinked with her upturned eyes. She lightly smiled at him with her luscious red lips, her star-like eyes rippling. Her face was so beautiful that it could steal one's soul, and adding on her slim figure but busty chest, anyone who saw her would feel their self-control slipping away. The most eye-catching thing was her long hair, which was the colour of bright flames. As it danced in the wind, it created a beautiful scene.

Ling Chen spaced out while looking at her, but it was not because of her looks – it was because he was deeply shocked at her appearance here, and he subconsciously said, "It's you!! Why are you here?"

"Why can't I be here?" The woman's lips lifted up into a smirk, giving off the airs of a goddess who had descended.

"Long time no see, Adam, do you remember me?" Yola appeared beside the woman with red hair. As she spoke, her cheeks were slightly puffed out, and she was filled with a trace of excitement but also anger. Although her words were quite calm, there was also sense of questioning. However, her gaze seemed to jump around, not daring to maintain eye contact with Ling Chen for a long time.

“You’re…” Looking at the beautiful golden-haired girl, Ling Chen stared before a cute, doll-like girl with golden hair appeared in his mind. “You’re… Yola?!”

“Hmph, it’s been 7 years already; I’m glad you still remember me.” Yola wrinkled her nose, but deep within her eyes, there was a sense of joy when she heard that he still remembered her.

“Little Yola, you’re the youngest out of all of us. Barring that, how could this perverted sex demon forget you after all he did to you when you were 10?” The woman with red hair said as she lightly smiled.

Ling Chen, who was just about to ask how the 2 of them had come here, almost fainted from what the woman with red hair said. Yola’s pink face became bright red, and she lowered her head and pulled on the woman with red hair’s sleeve, muttering, “Big sis…”

Ling Chen coughed awkwardly, “You still haven’t answered my question. Why are you here?!” After speaking, Ling Chen looked at Yola, who couldn’t raise her head, a bit guiltily. After separating for 6 and a half years, that young girl had become a beautiful young woman.

The woman with red hair played with her slim fingers as she coyly said, “Back then when we separated, we agreed that we should battle every 18 months; the first to win 2 rounds would be the victor. I won the first time, and you won the second time and even smacked me on the butt 3 times. When the time came for the third round, you never appeared… why do you think I came here?”

Ling Chen raised his eyebrows. What the woman had just mentioned was proposed by him. Back then, after Instructor Hell had ‘died’, Eve had wanted to go to the West, but he had wanted to go to the East. They both wished that the other person would go with them, but neither wanted to give in. After all, Ling Chen wanted to go back to find Xuanyuan Dia Wu, while Eve wanted to

find her biological mother. Deep down, they didn't want to be separated from each other and never meet again. As such, they proposed that they would battle once every 18 months. Whoever lost would have to unconditionally follow the other person, and the winner would be the dominant one with regard to a certain thing...

They had chosen to have their battles in the virtual world. In the first battle, she had attained victory through a slight advantage. In the second battle, Ling Chen had narrowly won, and he had been seen by Yun Feng. When the time for the third battle came, he was unable to make it to the battle because that was when Shui Ruo had contracted Isrock Disease.

"You came to fight and settle that?"

"That's only the first reason," The woman with red hair said as her eyes narrowed.

"Then what's the second reason?" Ling Chen asked as he looked at her. The woman in front of him was exceptionally beautiful, and any man who saw her would be unable to prevent themselves from drooling. However, Ling Chen knew just how terrifying of a woman was underneath the beauty. Ling Chen only feared 3 people in the whole world: one was Instructor Hell, one was the missing Mad Scientist, and the other was this bewitching woman with red hair in front of him.

"Of course it's to help little Yola settle her heart. She has followed me for all of these years, but she talks about you everyday at least 30 times. Oh, my poor ears!" The woman with red hair made a gesture of helplessness.

"Big sis!" Yola suddenly cried out, and the redness extended to her neck, "I didn't! I didn't! It was you who wanted to bring me!!"

"... Is there a third reason?"

"There wasn't a third reason before, but now there is." The

woman with red hair smiled. “The woman opposite you in white was the Forgotten Continent’s Moon God Representative, right? She already discovered that the Lunar Scourge is on you; things are going to get quite unpleasant.”

“What?” Ling Chen felt quite surprised, and he stared at the woman with red hair. “How do you know?” He paused and then asked, “How do you know about the Lunar Scourge?”

Chapter 695 - Adam and Eve (2)

“Because of this.” The woman with red hair opened her right hand, revealing the 3 different-coloured rings to Ling Chen. “You noticed me just then because of the Lunar Scourge’s reaction, right? When I received this, I also heard about the Lunar Scourge in the East because the Lunar Scourge is the only item that can stand on the same level as this. When I came here, it gave off a special reaction, which told me that the legendary Lunar Scourge was actually on you.”

The woman with red hair flipped her palm over, smiling as she said, “The Lachesis of the West and the Lunar Scourge of the East; one is on me and the other is on you. What a miraculous coincidence.”

“Lache…sis?” Ling Chen looked at the 3 different-coloured rings, thinking of something.

“Oh?” The woman in red raised an eyebrow. “Looks like you also know about it.”

“No, no,” Ling Chen shook his head, his expression quite strange. “I just coincidentally heard this name before, but I didn’t know what it actually was. Only today did I learn about it… mm, something on the same level as the Lunar Scourge must be very powerful, right?”

When the Lunar Scourge had produced that reaction, Ling Chen had felt quite shocked. This was because the reaction from the Lunar Scourge told him that this was a power that could stand on equal ground with it and even threaten it. Ling Chen knew more clearly than anyone how powerful the Lunar Scourge was, and Qi Yue had told him before that the Lunar Scourge was the evilest item in the Mystic Moon world. There was nothing else that could surpass it. As such, Ling Chen had been quite surprised when it had produced such a reaction.

“Of course it’s powerful!” Yola took the initiative to reply. “Before, if it wasn’t for big sis using Lachesis’ power to freeze time and affect space, your friends would have all died, and more than half of Ling Tian City would have been destroyed. Plus, because big sis overused the Lachesis’ power, she was quite exhausted for a while.”

Freeze time… affect space… Ling Chen almost couldn’t believe his ears, and he looked at the woman with red hair in shock.

The woman with red hair lightly rolled her eyes at Yola and said helplessly, “Bad Yola, why are you so eager to tell him about my trump card?”

“I-I’m not…” the golden-haired girl replied in a small voice.

Freeze time and affect space… just that general description sounded incredibly heaven-defying. Affecting space was alright, but freezing time… an ability to control time only existed in stories, and it was simply impossible! Could the ‘Lachesis’ item in her hands really affect time? If that was true, then that would simply be tooooooo scary! It would simply be incomprehensible.

As he thought about that, Ling Chen silently touched the ring on the index finger of his right hand. The ring was called [Lachesis Tear], and its effects were to nullify the negative effects from the [Lachesis]. Of course, that wasn’t the main point.

Ling Chen did not continue to ask about the Lachesis and instead frowned as he said, “You said that the Forgotten God Representative found out that the Lunar Scourge is on me?”

“That’s right.” The woman with red hair slightly smiled. “I have a little fellow who has very powerful detection abilities with respect to people’s minds and hearts. It was her who told me this. Her name is Mo’Er, but she doesn’t seem to be very interested in you, and she doesn’t want to come and see you. Moreover, I think many things support this claim: don’t you think that the Forgotten God Representative left a bit too quickly? After all, this is the

Forgotten Continent's Royal City, and after being damaged so badly, as the Moon God Representative, she should have stayed and used her power to help rebuild it. However, she chose to quickly leave – this means that there's something more important than repairing the Forgotten City.

"Furthermore, she gave in too easily. Even against the Underworld King, she's still a Moon God Representative that represents the entire continent, and she has the Moon God Clan behind her. Even if she didn't dare to offend the Underworld King, she shouldn't have given in so easily. There's only one explanation for this, which is that she had something more important that she wanted to do and had to end what was tying her up as quickly as possible.

"As for how she discovered the Lunar Scourge, that's also quite simple. The Lunar Scourge has always been in the Forgotten Continent. Even if other Moon God Representative didn't know about it, as the Forgotten Continent's Moon God Representative, even if she didn't personally experience the Shura's Devastation, how could she not know about such a terrifying thing? Of course she has something that can detect the Lunar Scourge in order to prevent the Lunar Scourge from reappearing."

Ling Chen began to frown deeper and deeper.

"According to my understanding of the Lunar Scourge, it's something that the Moon God Clan must destroy. If the Moon God Clan knows that you possess the Lunar Scourge, you'll definitely be hunted by them at all costs." The woman with red hair lightly smiled with a hint of schadenfreude.

Thinking back to the Forgotten God Representative's reaction, it was just as the woman with red hair had said. He had thought that the Forgotten God Representative had given in so easily because of the Underworld King and his Underworld God Cannon, but after thinking about it carefully, even if she was facing the Underworld King and his Underworld God Cannon, she still should have

maintained her pride and dignity as a Moon God Representative.

“I can immediately take you to where she is right now. Just then, I used Lachesis’ power to secretly leave a tracking ability on her. Do you need my help?” The woman with red hair asked as she grinned.

“Yes!” Ling Chen raised his head and said without hesitation.

“The whole world knows that you took the East Ocean Continent’s Moon God Representative as your mount, what great prestige. I’m sure that you’ll also be able to deal with that Forgotten God Representative just as easily.” The woman with red hair lifted her hand, and the Lachesis shone with light as an energy that could disrupt space started to gather.

“You think too highly of me. I was only able to subdue the Cherry Blossom God Representative because she was attacked by the Evil Black Dragon after repairing the Sunrise City’s City Lifeline and was almost completely exhausted, which allowed me to get a bargain. If I face off against her directly, I’m definitely not a match for the Forgotten God Representative… however, Eve, with you, I’ll have over 90% chance in taking down the Forgotten God Representative directly.” A nostalgic look appeared on Ling Chen’s face. “It’s been many years since we last worked together.”

“I’d prefer it if you’d call me ‘Fey’. Aiya, working together with you really isn’t very pleasant because a chauvinist like you always blocks knives for me,” the woman with red hair said leisurely. “It’s fine if you want me to help you deal with the Forgotten God Representative, but you have to agree to 2 of my conditions.”

“What are they…”

“Number 1, in the future, you can only call me Fey, not Eve! You should know that I don’t like the name ‘Eve’, just like how you don’t like the name ‘Adam’. There aren’t any good memories behind those 2 names.”

"....."

"Number 2, after dealing with the Forgotten God Representative, we'll have our final match!" The woman with red hair's gaze became sharp, and her battle intent filled the air.

Ling Chen did not hesitate and nodded. "Very well!"

"Okay!" The woman with red hair happily smiled. "Alright, tell me about your plan to deal with her then."

"Can your Lachesis really freeze time?" Ling Chen directly asked.

"Of course. However, the time and range are limited, and I don't think that it'll be enough for us to kill her," Eve leisurely replied.

"That's good enough!" Ling Chen confidently replied. "If you can do it, just make her stay still. Leave the rest to me."

Eve glance at him. "How are you so confident? I'm getting excited about this now. Alright, let's go."

She held Yola's hand with one hand and Ling Chen's with the other. As the Lachesis' light flashed, the 3 of them disappeared from where they had been.

At this moment, the Forgotten God Representative was feeling incredibly impatient.

A month ago, she had been summoned by the Goddess Freedom. After returning to the Moon God Palace, the Goddess Freedom had told her that it was possible that the Lunar Scourge had attached to a human and returned again. She was told to be attentive, and she was given a crescent moon-shaped object. When the item trembled, it meant that the Lunar Scourge was nearby.

The Lunar Scourge had been destroyed 10,000 years ago, but the fear of it had never disappeared from the Moon God Clan. What the Forgotten God Representative had never expected was that a month later, she suddenly felt the crescent moon-shaped object tremble, and the origin of it came from Ling Tian. However, by

then, the Underworld King had already appeared with the terrifying Underworld God Cannon. As such, she couldn't just cry out, "Lunar Scourge!"

The Lunar Scourge was the only explanation for a player being strong enough to suppress a Royal City. However, with the Underworld King's protection, the Forgotten God Representative was unable to do anything against him. What she needed to do was report this to the 3 Moon Goddesses! She could predict that the news that the Lunar Scourge had reappeared would cause massive waves, and the 3 Moon Goddesses would personally move out to destroy it again and kill Ling Chen.

As she was travelling as quickly as possible, a light flashed before her and 3 people appeared in front of her. The Forgotten God Representative stopped moving, and by the time she saw the 3 figures, she deeply frowned.

"Ling Tian, why are you here?" She asked Ling Chen in a strict voice.

"Of course it's to come and find you. Seeing how hurried you are, are you preparing to return to the Moon God Palace?" Ling Chen crossed his arms as he looked at her frivolously. Deep down, he was still marveling at the distance they had just crossed. Just as Eve had said, they had appeared before the Forgotten God Representative in just an instant – it was so shocking that it was simply unbelievable! With this sort of ability, if this woman wanted to find him in the future, he wouldn't be able to run or hide!

Seeing Ling Chen's stance, the Forgotten God Representative seemed to notice something, and her gaze darkened. "You want to stop me?"

"No, no! I'm not stopping you; I just want to make it so that you can never speak about what you know. If you tell the Moon God Clan, it'll be very bad for me."

“So it really was the Lunar Scourge!” Hearing Ling Chen admit it, there was a hint of excitement in the Forgotten God Representative’s voice. While shocked, she rejoiced that such a coincidence had occurred. If the Lunar Scourge produced another Shura, the consequences would be too terrifying! She glanced over the 3 people and coldly laughed, “Just you? You think that you can defeat me just because you have that evil item? What presumptuousness.”

“I don’t have any confidence in defeating you.” Ling Chen calmly smiled. “But I have a way to make you very obedient. Fey, seal her!”

Chapter 696 - Perfectly Resolved

Before Ling Chen had finished speaking, Fey's hand already begun glowing with a faint yellow light. The Forgotten God Representative, who was just about to say something, suddenly froze. Her expression, gaze, hair, and clothing all froze without any movement at all. As time passed, this strange scene persisted.

The entire world seemed to fall silent.

Fey retracted her hand and looked at Ling Chen expectantly. "Including where we are, time has stopped flowing in the surrounding 20 metres. Because of that, everything has fallen silent... apart from us of course. Our bodies, as well as the things on our bodies, still experience time the same. However, I can only maintain this for 15 seconds; I'm unable to use a Time Barrier with a large range that lasts for a long time for another month. So, what are you going to do?"

Ling Chen stared for a whole 3 seconds... the world had fallen silent, and apart from Fey's voice, there was not a single sound. The air had completely stopped moving, and in front of him, the Forgotten God Representative was not moving at all. Her eyes were like lifeless crystals and were just as bright and sharp as before, but they were not moving at all... time had really stopped. However, his thoughts and actions were unaffected.

What a terrifying ability!! Freezing things in place for 5 seconds was already incredibly overpowered, and this sort of time ability was even more terrifying! Ling Chen was certain that even the 3 Moon Goddesses didn't have the ability to affect time. Living beings could control elemental essences, affect space, and could even defeat Nature, but they could never resist time. Even the True Gods of the ancient times didn't have such a heaven-defying ability.

However, Eve, or Fey, had actually demonstrated such a

terrifying ability before him. What she had wasn't just an item left behind by gods but a forbidden item that shouldn't exist!

Ling Chen didn't dare to waste those 15 seconds. He looked at the motionless Forgotten God Representative, and as he met her eyes, his pupils dilated, and a strange light wildly erupted forth. A strange energy shot out from Ling Chen's eyes into the Forgotten God Representative's mind...

That's right! It was the Soulstealing Curse!!

The Forgotten God Representative had discovered that he had the Lunar Scourge, so one way to stop her from telling the Moon God Clan was by killing her... let alone the question of whether he and Fey would be able to do it, if they really killed her, it would enrage the Moon God Clan. After finding out that the deed had been committed by Fey and him, the consequences would be the same as the Lunar Scourge being exposed. Even the Underworld King would not be able to protect him.

In that case, the only other method was to make her completely obedient so that she would never tell the Moon God Clan. Only he could do such a thing.

This was the second time Ling Chen had used the Soulstealing Curse. He had used it the first time on the Cherry Blossom God Representative, resulting in receiving Snow Cherry as a pet. This second time, he would be using it on another Moon God Representative. However, the difference was that when he used it last time, the Cherry blossom God Representative was on the verge of death and had no way to resist, making it easy for Ling Chen to succeed. However, he was now facing the Forgotten God Representative in her peak state. The Soulstealing Curse's success rate was much lower than normal Feng Chen Curses, and facing the powerful Mysterious God grade Forgotten God Representative, the chances of it succeeding were less than 10%. Moreover, if it failed, he would receive harsh penalties. However, Ling Chen had done this not because he was gambling on that 10% but because he

was more than 90% sure of success!

This confidence came from Fey's ability to stop time!

Under normal conditions, the chances of Ling Chen's Feng Chen Curses working against the Forgotten God Representative would be incredibly low. Part of this was because the Forgotten God Representative's overall strength was much stronger than Ling Chen's overall strength, and she also had mental defenses as well. If she was frozen in place, although her body would be unable to move, her mind and mental defenses would still be active. However, freezing her in time was different – this froze everything!

After being frozen in time, no matter if it was the Forgotten God Representative's mind, soul, will, or strength, all of them were completely frozen, making her look like a corpse. There was not even a bit of power coming out from her, nor did she have any mental defenses. Ling Chen's Soulstealing Curse easily entered into her soul... of course, even in this state, Ling Chen's chances of success were not 100%.

If the other party's mental energy was not weaker than his by much, there was a large possibility of failure. An ant could not move a mountain, but a skinny person could push over a fat person if they were unprepared and unbalanced. Although the Forgotten God Representative's mental defenses were low, her mental energy could still resist Ling Chen's curse. If the one frozen was not the Forgotten God Representative but Fey, Ling Chen definitely wouldn't have dared to do such a thing because Fey's mental energy was about on par with his own. However, facing the Forgotten God Representative, Ling Chen felt much more confident. His overall strength was much inferior to hers, but in terms of mental strength, he wasn't inferior to anyone in the world!

Time continued to pass, and Ling Chen continued to stare at the Forgotten God Representative without looking away. The time

freeze finally ended, and the Forgotten God Representative, who didn't know that 15 seconds had just passed, widened her eyes as she looked into Ling Chen's eyes... she didn't know why Ling Chen's eyes were suddenly looking into hers, but she felt that there was a formless attractive force that prevented her from looking away or close her eyes.

Moreover, that feeling spread to the deepest parts of her soul, making her feel completely powerless to stop or resist it. Suddenly, the Forgotten God Representative felt her vision becoming hazy, and her body became light. She felt like her body did not exist anymore, and only Ling Chen's eyes remained within her mind. They seemed as if they contained a boundless universe, slowly drawing her in, causing her to tumble around within them...

"Ling Tian... Ling Tian..." The Forgotten God Representative's eyes lost their focus, and she muttered Ling Chen's name. As she muttered his name, Ling Chen's name and image were deeply imprinted onto her heart, as well as the relationship between them. All of the negative emotions she felt towards him silently disappeared completely, replaced with an overwhelming sense of closeness and worship. There was a sense that she relied on him so much that nothing could replace him, making his image much bigger than anyone else's. His everything was more important than her own life...

"Ding... Soulstealing Curse has succeeded! Target Forgotten God Representative's soul now has your mark imprinted on it, and she will view you as the most important person in her life and will be absolutely obedient."

"Ding... remaining uses: 4/6."

"Whew..." The moment that the system announcement sounded out, Ling Chen let out a breath. After fighting back against the slight dizziness in his head, he delightedly smiled. If it wasn't for Fey and Yola beside him, he would have leaned back and laughed heartily for 3 minutes.

Success! He had actually succeeded! He had obtained yet another Moon God Representative! From now onwards, this Forgotten God Representative, just like Snow Cherry, would view him as the most important thing in her life and would be completely obedient to him!

“What’s your name?” Ling Chen edged closer and asked the Forgotten God Representative.

Facing Ling Chen’s question, the Forgotten God Representative’s expression seemed a bit hazy before becoming one of nervousness and delight. Her voice also became incredibly soft as if she was shyly talking to a lover, “My real name’s Mu Cai Ling, but I haven’t used that name in a long time…”

“Are you going to tell the Moon God Clan’s people about me having the Lunar Scourge?” Ling Chen asked as he smiled.

A look of fear appeared on the Forgotten God Representative’s face, and she hurriedly shook her head. “No… that will cause you harm; I would never do such a thing… please forgive me for my earlier offences, I don’t know why I would do such an unforgiveable thing… in the future, I’ll definitely be obedient and do whatever you tell me to do, and I will do whatever you tell me to do… if you’re still angry, then… then punish me.”

The Forgotten God Representative lowered her head, and there was self-blame written all over her face. It seemed like she was unable to forgive herself for almost telling the Moon God Clan about Ling Chen having the Lunar Scourge.

Hearing the discussion between the 2 of them, Yola’s mouth fell wide open, unable to be closed, while Fey tapped her chin, falling completely silent.

“W-What did he do? How come she’s like this? Heavens…” Yola covered her mouth, her cute eyes wide open.

“It should be some sort of mind control,” Fey said with great

interest. She had also been greatly shocked.

Ling Chen and the Forgotten God Representative's mind-blowing conversation was still going on.

"Very good." Ling Chen nodded his head in approval. "In that case, do your best to make sure that the Moon God Clan never finds out that I have the Lunar Scourge, alright?"

A faint look of struggle flashed in the Forgotten God Representative's eyes. She was, after all, a Moon God Representative of the Moon God Clan, and betraying the Moon God Clan was one of the greatest crimes. However, now that Ling Chen's mark had been imprinted on her soul, she was completely subservient to Ling Chen, and this struggle only lasted for an instant before it was quashed. "Yes, I won't let you down."

"Also, try to take care of Ling Tian City as much as possible and favour them whenever you can. If Ling Tian City faces any danger, do your best to protect it," Ling Chen said.

"I definitely will," the Forgotten God Representative replied without a hint of hesitation.

Ling Chen nodded in satisfaction "In that case, go and do what you need to do... that's right, give me something that I can use to contact you and summon you with."

Hearing that Ling Chen was telling her to leave, a look of reluctance flashed in the Forgotten God Representative's eyes, but she did not refuse. Instead, she obediently took out a hairpin from within her hair and gently put it into Ling Chen's hands before turning around and leaving... she was so cute and obedient that one's heart couldn't help but ache.

Ling Chen turned and waved the hairpin at Fey and Yola, happily saying, "Perfectly resolved!"

Chapter 697 - Ridiculous Situation

“Mind control? How long does it last for?” Fey looked at him, a mysterious light in her eyes.

“I’m not really sure, but that’s pretty much it. As for the length…” There was a pleased smile on Ling Chen’s face. “If nothing goes wrong, it should last for a lifetime.”

“Ahh!” Yola cried out. “That skill’s so overpowered… how could there be such an overpowered skill; that’s a Moon God Representative… Adam, does that skill work on players?”

“Of course it does!” Ling Chen grinned.

Yola subconsciously shrank back, looking terrified. “Then will you do what you just did and secretly use that skill… on us?”

“Oh!” Ling Chen’s eyes lit up as he clapped his hands together. “Thanks, right! Little Yola, you’ve reminded me of something important. If I use this skill on little Yola, she’ll become as docile and meek as a little kitten and won’t be disobedient anymore!”

“Ahh!” Yola cried out, diving behind Fey like a little squirrel so that she was only revealing half her head. “I don’t want that! I don’t want that!”

“Alright Yola, he’s just scaring you.” Fey rolled her eyes at Ling Chen and coaxed the scared Yola out from behind her. “This sort of skill definitely has limitations, and it most likely has a low success rate. Otherwise, he wouldn’t have asked for my help. Since it affects one’s mind, it must rely on breaking past one’s mental defenses. With our powerful mental energy, using this skill on us will be almost impossible.”

After saying this, Fey turned her attention to something else, and her gaze became passionate. “Adam, I already helped you with what you wanted. Now, it’s time for us to settle things between us. This place is quite suitable.”

They were currently in the air above a desolate mountain range. There was no one in sight, and there wasn't even a bird or a beast. This meant that no matter what they did, no one would come to disturb them.

Ling Chen slightly smiled as he replied, "To be perfectly honest, I've been waiting to battle with you again because it's simply been too long since we last fought... since we've met, this has been the longest time."

"During those 3 years in heaven, everyone died except us. You looked at me from the boundary of death, and I looked at you from the boundary of death. At that time, we were already fighting; we were seeing who would last the longest and become the ultimate 'victor'. However, 3 years passed, and after being baptized in countless deaths, neither of us fell. For me, it was because of Dia Wu, and for you, it was because of your mother. They supported us while we also supported each other. During those 3 years in hell, we fought 10 or so times every day, and each fight left us with countless injuries to the point that we didn't even have the strength to stand up anymore..."

"Are you feeling nostalgic?" Fey gave a lightly smiled.

"Nostalgic? Not unless I'm mad!" The muscles on Ling Chen's face twisted as he gnashed his teeth. "You left thousands, if not tens of thousands, of wounds on my body during those years. And you think I'm feeling nostalgic?"

"As for you, you left 363 wounds on my body, not even 10% of what I gave you – oh, it's not even 1%. Any woman has that sort of advantage, and that's even more so for a peerless beauty like me. No man can bear to be so cruel as to injure me. As for you, a big man, bleeding is something you should be doing. It's not like you'd die." During the first half of what she said, Fey's voice was quite soft, but as she spoke, her voice became more sinister as she also gnashed her teeth. "But why didn't you mention how many of my clothes you ruined? And you didn't even spare my underwear!

When I fought with you, more than 80% of the time I would be fighting against you naked! And you say I gave you too many wounds? I was already merciful to not have chopped off your ding dong while you were asleep!"

Yola pursed her lips, doing her best not to laugh out loud.

"Ahem... alright, alright, I forgot to mention that small~ matter. After all, no one could go to where we were training apart from Yola, so what difference did having or not having clothes on make?" Ling Chen casually replied before deeply laughing, "We fought many times, and each of us won many times. However, even if we won, it would often be an incredibly tough victory. However, I should be responsible and tell you... this time, you're definitely going to lose."

"Oh?" Fey's eyes slightly narrowed, "Where's this confidence coming from?"

"You'll know very soon!" Ling Chen chuckled as the Dark Samsara and Chilling Star appeared in his hands. "Fey, get ready for my attacks. This time, I'll beat you completely!"

Naturally, Ling Chen wasn't confident without reason – after all, he had Lachesis' Tear on his finger!

Back then, when he had obtained this Mysterious God grade ring, he had been incredibly dissatisfied and displeased with its +50% HP stat. As for the bonus effect of nullifying all negative effects and damage from the Lachesis, he had completely ignored it. However, when Eve had mentioned the name 'Lachesis' and having a battle, he had almost laughed his head off.

The Lunar Scourge was incredibly powerful, and the Lachesis was something on the same level. If it was in its complete state, it might even rival the complete Lunar Scourge. Lachesis' Tear provided immunity to its negative effects, and this effect was clearly quite powerful given that this effect was what gave it its qualification to be Mysterious God grade. As such, because Ling

Chen had this ring, the Lachesis would be useless against him.

Ling Chen inwardly cheered... Heaven's will! Heaven's will! It was the heaven's will for him to beat Eve, that madwoman! That madwoman's strength most likely came from the Lachesis, just as his strength came from the Lunar Scourge. When they fight, if she suddenly finds that the Lachesis is useless against him, she will definitely be terribly shocked and cough up blood in anger... at the very least, if an item that could nullify the Lunar Scourge's effects appeared, he would cough up blood.

"Hmph! Let's see why you're so confident!" Fey uncrossed her arms and slowly opened them up. A blue light shone in her left hand while a red light shone in her right hand. 2 daggers of different colours appeared in her hand: one was a flame-red colour, while the other was an icy-blue colour.

These 2 daggers were both quite short, only being the length and width of a finger. With that length, even if they were completely buried in one's body, they wouldn't be able to completely stab through it. Small weapons were easy to conceal and use, but when they were this small, they were not that easy to use. When fighting, length equals strength; shorter weapons face a natural disadvantage against longer weapons. However, daggers were the only weapons that Fey had ever used before, and the longest ones she had ever used were 2 fingers long. Even Ling Chen could not rival her in the use of daggers. She had killed countless people with daggers, but she had never been touched by even a drop of blood.

Yola conscientiously retreated far away and opened her golden eyes widely as she nervously prepared to watch them enter battle. Over the past few years, she had essentially watched them grow together through battle, but this time, it had been over 4 years since they had last fought. What's more, this was the battle that would decide something 'big', so she was very excited to be spectating.

What sort of result would the battle between Adam and Eve

bring? Would it be like before?

“According to our tradition, ladies first,” Ling Chen said somewhat carefreely, feeling incredibly confident.

“Don’t lose too badly, my Adam!” Similarly, Fey also seemed to be full of confidence. Within both of their hearts, they were both sure that they would be able to defeat the other person, and easily at that. Fey did not show any courtesy, and she slowly brought her daggers together in front of her. As her daggers started to move around, her gaze became as cool as snow, and there wasn’t even a trace of emotion. A sharp aura filled the space and expanded outwards... it was no less remarkable than the sword qi that Xuanyuan Dia Wu gave off.

Following this, Fey moved.

The only person in the world who could make Fey make the first move was Ling Chen. Just as Fey moved, the frozen space seemed to be completely shattered. An icy gale swept out, and only an afterimage was left where Fey had been, with her real body completely vanishing.

“Dimensional Fracture!!”

Fey’s voice sounded out from above Ling Chen. In that instant, a strange feeling assaulted Ling Chen from all directions, and a piercing sound struck at his ears...

Cha!!!

With Ling Chen at the centre, the 20 metres around him was suddenly filed with tens of jet-black cracks... that’s right, cracks had appeared in space! In that instant, it looked as if a mirror had been shattered.

What’s more, the cracks were not merely cracks but... black holes!

“Ahh!!” Yola’s mouth fell open as she cried out. She subconsciously covered her mouth, muttering to herself, “How

could it be… big sis said that she would give him a ‘surprise’ at the end, so why is she doing this right from the beginning… Dimensional Fracture is almost impossible to block… it can’t end like this, right…”

The black hole fractures were terrifying, but they only lasted for a moment. Very soon, the fractures completely disappeared. However, as the fractures disappeared, Ling Chen remained where he was, standing completely straight and even smiling! No damage figures rose up from his body, and he looked completely fine.

Fey stared in surprise, and Yola’s eyes widened even more… the damage from space itself being fractured was simply terrifying, and even Celestial grade Bosses or normal Heaven’s End grade Bosses would be crushed into pieces. Furthermore, this sort of attack was completely unblockable, and the space around the target would be locked, making it impossible for them to escape. And yet, Ling Chen looked completely fine! This caused both Fey and Yola to be completely surprised.

As the space shattered, Ling Chen started to sweat cold sweat. To be able to even shatter space… what sort of ridiculous power was this? Even in his most powerful state and using his most powerful skills, he was only able to cause ripples in space; fracturing space was simply impossible. And yet, this madwoman’s attack had completely shattered space! It seemed that not only could the Lachesis use spatial energy to teleport, but it could also attack as well!

If it wasn’t for Lachesis’ tear, there was a 90% chance that Ling Chen would have been insta-killed. The remaining 10% chance was that the Evil God’s Mask would have been able to reflect even this sort of spatial damage.

Could this ability be even more overpowered? No wonder why she was so confident! However, this madwoman was simply too savage – she had tried to insta-kill him from the very beginning… what a sinister woman! A madwoman was indeed a madwoman!

Ling Chen wiped the cold sweat from his forehead before rushing towards Fey like a bolt of lightning...

It's my turn!

"Moon... Shadow!!"

The Lunar Scourge erupted out with a silver light, instantly covering the 60 metres around them, Fey included... even without the Libra Orb activating, the 5 seconds that Moon Shadow would freeze Fey was more than enough for him to trample her.

Since you tried to be so cruel, don't blame me for being merciless! Since you tried to insta-kill me, don't blame me for insta-killing you... Ling Chen smirked and slowed down as he swung Dark Samsara and Chilling Star towards Fey.

Ping! Ping!

However, Ling Chen instead felt recoil, which caused his unprepared body to tremble. His Dark Samsara and Chilling Star had not been able to hit Fey, and they were instead accurately pincered by her dual daggers. An icy coldness and a berserk hotness rushed at him from both sides, causing him to release all of the strength gathered in his arms. With a dull explosion, he released the heavy force behind both of his attacks, blasting both of them away from each other. After they stabilized their bodies, neither person attacked, and they instead stared at each other.

This time, it was Ling Chen's turn to feel flabbergasted.

Currently, Moon Shadow had a range of 62 metres, and he was 10,000% sure that Fey had been covered by it. And yet, she was still able to move freely. Not only was she able to quickly and accurately parry his attacks, she was able to counterattack...

Moon Shadow's effects were absolute no matter what grade or level the target was! Ever since he had obtained the Lunar Scourge, Moon Shadow had never failed him before. No matter how powerful the enemies had been, Moon Shadow had always

completely frozen them without exception!

So what was going on here?! How come Fey could move within Moon Shadow as if she was wholly unaffected?

“How come you can resist my Moon Shadow?!”

“How come you can resist my Dimensional Fracture?”

The 2 of them simultaneously yelled out before falling back into silence. Following this, their gazes became quite strange.

“I say, surely you didn’t obtain something… that can counter the Lunar Scourge, right?” Ling Chen testily asked. He only thought of this because he was only able to resist Fey’s spatial power due to the Lachesis’ Tear.

Fey, who was just about to say something, pursed her lips and silently looked at him for a while before replying, “I was about to ask you the same thing. However, seeing your expression, I think I’ve come to… a ridiculous answer.”

After saying this, she pulled at her neck, revealing a pendant that was hidden by her red dress. The pendant was in the shape of a crescent moon, and it was snow-white and flawless as if it was carved out of pure jade. The instant Ling Chen looked at it, he felt a sense of familiarity. After slightly frowning, he realised where the sense of familiarity came from… its shape was exactly the same as the one on the side of the Lunar Scourge. Even the size was roughly the same.

The pendant’s description was displayed by Fey to Ling Chen:

Sacred Moon: Type: Necklace, Grade: Mysterious God, Equipment Requirements: Unknown. A secret weapon created at the same time as the Lunar Scourge. It seems to have been created by the Lunar Scourge’s creator in order to prevent him from being harmed by the Lunar Scourge as a result of not being able to control it completely by suppressing the Lunar Scourge. It travelled to a western continent by unknown means.

Stats: MP+50%, negates all damage and negative effects from [Lunar Scourge].

Ling Chen's mouth started to twitch, and following this, even his eyelids started to twitch. He looked at the Sacred Moon with a complicated expression and then looked at Fey, who had an equally complicated look in her eyes. Ling Chen stretched out his hand and displayed the Lachesis' Tear to her while breathed raggedly. "What a ridiculous situation!"

Chapter 698 - Final Battle

“Where did you get this from?” Ling Chen asked as his face twisted.

“I wanted to ask you where you got that ring from?” Fey rubbed her forehead.

“I asked you first!”

“From a monster... and you?”

“Also from a monster.”

“……”

“I obtained the Lunar Scourge, and you obtained the Lachesis! I obtained the Lachesis’ Tear, and you obtained the Sacred Moon... fudge! Could this be even more ridiculous?” Ling Chen felt like he was going to go crazy. This was like a ridiculous drama!

“It’s useless for you to get all angry at me; I’m also quite shocked. Could it be that you were acting so confidently before because of this?” Fey was completely speechless. Seeing the [Lachesis’ Tear] and [Sacred Moon] in the other person’s hands, their battle intent was greatly reduced. Ling Chen never thought that the Lunar Scourge would have a perfect counter, and Fey never expected the Lachesis to have a counter either. After staring at each other for a while, both of them felt quite frustrated.

“Looks like we’re really bound by fate.” After staring at each other for a while, that was all Ling Chen could say, his voice full of wonder. They had met in ‘heaven’, and they had both survived. One had become Adam, the other Eve. They had supported each other through heaven and hell, and they viewed each other as their only rival. And now, in this world called Mystic Moon, their experiences had been so similar as well.

“Are we still going to fight?” The sharpness in her tone was almost completely gone.

“Looks like the heavens don’t want us to fight. However, we still haven’t had that final battle, and since we’ve dragged it out for so long, we need to have a conclusion. It’s just that this is the virtual world, so there are many things that won’t be fair if we use the things in the virtual world. My Lunar Scourge is useless against you, and your Lachesis is useless against me. It’s almost as if we’re being told that we shouldn’t be using things from the virtual world to settle this final match, but a fairer method,” Ling Chen slowly said as he slowly raised his chest. Evidently, he had thought of some sort of idea.

“Are you talking… about that?” Fey’s gaze also became strange. When she mentioned ‘that’, she didn’t seem to mind either.

“Of course it’s that. To us, thatis the fairest way. We haven’t battled each other in quite a while, so do you dare?” A provocative look appeared in Ling Chen’s eyes.

Fey smiled back, “It’s not like this is the first time we’ve used that; why would I not dare? However, Adam, don’t forget about the consequences for losing.”

Ling Chen raised his eyebrows as he suddenly asked, “Fey, back then, you wanted to go back to your hometown to find your mother. Did you find her in the end?”

Hearing Ling Chen’s words, Yola looked at Fey worriedly.

Fey did not immediately reply, but the slight smile on her face slightly disappeared, and she softly said, “I did. It was 2 months after you left, but by then, she was on her dying breath. A month later, she died. Even though Liz and Cassandra were with me and I had some of the Mad Scientist’s equipment, they were unable to do anything.”

Ling Chen frowned and felt that he had asked something that he shouldn’t have asked. He cautiously asked, “What happened to your mother? Why was she on her dying breath?”

Fey closed her eyes, going back to that memory that she did not want to touch again. Apart from Ling Chen, if anyone else had asked her, she would not have answered them, “Back then, when I was taken to ‘heaven’, mother was completely heartbroken, and she looked for me every day. She blamed herself for my disappearance everyday… she never gave up looking for me for 7 years because she believed that I was still alive. Perhaps this is a sense of maternal instinct. It was just that because of all of the effort, tediousness, self-blame, tears, and despair that she endured over the 7 years… when I found her and when she found me, her mind and body had withered like that of a person who was 100 years old. I stayed with her day and night for an entire month, and I could only watch as she left me.”

Ling Chen: “……”

“However, that was also good. She suffered so much, so she deserved to rest. At least, during that 1 month, she was very happy. Up until she departed, she always had a gentle and warm smile on her face. After that, I no longer had any regrets, and I brought Yola and the others to find their family. At the same time, I expanded our power and protected those who we wanted to protect and killed those who we wanted to kill.” After speaking, Fey opened her eyes, looking completely expressionless.

Ling Chen stared for a few moments before saying, “Your mother… it’s good that she’s able to rest now. I’m sure she’s in the real Heaven now.”

Fey slightly smiled and said softly, “All mothers in the world are more or less like that. A mother’s love towards her children is not something that anything else can replace. These years, what I’ve admired most are those who still have mothers because they can at the very least still see their mothers and feel their mother’s love. They still have an opportunity to treat them with filial piety and protect them. What I hate most is seeing children who abandon their mothers when they need them the most. I always kill such

people when I see them! Those sorts of people don't deserve to continue living... forget it, to someone who lost his mother when he was born, the concept of a mother doesn't mean much, and you wouldn't understand."

Ling Chen blankly stared ahead of him with a stiff expression on his face, and he did not say anything for a while.

"Oh? What's wrong? From your expression, you seem quite touched," Fey said half-teasingly.

Ling Chen shook his head, feeling incredibly complicated. He settled his emotions down as he replied, "You answered my question, so I should tell you about some things as well... 7 years ago, Hell didn't die."

"Oh?" Fey's eyebrows leapt up, and Yola cried out. Following this, Fey calmly replied, "I don't' know why, but I don't feel that surprised. After all, Instructor Hell wouldn't die so easily."

"He was saved by the Mad Scientist and was modified to become a terrifying half-cyborg. Half a year ago, he found me and tried to kill me. After becoming a half-cyborg, his mind was twisted, and he was no longer the Instructor Hell who had no openings. However, he became much more powerful to the point that I almost couldn't fight back, and I was almost killed by him... however, afterwards, he died in front of me. I felt that it was me who killed him, but even now, I have no idea how I killed him. However, he's completely dead this time – his body has been completely shattered, and even the Mad Scientist would not be able to bring him back." After speaking, Ling Chen let out a light breath. Whenever he thought back to the scene of him fighting with Instructor Hell, he always felt a chill within his heart.

"Half-cyborg? The Mad Scientist actually created something so movie-like?" Fey was also quite shocked. After Instructor Hell died, the only person who made her feel true fear was the Mad Scientist. He wore white-rimmed glasses and was so hunchbacked

that he stood at almost a 90 degree angle with his thin, skinny body, which looked so strengthless… and yet, he deserved the title of 'demon'… no, he was even more terrifying than a demon.

"I've also been looking for the Mad Scientist all these years."

"If he could be found so easily, he wouldn't be the Mad Scientist anymore," Ling Chen replied.

"That's right. After so many years, I've found nothing, but even if it's the Mad Scientist, he can't be completely flawless all the time. One day, I'll find him. If he doesn't die, my heart will never be at ease. I'm sure you feel the same," Fey said seriously.

Ling Chen nodded in complete agreement. After mentioning the Mad Scientist, the atmosphere became a bit gloomy, and Ling Chen said, "After talking about so many other things, it's time to get down to business… same rules: the final battle will be decided by 3 rounds."

"This was suggested by you, so don't regret it!" A dangerous look appeared within Fey's eyes.

In that moment, the peaceful atmosphere once again became tense. Both of their eyes became as sharp as knives, and 2 shocking waves of killing intent spread out, causing the surrounding temperature to drop.

As their icy-cold killing intent collided, Ling Chen and Fey inched towards each other from 30 or so positions away to just 10, then to 5… then to 3…

By the side, Yola's heart was rapidly thumping. Back in hell, she would see Ling Chen and Fey fight almost every day, so she could immediately tell what they were about to do: heavens! They were going to use this sort of method to determine victory? Who would win? She felt so nervous…

When the 2 of them were just 1 metre away from each other, the air suddenly froze. Both of their weapons disappeared, and they

stared at each other, raising their arms as they shouted simultaneously:

“Scissors, paper, rock!”

“Scissors, paper, rock!!”

“Scissors, paper, rock!!!”

Chapter 699 - Temporarily Leaving

When the Forgotten City was going through its disaster, Ling Tian City was preparing to do its post-battle repairs. Throughout this process, news related to the Forgotten City continuously entered Ling Tian City, causing everyone to feel both shocked and delighted... however, they simply could not imagine how Ling Chen had made a Royal City suffer so terribly.

The Fairies who had died were unable to come back to life, but those who had lost loved ones knew at the very least that those greedy and selfish humans had been cruelly punished.

When Ling Chen returned to Ling Tian City, Ling Tian City was still quite silent. The city gates and teleportation channel were still closed, and they might not open for quite a few days. There was an air of sorrow and sadness hanging around the city, and the Fairies were all gathered together, sending off their loved ones, friends, and lovers. The Fairies, who had lived in peace for thousands of years, had seen the Fairies beside them die after coming to Ling Tian City for just a few months. This sort of grief was not something that they would get over within a short period of time. Seeing this, Ling Chen couldn't help but blame himself. He could only silently vow... that he would not allow such a thing to happen a second time!

After concluding his 'final battle' with Fey, Ling Chen returned to Ling Tian City and notified Yun Meng Xin and the others that the Forgotten City had been taught a lesson to the point that it had trembled and would not dare to offend Ling Tian City again. In fact, they would apologize and provide compensation. Afterwards, Ling Chen introduced them to someone: a woman who gave off an extremely enchanting air and had red hair and red clothes.

"My name is Fey Sharon Kapalia, you can just call me Fey. This is my little sister, Yola Shirley Kapalia." Fey gave a simple introduction, and she also introduced little Yola. Standing in front

of so many people, they didn't seem awkward at all, and they instead seemed quite natural and unrestrained. Even though Fey didn't give off the sharp aura she had when facing off against Ling Chen, there was a natural sense of pride and dignity about her. When people saw her for the first time, they could help but feel inferior.

Before everyone could ask who she was, Yun Feng leapt out and pointed at Fey, almost shrieking, "Y-Y-Y-Y-Y-Y-You're... You're Eve! Eveeeeeee!!!!!!!"

Very few people in the world had seen Eve's true appearance before, most of which were the people by her side. Yun Feng was evidently one of the rare exceptions. This was because when he had determinedly climbed up Dark Cloud Mountain, which other players only looked at but didn't even think about climbing, he had coincidentally seen the second showdown between Ling Chen and Fey... although he hadn't seen Eve's face, her red hair and weapons allowed him to confirm her identity. Although it had been 4 years since he had last seen Fey, she had not changed much over the past 4 years, and Eve's identity was not something that Yun Feng could easily forget. Given Fey's red hair, the aura around her, and the way she spoke, apart from Eve, who else could she be?!

When Yun Feng cried out, everyone stared in shock. Who was Eve? Before Ling Tian had shocked the world, she had been the god among players! She was a peak level player who had been crowned with the title 'Demon Goddess'! A legend who could not be surpassed or even challenged. Her name had become a synonym for ultimate player, and she was what allowed players of the west to look down on players of the east.

Now that this legendary name had been called out by Yun Feng, almost everyone present did not dare to believe their ears. They looked at Fey's red hair, and everyone fell silent... after all, Eve's most striking characteristic was her flame-red hair.

"That's right, she's indeed Eve! No one would be able to mimic

her aura," Xuanyuan Dia Wu said as she looked at Fey. During the International Mock Battles, she had faced off against Fey before. Eve had been the only person to ever defeat her apart from Ling Chen.

Ling Chen did not find it surprising that Yun Feng and Xuanyuan Dia Wu would recognize her, and everyone else's reactions were within his expectations as well. He nodded as he said, "That's right, she's Eve. However, don't worry, she's an old friend of mine. She's just here to meet you all, and she isn't our enemy."

"Are you really Eve? The 'Demon Goddess' Eve?" Xiao Qi covered her mouth with one hand, unable to believe what she had heard. When she spoke, her eyes were filled with tiny stars. Eve... was the most powerful female player, and she has been the idol and pride of countless female players.

"That's right, little sister 'Flame Empress' Qi Qi," Fey replied with a smile. Although she was here to 'meet' everyone, she already knew a lot about all of them.

"The legendary Eve has come to Ling Tian City; this is half a pleasant surprise and half a terrifying shock," Li Xiao Xue said as she looked at Fey before looking at Ling Chen.

"The renowned Loulan Queen doesn't need to feel scared; as long as this man called Ling Tian doesn't die, we'll only be friends." Fey lightly glanced at Ling Chen as she smiled.

"Eve, welcome to Ling Tian City. Looks like you've long since known Ling Tian," Yun Meng Xin slowly said as she took a step forwards.

"It's my honour to meet you, Lady Yun Meng Xin, the most famous woman in the world right now. You're quite right – I've known this man for a long time; over 10 or so years now," Fey said casually. After saying this, Li Xiao Xue and Xuanyuan Dia Wu's expressions both slightly changed.

“I can attest to that!” Yun Feng jumped out and said excitedly. “I don’t know about before, but they’ve known each other since at least 4 years ago. 4 years ago, I saw the battle between Ling Tian and Eve… that was a true legend-level battle! After seeing that battle, even now I can’t forget about it.” After speaking, he looked over at the silent, golden-haired girl by Fey’s side. His pupils dilated as he once again cried out, “By Eve’s side… golden hair… golden eyes… could you be the Golden Eyed War God?!”

Everyone was staring at Fey, while Skyfall had been staring at Yola the entire time with a look of suspicion in his eyes. When he heard Yun Feng cry out ‘Golden Eyed War God’, he jumped up as if he was stabbed by a needle, and he uncontrollably yelled, “Fudge!! Y-Y-Y-Y-You’re the Golden Eyed War God?! You’re a female player? And a girl at that?!”

Everyone’s gaze fell on Yola, causing her face to become slightly red. Seeing that everyone was staring at her, she lowered her head and protested in a small voice, “Isn’t China’s Sword Emperor… also a female player.”

Yola’s reply confirmed that she was indeed the ‘Golden Eyed War God’. Everyone lapsed into shock again, and Skyfall almost fell to the ground. He covered his face and screamed, “How could it be like this… my goal… my motivation… heavens…”

Apart from Ling Chen, who had a look of confusion on his face, everyone knew why Skyfall was reacting like this. In the last International Mock Battles, Skyfall had been defeated by the ‘Golden Eyed War God’ in just 3 attacks. Back then, no one had known or expected that the Golden Eyed War God was actually a female player… what was even more outrageous was that Yola currently only looked about 17 or 18 years old, so she would have been 15 or 16 years old when she had annihilated Skyfall…

This almost caused Skyfall’s entire world to crumble… back then, he had been unresigned in his loss, and he had vowed to wash away his shame with blood… only now did he know that his opponent

back then had been a 15 or 16 year old girl!

In the last International Mock Battle, the Number 1 player was naturally Fey, and the Number 2 player was Yola. Although Yola was the youngest, even Gui Ya would not be able to defeat her. This was because Yola grew up beside Adam and Eve and spent the most time watching them fighting. She only ever fought against the 2 of them, and adding on her frightening talent, her strength grew at a monstrous rate. At the same time, Adam and Eve were the 2 people she relied on the most... back then when they separated, she was the one who had cried the most.

“Since we’ve gotten to know you all, we should be going,” Fey took Yola’s hand as she calmly looked at Ling Chen.

Ling Chen slightly raised his eyebrows, but he did not say anything.

“Go? You’re Ling Tian’s friend, so you’re Ling Tian City’s friend. Why are you going right after you’ve come? At least give us a chance to show our hospitality.” No one thought that the famous Eve would come and go so suddenly, and Yun Meng Xin spoke out to ask her to stay.

“Thank you, Lady Yun, but I still have many other important things to do, so I must leave now. I’m sure that we’ll spend a lot of time together in the future... as such, goodbye.” If anyone knew what sort of person Fey was, he or she would know just how rare it was her to even come here in the person. Fey was already a proud person, and adding on her natural arrogance as a woman, Fey was even prouder than Ling Chen. Very few people could make Fey speak so courteously, and after speaking, she turned and vanished along with Yola. During this entire period of time, Ling Chen did not try to ask her to stay at all.

“Whew... Eve!! It was actually Eve!! We actually met such a legendary person, and she says she’s friends with us!” Against The Sky and Judging Sky said excitedly, with a look of disbelief on

their faces. Even people like them held deep respect towards the name ‘Eve’.

“Big brother Ling Tian, Eve said you’ve known each other for more than 10 years; is this true? How did you meet each other? Why is she so powerful?” Xiao Qi asked curiously.

Xuanyuan Dia Wu’s eyes slowly became dim… 10 or so years ago was right when she and Ling Chen had been separated. The Eve in the virtual world was indeed that Eve… no wonder she was so powerful – just like Ling Chen, she had gone through a cruel baptism that no ordinary human would be able to survive… she had been turned into a non-human monster.

“Mm, I’ve known her for around 13 years. Back then, she was just a 10 year old girl, but she was much stronger than normal girls. When I first met her, she was on her dying breath… but her eyes scared me,” Ling Chen slowly said as he thought back tot that time.

“I feel very curious – she’s evidently a player from the west, so why did she come here? What makes me feel even more curious is why she especially came over here to ‘meet’ everyone?” Li Xiao Xue asked.

Ling Chen replied, “About 7 years ago, we made an agreement to battle every 18 months in a best out of 3. We coincidentally met before and had our final battle. Just then, she was carrying out her obligations.”

“What? You just fought?” Yun Feng rushed over, asking in anticipation “What was the result? Who won?”

“Err…” Ling Chen tapped his chin and said calmly, “I didn’t win.”

“What? Didn’t win? Even if it’s Eve… but you’re so powerful; how could you not beat her?” Yun Feng exclaimed in shock. Everyone else also looked dumbfounded.

Ling Chen rolled his eyes before replying, “I never said I lost… in

that last battle, we had 3 rounds. She won the first one, I won the second one, and we tied for the third won. Moreover, before we fought, we agreed that no matter what happened, there would only be 3 rounds… so no one won nor lost."

"So it was like this." Yun Feng nodded blankly. Compared to being defeated by Eve, he could accept this result. "No less than expected from Eve – even against you, your battle resulted in a tie."

"Heh…" Ling Chen suddenly mysteriously laughed, "Even though it was a tie, the final victory was mine."

"Eh?" Everyone felt quite confused.

"You'll all see soon," Ling Chen said as he laughed. He did not explain what he meant, but the scene of their final battle appeared in his mind…

"Fey, since there's nothing keeping you there, come to where I am."

"It was a tie after those 3 rounds, so why should I come to where you are?"

"Because I need you…"

"……"

"Is this reason not enough? Fey… Yola…"

"Take me to see your friends…"

Fey still brought Yola away, but Ling Chen did not feel disappointed. He was instead filled with passion and anticipation. He was sure that Fey would be back soon and bring many more people.

Chapter 700 - Su'Er's Premonition

At the other side of Ling Tian City, within the Dwarves' own District, they received an incredible piece of news. All 30,000 Dwarves were gathered together... the attendance hadn't been so high even during the meeting where they discussed temporarily relocating from Ling Tian City. At the centre of the massive crowd, there was a jet-black cannon. All of the Dwarves were fixedly staring at it, not willing to even blink. It was as if they were looking at some supremely holy item, and some of the elderly Dwarves had streams of tears running down their faces, and they were so excited that their bodies trembled.

"Underworld God Cannon... our ancestors' greatest achievement; the pride of our entire Dwarf Clan!!" Chief Dilo excitedly shouted out. His dark hand continuously caressed the crude-looking cannon, his movements exceedingly cautious and gentle. Inwardly, he felt as if his heart was going to explode. Neither he nor any of the other Dwarves thought that they would one day be able to see the ultimate creation of their ancestors.

All of the Dwarves' hearts were greatly attracted by the Underworld God Cannon, but even in their excitement, no one dared to rush up and touch it. After all, this Underworld God Cannon was a sacred item to them, and they felt that they could only worship it and did not even have the right to touch it. In fact, none of them even noticed Ling Chen as he arrived.

"Heh, good son-in-law, you've finished with your business?" Seeing Ling Chen come over, the Underworld King popped out from who-knows-where and stood in front of him.

Thinking back to the fact that this continent's Moon God Representative would be completely loyal to him in the future, Ling Chen couldn't help but smile. "Of course it's done... eh? You just gave the Underworld God Cannon to them like this?"

“What else would I do?” The Underworld King rolled his eyes.

“Aren’t you afraid of them being unwilling to return it to you afterwards? To the Dwarves, the Underworld God Cannon is a godlike existence. Look at their reactions,” Ling Chen said as he looked over.

“Cheh!” The Underworld King casually smirked. “When your elder first started having dealings with the Dwarves, your 18th generation ancestor wasn’t even born yet! How could I not know what sort of people they are? Greed and oath breaking aren’t part of their nature.”

“Okay!” Since the Underworld King had said this, there was no need for Ling Chen to say anything else. He said confidently, “Since you trust the Dwarf Clan so much, leaving the Underworld God Cannon here for 48 hours should be no problem, right? I’m sure that with their intelligence and talent, as well as the blueprint, they’ll be able to create another Underworld God Cannon during this period of time! As for the materials… hmm, I heard that the Underworld God Cannon’s main material is the Underworld Blood Lake’s Underworld God Mysterious Blood Metal, so…”

The Underworld King glared at him and roared, “There’s plenty of it in the Underworld Blood Lake; take as much of it as you want!”

“Wonderful. Oh, and also…” Ling Chen looked at Yun Meng Xin and the others not too far away and said in a low voice, “Err, please don’t call me son-in-law in front of my friends! You should know that if this matter is brought up… it’d make things quite complicated.”

“Ohh…” The Underworld King slowly nodded, looking very understanding. Just as Ling Chen let out a breath of relief, the Underworld King put his hand on Ling Chen’s shoulder and shouted with a booming voice, “GOOD SON-IN-LAW!! I’VE

MARRIED MY DAUGHTER TO YOU, SO MAKE SURE YOU TREAT HER WELL!!”

“Son-in-law? Son-in-law?!” Yun Meng Xin, Xiao Qi, Su’Er, Xuanyuan Dia Wu, and the others all stared with wide eyes towards Ling Chen and the Underworld King.

“Ah… err… oh… umm… t-t-t-this uncle is the Underworld’s Underworld King; I’m sure you’ve heard of him. He’s very strong, but… but after leaving the Underworld, his mind isn’t too good, and calls everyone his son-in-law… ah… you should go comfort the Fairies, and I’ll take him around Ling Tian City!!”

After speaking, Ling Chen grabbed the Underworld King and ran, inwardly cursing him a billion times…

……

The Underworld King, who had only planned to stay in the Ling Tian City for a day, was convinced by Ling Chen to stay for 2 days, after which he left with the Underworld God Cannon. Following this, 3,000 Dwarves brought the blueprints and sufficient materials and locked themselves away. These Dwarves were all elites of the elites, and had the highest talent for forging within the entire clan. The remaining Dwarves all sighed in disappointment, and threw themselves into doing repairs for the Ling Tian City.

3 days later, the Forgotten Emperor publicly apologized to Ling Tian City and vowed to never take the initiative to offend Ling Tian City again. He also promised to provide compensation within 2 months. Instantly, the entire world was sent into shock. The human with the most authority in the Forgotten Continent, the Forgotten Emperor, had publicly apologized and had made promises to pay compensation! This had never happened before in the history of the Forgotten Continent. This news was completely unbelievable to everyone, and very soon, everyone realized why the Forgotten Emperor had done something so shocking – the Forgotten Continent’s Moon God Representative, the Forgotten

God Representative, who had not appeared in a thousand years, publicly appeared above the Forgotten City. She rebuked the Forgotten Emperor for his wrongdoings and announced that she would protect the players' city - Ling Tian City. All those who acted against it would be acting against her, the Forgotten God Representative.

This time, everyone, including Ling Tian City's people, were completely shocked. The Forgotten God Representative had publicly declared that she would protect this city and that acting against the city would be acting against her; this was completely unprecedented! With these words, who in the entire Forgotten Continent would dare to offend Ling Tian City?!

No one knew just what Ling Tian City had done to earn the favour of the Forgotten God Representative, but what was undeniable was that after this day, Ling Tian City's fame and status would skyrocket. Although it was created by players, in just a few months, its overall position had surpassed even Forgotten City.

10 days later, the repairs were complete, and after also expanding a little bit, Ling Tian City was once again opened to countless eager players. At the same time, the trade route between Ling Tian City and the Underworld was established on that day, and the results were even better than what Ling Chen had expected. The things from the Underworld that gave special effects and stats caused players to scream with joy and amazement, and the attractiveness of Ling Tian City grew even more. After reopening Ling Tian City, the number of people coming into Ling Tian City was much greater than it had been during its initial opening. This brought even more fame, prestige, and riches.

Over the past few days, Ling Chen did not go anywhere, and he instead put most of his time in the game into Ling Tian City in order to rid himself of some of the guilt he felt. He also spent his time whispering sweet things to Dia Wu, spending time with Qi Qi

and Su'Er, and playing with Tian Tian and Sha Sha... or playing a 'game' with Leng'Er... he had been incredibly relaxed. However, there was nothing he could do about this – before Su'Er could use her Heaven's Secrets power to search for the next orb, he wouldn't go out to look for it himself and waste time.

"Su'Er, are you not able to use your power yet?" After half a month, Ling Chen finally couldn't help but ask Su'Er.

"Ah?" Su'Er seemed to be spacing out, and after hearing Ling Chen's question, she had a small fright before shaking her head. "Not yet. However, my power has been growing, so it should be soon. It'll be... in less than a week."

"Alright, don't push yourself too hard, Su Su,' Ling Chen said as he smiled. Before, Su'Er could only use her power about once every month, and the decreased to 20 days was already a pleasant surprise. He looked at Su'Er earnestly as he asked, "Su Su, there seems to be something on your mind. Did something happen?"

"Eh? No..." Su'Er hurriedly shook her head. However, she was unable to cover the flustered look in her eyes. She slightly lowered her head and said suddenly, "Big brother Ling Tian, Ling Tian City will be fine in the future, right?"

"Mm, of course, I can promise you that. Even if the entire Forgotten City attacks, we won't have to fear them," Ling Chen nodded confidently. The Forgotten Emperor had been scared out of his wits, and he had used the Soulstealing Curse on the Forgotten God Representative. There was also the Underworld backing him up, so no matter if it was players or NPCs, no one would ever dare to offend Ling Tian City again. It would be difficult for something to happen to Ling Tian City.

"... Then, then I must be overthinking. That must be it." Su'Er's expression relaxed, and she sweetly smiled.

"Overthinking? What did you think of?" Ling Chen sat down beside her.

“It’s just that… it’s just that my mind has been quite chaotic recently, and my heart has been beating quite quickly, making me feel afraid that something bad is going to happen. I’m sure I’m just overthinking it,” Su’Er said embarrassedly.

Ling Chen slightly frowned.

If anyone else had said this, he wouldn’t have paid it much mind, but Su’Er… she was the sole successor to the Heaven’s Secrets Sect, which had the power to look at Heaven’s secrets! They were cared for by the heavens and would have a premonition before something happened. As such, whenever the Heaven’s Secrets Sect’s people felt something, it definitely wouldn’t be ‘overthinking’. The Heaven’s Secrets power that Su’Er displayed each time had been incredibly accurate and had never failed before.

So, what was this ominous feeling about…

“Su Su,” Ling Chen’s voice became serious, “When you can use your Heaven’s Secrets power again, don’t use it to help me find the things I want; use it to see if anything bad will happen to any of us.”

“Ah?” Su’Er looked up at him in confusion.

“Don’t think about it too much, I’m just taking precautions,” Ling Chen said as he smiled. “It doesn’t matter if it takes me a bit longer to find what I want; the safety of everyone is much more important. If there’s nothing, that’s fine, but if there really is something, we will be able to prepare for it, and little Su Su won’t have to worry anymore.”

“Mm, okay,” Su’Er meekly nodded.